

宠爱甜心
袁臻臻 著

王爺奴才



原创小说吧 YC.XS8.CN

袁筱筱 著

「宠爱甜心」

王爺奴才



原创小说吧 YC.XS8.CN

Beloved Little Treasure

Table of Contents

- 1. [Introduction](#)
- 2. [1 – 2 – 3](#)
- 3. [4 – 5](#)
- 4. [6 – 7](#)
- 5. [8 – 9](#)
- 6. [10 – 11](#)
- 7. [12 – 13](#)
- 8. [14 – 15](#)
- 9. [16 – 17](#)
- 10. [18 – 19](#)
- 11. [20](#)
- 12. [21](#)
- 13. [22 – 23](#)
- 14. [24](#)
- 15. [25 – 26](#)
- 16. [27 – 28](#)
- 17. [29](#)
- 18. [30 – 31](#)
- 19. [32](#)
- 20. [33 – 34](#)
- 21. [35 – 36](#)
- 22. [37](#)
- 23. [38](#)
- 24. [39 – 40](#)
- 25. [41](#)
- 26. [42](#)

27. [43](#)
28. [44](#)
29. [45](#)
30. [46](#)
31. [47](#)
32. [48](#)
33. [49](#)
34. [50](#)
35. [51](#)
36. [52](#)
37. [53](#)
38. [54](#)
39. [55](#)
40. [56](#)
41. [57](#)
42. [58](#)
43. [59](#)
44. [60](#)
45. [61](#)
46. [62](#)
47. [63](#)
48. [64](#)
49. [65](#)
50. [66](#)
51. [67](#)
52. [68](#)
53. [69](#)
54. [70](#)
55. [71](#)
56. [72](#)
57. [73](#)
58. [74](#)
59. [75](#)
60. [76](#)

61. [77](#)
62. [78](#)
63. [79](#)
64. [80](#)
65. [81](#)
66. [82](#)
67. [83](#)
68. [84](#)
69. [85](#)
70. [86](#)
71. [87](#)
72. [88](#)
73. [89](#)
74. [90](#)
75. [91](#)
76. [92](#)
77. [93](#)
78. [94](#)
79. [95](#)
80. [96](#)
81. [97](#)
82. [98](#)
83. [99](#)
84. [100](#)
85. [101](#)
86. [102](#)
87. [103](#)
88. [104](#)
89. [105](#)
90. [106](#)
91. [107](#)
92. [108](#)
93. [109](#)
94. [110](#)

95. [111](#)
96. [112](#)
97. [113](#)
98. [114](#)
99. [115](#)
00. [116](#)
01. [117](#)
02. [118](#)
03. [119](#)
04. [120](#)
05. [121](#)
06. [122](#)
07. [123](#)
08. [124](#)
09. [125](#)
10. [126](#)
11. [127](#)
12. [128 – 129](#)
13. [130](#)
14. [131](#)
15. [132](#)
16. [133](#)
17. [134](#)
18. [135](#)
19. [136](#)
20. [137](#)
21. [138](#)
22. [139](#)
23. [140](#)
24. [141](#)
25. [142](#)
26. [143](#)
27. [144](#)
28. [145](#)

29. [146](#)
30. [147](#)
31. [148](#)
32. [149](#)
33. [150](#)
34. [151](#)
35. [152](#)
36. [153](#)
37. [154](#)
38. [155](#)
39. [156](#)
40. [157](#)
41. [158](#)
42. [159](#)
43. [160](#)
44. [161](#)
45. [162](#)
46. [163](#)
47. [164](#)
48. [165](#)
49. [166](#)
50. [167](#)
51. [168](#)
52. [169](#)
53. [170](#)
54. [171](#)
55. [172](#)
56. [173](#)
57. [174](#)
58. [175](#)
59. [176](#)
60. [177](#)
61. [178](#)
62. [179](#)

63. [180](#)

64. [181](#)

65. [182](#)

66. [183](#)

67. [184](#)

68. [185](#)

69. [186](#)

70. [187](#)

71. [188](#)

72. [189](#)

73. [190](#)

74. [191](#)

75. [192](#)

76. [193](#)

77. [194](#)

78. [195](#)

79. [196](#)

80. [197](#)

81. [198](#)

82. [199](#)

83. [200](#)

84. [201](#)

85. [202](#)

86. [203](#)

87. [204](#)

88. [205](#)

89. [206](#)

90. [207](#)

91. [208](#)

92. [209](#)

93. [210](#)

94. [211](#)

95. [Side Stories 1](#)

96. [2](#)

Introduction

Beloved Little Treasure (宠爱甜心: 豹王爱奴) By Yuan Gun Gun (袁滚滚)



Genre: Supernatural, comedy

211 Chapters, HE

Male Lead: Hao Yan Che

Female Lead: Yuan Gun Gun

Synopsis:

Hao Yan Che is an immortal and Yuan Gun Gun is a mortal.

Hao Yan Che's parents saves Yuan Gun Gun's life. Yuan Gun Gun's parents agrees to let Yuan Gun Gun marry Hao Yan Che when she turns eighteen.

Yuan Gun Gun loves cooking and taking care of animals.

If Hao Yan Che rejects Yuan Gun Gun, he can return her to her parents.

Notice:

Read FAQs and Copyright & Disclaimer on the side bar. It will answer most readers' questions.

Please do not copy text from the blog.

Please do not link to Beloved Little Treasure before status is complete.

For viet readers, search Yuan Gun Gun's viet name, Viên Cỗn Cỗn to read Yuan Gun Gun's c-novels translated to viet.

Readers who have read Beloved Little Treasure in another language, please do not post spoiler comments because it ruins the element of surprise for new readers.

DGSTE, RRF and RB I readers, check blog after xmas for new chapter updates.

Related

1 – 2 – 3

Chapters One to Three



One

On a full moon in a tranquil forest, Qiu Li Luo in her white werewolf stalked a crying little girl running through the dense forest. The little girl Yuan Gun Gun looked like a five-year-old. Her big eyes and face were round, her nose was straight and her body was chubby.

‘Mummy, daddy, where are you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I’m scared.’

Only nocturnal birds and insects answered Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Mummy, daddy, it’s scary here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the ground, she curled her chubby body like a round ball and cried.

Carnivorous beasts hidden in the shadows heard Yuan Gun Gun’s cry, and they slowly crept toward their dinner.

Yuan Gun Gun heard the beasts’ footsteps, and she looked up. The little girl stopped crying. She loved animals.

‘Hello friends,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted. ‘What big dogs you are. Do you live here together? At home my daddy lets me raise big dogs to.’

In the critical moment Qiu Li Luo the white werewolf leapt in front of the little girl and protected her from the hungry beasts.

‘What beautiful white fur and violet eyes you have,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun stroked Qiu Li Luo’s soft white furry back, and she smiled at Qiu Li Luo.

Qiu Li Luo’s tail wrapped around Yuan Gun Gun’s waist and lifted Yuan Gun Gun onto her back. Yuan Gun Gun hugged Qiu Li Luo’s soft neck and rubbed a

chubby cheek on the back Qiu Li Luo's head.

Qiu Li Luo leapt over the hungry beasts, and ran in the direction of the Hao Mansion.

Qiu Li Luo's paw pressed a secret knob on the mansion door, and the door opened.

Yuan Gun Gun was amazed to see the tall masculine immortal waiting for Qiu Li Luo inside the mansion.

The tall immortal creased his brows at the little girl. He turned around and walked back to the living room.

Qiu Li Luo raised her tail, whipped the door closed and she walked to the living room. Qiu Li Luo let Yuan Gun Gun slide down her back onto a soft carpet. Hao Yan Que sat on the sofa, and patted his lap. Qiu Li Luo jumped onto his lap and rubbed her head on his neck. He stroked her head, and his amber eyes looked at Yuan Gun Gun sitting on the carpet.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Que looked more handsome than her daddy.

'Uncle, are you an angel?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Uncle is Satan,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Uncle, what is Satan?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Is it someone who likes to dig?'

Qiu Li Luo wailed softly like she was laughing. Hao Yan Que hit her soft bottom.

'Uncle is a demon,' Hao Yan Que said.

Yuan Gun Gun laughed.

'Uncle, you shouldn't lie,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Uncle is too handsome to be a demon.'

Hao Yan Que chuckled.

'Uncle is a special demon,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Uncle, I can't find my parents,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Uncle, can you help me find my parents?'

Yuan Gun Gun began to cry softly.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Uncle, will ask your parents to come here in a few days to take you home.’

‘Is uncle telling the truth?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Yuan Gun Gun stopped crying and she smiled at Hao Yan Que.

Qiu Li Luo jumped off Hao Yan Que’s lap, and he picked up the Yuan Gun Gun.

‘What is your name?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yuan Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘What is uncle’s name?’

‘Gun Gun can call uncle, uncle Que,’ Hao Tan Que said.

‘Uncle Que,’ Yuan Gun Gun called sweetly.

‘Gun Gun, I’ll take you to your room,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘A maid will help Gun Gun to have a bath, feed you dinner and tuck you in bed.’

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head.

Hao Yan Que carried Yuan Gun Gun to a guest room. He put Yuan Gun Gun on the bed and he smiled at her.

‘Gun Gun, sit here and wait for the maid,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Uncle will go call the maid to take care of you. Don’t run around.’

‘Yes uncle,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Que thought Yuan Gun Gun was the perfect wife for his oldest son, Hao Yan Che.

Two

In the master bedroom of the Hao Mansion, Qiu Li Luo transformed into an alluring woman. Her long white hair spanned on the bed, her violet eyes beckoned Hao Yan Que to come onto the bed and her lips were apple red.

‘Luo Li Qiu,’ Hao Yan Que called.

‘Your Mandarin is rusty,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Que effortlessly ripped Qiu Li Luo’s dress, and exposed her black lingerie.

Qiu Li Luo pulled the bedsheet over her half naked body.

‘Hao Yan Que, my dress,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Que crawled under the bedsheet and he laid on top of Qiu Li Luo.

‘Xiao Luo, what did you call me?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

Qiu Li Luo swallowed her saliva.

‘Hao... husband,’ Qiu Li Luo called.

‘Xiao Luo, I want to hear you call me again,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘Husband, husband,’ Qiu Li Luo called.

‘Um, your husband will reward you a kiss,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que captured Qiu Li Luo’s apple red lips.

‘Xiao Luo, I want you,’ Hao Yan Que said in a husky voice.

‘Wait,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Why?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

Qiu Li Luo caressed Hao Yan Que’s chest.

‘I want to discuss something with you,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘We’ll talk later,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘Wait,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Qiu Li Luo!’ Hao Yan Que called. ‘It’s rude to interrupt your husband when he’s in the middle of seducing you.’

Qiu Li Luo didn’t dare say to Hao Yan Que that it was rude not to let his wife talk.

‘It won’t take long,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, you have five minutes,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘I love the little girl I saved,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘I think she’ll be the perfect wife for Xiao Che.’

‘I agree,’ Han Yan Que said.

‘I sense she’s Xiao Che’s soul mate,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, when are you going to pay attention to your husband?’ Han Yan Que asked.

Qiu Li Luo kissed Han Yan Que’s lips.

‘Xiao Che and Xiao Ming are our sons,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Han Yan Que scoffed.

‘Xiao Che inherited my genes and Xiao Ming inherited your genes,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘If that year you didn’t save me then I wouldn’t have met you. I don’t want Xiao Che to live a cold solitary life. Can you understand that I want Xiao Che to have love in his life?’

‘Xiao Luo, how can I not understand if you’re talking in my ear?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘I’m being serious,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, you’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Qiu Li Luo blinked her teary violet eyes.

Hao Yan Que kissed Qiu Li Luo’s lips until she couldn’t breathe.

‘Xiao Luo, don’t think about the painful past anymore,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘I’m yours and you’re mine. Let me worry about Xiao Che. Don’t cry.’

Qiu Li Luo nodded her head.

Hao Yan Que licked Qiu Li Luo’s tears, and his hands caressed her soft body... it was a fiery night.

Three

Early morning, Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her eyes and opened her eyes. She sat up

on the bed.

Last night Yuan Gun Gun didn't sleep in her bedroom. She remembered a maid gave her a delicious candy, she met a big white dog with beautiful violet eyes and a handsome uncle.

Yuan Gun Gun scratched her head, got out of bed and she walked to the bathroom. Her mummy told her after she opened her eyes in the morning, she needed to get out of bed, brush her teeth and wash her face.

In the master bedroom, Qiu Li Luo snuck out of bed and tiptoed to Yuan Gun Gun's room to see if Yuan Gun Gun was awake.

Yuan Gun Gun stood in front of the sink that was too high for her to reach. She didn't know how to brush and wash her face if she couldn't reach the tap.

Qiu Li Luo smiled at the chubby Yuan Gun Gun jumping up and down in front of the sink.

'Sweetheart, what are you doing?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was startled by another person's voice. She turned around and thought she saw a goddess.

'Big sister, are you a goddess?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Qiu Li Luo picked up Yuan Gun Gun, and smiled at Yuan Gun Gun's chubby face.

'Aunty is the mistress of this mansion,' Qiu Li Luo said.

'Big sister, you can call me Yuan Gun Gun,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiu Li Luo thought Yuan Gun Gun was an adorable name for an adorable little girl.

'Gun Gun, I'm not big sister,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'Call me aunty Li. Gun Gun, do you want to brush your teeth and wash your face?'

'Yes aunty Li,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But the sink is too high.'

Qiu Li Luo couldn't resist squeezing Qiu Li Luo's chubby cheeks.

'Aunty will help you,' Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Thank you aunty,’ Yuan Gun Gun said sweetly.

‘Gun Gun’s a good girl,’ Qiu Li Luo praised.

Qiu Li picked up a tooth brush and brushed Yuan Gun Gun’s teeth. Then she poured warm water into a cup and helped Yuan Gun Gun rinse her mouth. She was happy she finally got to mother such an adorable little girl.

Qiu Li Luo washed Yuan Gun Gun’s face, and she took out a clean towel from a drawer to wipe Yuan Gun Gun’s face. She put Yuan Gun Gun down. Afterward she had to brush her teeth and wash her face too because she was worried she would wake up Hao Yan Que if she brushed and washed in the master bathroom.

Qiu Li Luo carried Yuan Gun Gun outside the bathroom.

‘Gun Gun are you hungry?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her small stomach.

‘Aunty Li, I’m hungry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Aunty will take Gun Gun to eat breakfast,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo put Yuan Gun Gun down, she held Yuan Gun Gun’s chubby hand and they walked together to the dining room. She decided, Yuan Gun Gun had to be her daughter-in-law.

End of Chapters One to Three

Related

4 – 5

Chapters Four to Five



Four

In the dining room of the Hao Mansion, Qiu Li Luo happily watched Yuan Gun Gun eat. She felt nothing else in the world could make her happier.

‘Gun Gun, is the food delicious?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘It’s delicious,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She bit another chicken wing, and smiled at Qiu Li Luo. ‘Aunty Li why aren’t you eating?’

‘Because aunty loves watching Gun Gun eat adorably and aunty forgot to eat,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo picked up a napkin, and she helped wipe grease off Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth and clothes.

Yuan Gun Gun put a chicken wing in Qiu Li Luo’s bowl.

‘Aunty Li needs to eat too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy said a person needs to eat breakfast if they want to be beautiful. Look how beautiful aunty Li is. If aunty Li doesn’t eat breakfast then aunty Li won’t be beautiful anymore.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s innocence made Qiu Li Luo laughed. Qiu Li Luo ate the chicken wing Yuan Gun Gun put in her bowl.

Hao Yan Que strode into the dining room. He was angry at Qiu Li Luo. Everything he said to his wife last night, went through one ear and out the other.

‘Good morning uncle Que,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted sweetly.

‘Good morning husband,’ Qiu Li Luo greeted. ‘Why... didn’t you sleep in?’

Hao Yan Que walked to Qiu Li Luo.

‘Xiao Luo, your heart didn’t hear what I said to you last night,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘I... didn’t,’ Qiu Li Luo said softly.

‘Xiao Luo, last night I said you can’t leave the bed before me,’ Hao Yan Que. He stroked Qiu Li Luo’s long white hair. ‘If you do, you have to pay the price.’

‘Que!’ Qiu Li Luo called. ‘Gun Gun’s here.’

Qiu Li Luo didn’t want Hao Yan Que to corrupt Yuan Gun Gun’s innocent eyes.

‘Don’t worry,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Look at the hearty way Gun Gun is eating. She can’t hear us.’

Hao Yan Que was impressed with Yuan Gun Gun’s eating skills.

Qiu Li Luo watched Yuan Gun Gun’s chubby hands hold a bowl of vegetable soup, and Yuan Gun Gun’s white teeth fought to chew on the vegetables.

‘Luo Li Qiu!’ Hao Yan Que called.

‘That isn’t my name,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, stop avoiding the evitable,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘What do you think your punishment is?’

‘Que, I promise I won’t leave the bed before you again,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘I left the bed early because I was worried Gun Gun was hungry.’

Hao Yan Que scoffed. Qiu Li Luo tugged his shirt sleeve.

‘Don’t be angry,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Sit down and eat with me.’

Hao Yan Que sat next to Qiu Li Luo and he began eating breakfast.

Qiu Li Luo ate breakfast in between putting food into Yuan Gun Gun’s bowl and wiping Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun ate heartily, she didn’t know her parents were having nervous breakdowns because she was missing.

Five

At the Yuan Mansion, there was tension between Feng Du Du and Yuan Ting Liu.

‘Where’s my Gun Gun?’ Feng Du Du asked.

Yuan Ting Liu silently rubbed his tensed temple.

‘I don’t care if you hate me and flaunt your women in my face,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘But you can’t hide Gun Gun from me. I can’t live without Gun Gun.’

Yuan Ting Liu didn’t know what to say to comfort Feng Du Du.

‘Where are you hiding Gun Gun?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘If you hate me, why did you marry me and wanted to have children with me? I left to give back your freedom. If you hate me, why did you force me to come back?’

Feng Du Du closed her eyes and cried. She loved Yuan Ting Liu, but he treated her cruelly.

Yuan Ting Liu avoided looking at Feng Du Du’s face. He didn’t know what to say.

‘I’ve had enough,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Gun Gun will stay with you. I know you’ll treat Gun Gun well. I’ll leave. This time don’t look for me. You can’t use Gun Gun to blackmail me.’

Feng Du Du wiped her tears, and she walked past Yuan Ting Liu.

Yuan Ting Liu captured Feng Du Du’s arm.

‘You’re not allowed to leave,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘You can either let me go or kill me,’ Feng Du Du said.

Feng Du Du picked up the knife from the dining table to slit her wrist. Yuan Ting Liu immediately disarmed her.

‘Feng Du Du, are you crazy?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Being played by you made me crazy,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Are you happy? You can kill me. I don’t want to live like this. I’m tired of suffering. Why are you this cruel to me? Five years ago I loved you, but you pretended you couldn’t see. You’re always icy cold toward me. You’re a scar in my heart. For five years, Gun Gun and I lived a happy life together but you forced us to come back here. Then you brought another woman here to pour salt onto my scar. Why are you treating me this way? What have I done wrong except love you? What do you want? Do you want me to die?’

Feng Du Du pounded Yuan Ting Liu's chest, and she cried all the tears she bottled up. She couldn't live in Yuan Ting Liu's cold home.

Yuan Ting Liu let Feng Du Du hit him as much as she wanted. He hugged her, he didn't want to hurt her. He was naturally born a cold person. He didn't know how to love another person.

Years ago, Yuan Ting Liu didn't know what to do with Feng Du Du who used to always smile at him. Even if he was cold toward her, she used to smile at him and stayed with him. He didn't know why, but slowly he could only see her. If he couldn't see her, he would feel lost. He thought she knew he cared about her, and they would always be together.

Yuan Ting Liu thought Feng Du Du would always smile, cook and eat dinner with him. But five years ago Feng Du Du left him. When he found out, he fell into pieces. He didn't understand why. The night before she left, they slept together but the next morning she secretly left him. She didn't take anything he gave her. Then he slowly resented her. He fooled himself into thinking he didn't need her, and he could live without her.

Yuan Ting Liu didn't look for Feng Du Du for four years. He thought he could forget Feng Du Du by four years. He failed, he went to look for her after five years. He told himself he only wanted to bring her back and make her suffer for leaving him. But when he found her, she gave him a happy surprise. He found out they had a daughter together, Yuan Gun Gun. He was happy she gave birth to their daughter, and he brought her and their daughter home. He used their daughter to blackmail her to stay, and he did everything to make her suffer for leaving him and hiding their daughter from him.

If Yuan Ting Liu was honest with himself, he would see that he wanted to forgive Feng Du Du and wanted to learn how to treat her better. But she didn't want to accept him in her life. She made him angry by putting distance between them. So he did something childish. He brought a woman home to make her jealous, and show her she still loved him like she did five years ago. But she wasn't jealous. She calmly walked past the living room and upstairs to her bedroom. She didn't know the moment he couldn't see her, he pushed the woman off his lap onto the floor.

Two days ago, Yuan Ting Liu wanted to confess to Feng Du Du that he didn't do anything to betray her. But he discovered Yuan Gun Gun was missing. He didn't want her to worry so he let her misunderstand him that he was hiding Yuan Gun Gun from her.

When Yuan Ting Liu saw Feng Du Du picked up the knife to harm herself, he realised he loved her. He didn't know what he did to make the woman he loved changed from a lively woman to a woman he didn't recognise.

End of Chapters Four to Five

Related

6 – 7

Chapters Six to Seven



Six

‘Ting Liu, I’m begging you out of consideration I loved you for years, let me and Gun Gun go,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘There are many women lining up to have a child with you.’

Feng Du Du thought it wasn’t worth losing herself to love Yuan Ting Liu.

Yuan Ting Liu was angry on the inside, but stayed calm on the outside.

‘No, you’re my wife and Gun Gun is our daughter,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Do you know you’re killing me?’ Feng Du Du asked.

Yuan Ting Liu carried Feng Du Du to the sofa.

‘It’s your fault,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘You shouldn’t have left me.’

‘It’s my fault for loving you,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘If I didn’t love you, I wouldn’t have married you. For you it doesn’t matter who you marry, you can still live with any woman.’

Feng Du Du cried on the sofa.

‘For years I did everything to please you,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘But if we weren’t sleeping together, you would be cold toward me. You didn’t love me. I didn’t do anything wrong by leaving you. When I found out I was pregnant. I didn’t want the baby to find out their parents had contract marriage. I told Gun Gun that her dad was missing. At least in Gun Gun’s heart, her dad loved her.’

‘How can you say you didn’t do anything wrong?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked. ‘You secretly took our daughter away and left me. You said you loved me for five years. But you don’t understand me. If you did understand me then you wouldn’t have left. You would have known I care about you, and I like being with

you. Yes, I'm a cold person. But it doesn't mean I hate you, and don't need you and our daughter. You're my wife. If you think our relationship is only a contract marriage then don't think about seeing Gun Gun again.'

Yuan Ting Liu wiped Feng Du Du's tears. He wouldn't have said such embarrassing words if he wasn't talking to Feng Du Du.

'Are you saying you like you?' Feng Du Du asked.

'I don't hate you,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Feng Du Du looked away from Yuan Ting Liu.

'I love you,' Yuan Ting Liu whispered.

Feng Du Du looked at Yuan Ting Liu. She thought she heard him say he loved her.

Yuan Ting Liu blushed.

'Even if what I said was true, for now you can't see Gun Gun,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'It's your punishment for leaving me. I'll let you see Gun Gun after you reflected about what you did wrong. You're not allowed to leave me again.'

Feng Du Du hugged Yuan Ting Liu's neck, and she cried on his shoulder.

'Ting Liu, I won't leave you again,' Feng Du Du said.

Yuan Ting Liu was happy to hear Feng Du Du agreed to stay with him. He must love her if he wanted to change to make her happy.

'When can I see Gun Gun?' Feng Du Du asked. 'I admit it was wrong of me to leave you.'

'If you be good, I'll let you see Gun Gun in a few days,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Promise?' Feng Du Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Then you can't bring your women here... no, you can't see your women outside either,' Feng Du Du said. 'If you do, I'll take Gun Gun and we'll run away where you can't find us.'

'You're the only woman in my life,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘That day...’ Feng Du Du said.

‘That day I was angry and I brought a woman here to make you jealous,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I didn’t do anything with that woman.’

‘That day I put laxatives in the tea for you and her to drink,’ Feng Du Du said.

Yuan Ting Liu was happy Feng Du Du didn’t change.

‘I’m sorry,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Don’t be angry.’

‘I’m not angry,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu hugged Feng Du Du. He loved everything about her. He needed to find Yuan Gun Gun soon before she found out Yuan Gun Gun was missing. He prayed Yuan Gun Gun was safe.

Seven

At the Hao Mansion, in the guest room, Qiu Li Luo brushed Yuan Gun Gun’s hair while Yuan Gun Gun licked a lollipop.

‘Gun Gun, do you know your daddy’s name?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Aunt Li, daddy told me his name once,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But I don’t remember daddy’s name. I only know he’s my daddy.’

Qiu Li Luo was surprised Yuan Gun Gun forgot her daddy’s name.

‘Gun Gun, do you remember your mummy’s name?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy’s name is Feng Du Du.’

Qiu Li Luo thought she misheard Yuan Gun Gun called her mummy Fat Du Du.

‘Gun Gun, are you sure your mummy’s name is Fat Du Du?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was busy licking her lollipop, and she heard Qiu Li Luo asked if her mummy’s name was Feng Du Du.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, sit still,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo attached a pink butterfly clip to Yuan Gun Gun’s hair, and she kissed

Yuan Gun Gun's loveable face. Yuan Gun Gun smiled at her and kissed her face too.

'Gun Gun, do you like aunty and uncle Que?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Aunty Li and uncle Que are beautiful.'

Qiu Li Luo squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's cheeks.

'Gun Gun do you want to be aunty and uncle Que's daughter-in-law?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

'Aunty Li what is daughter-in-law?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'It means Gun Gun will marry aunty and uncle Que's son,' Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Gun Gun scratched her head.

'Aunty Li, what is marry?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'After Gun Gun marry aunty and uncle Que's son, Gun Gun will come here often to play,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'When Gun Gun come here to visit aunty, aunty can prepare delicious food for you and buy you beautiful clothes. If you marry aunty and uncle Que's son, aunty will give you everything you want.'

'Aunty Li, I want your big dog,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What big dog?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

'The big dog with white fur,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'The big dog has beautiful violet eyes like aunty Li's eyes. The big dog carried me here. I love the big dog. Aunty Li, where's the big dog?'

Qiu Li Luo smiled. She didn't know if Yuan Gun Gun wasn't scared of werewolves or if Yuan Gun Gun didn't understand how dangerous werewolves were.

'Gun Gun, do you really love the big dog?' Qiu Li Luo asked. 'Aren't you scared of the big dog?'

'I really love the big dog,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm not scared of the big dog.'

'Gun Gun, do you really want to see the big dog?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

'Yes, I want to see the big dog,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Aunty will let Gun Gun see the big dog,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo got off Yuan Gun Gun’s bed, and she transformed into a werewolf. A blinding silver light radiated the room.

Three minutes later, Yuan Gun Gun saw the big white dog sitting on the floor in front of her.

Qiu Li Luo hoped Yuan Gun Gun wouldn’t disappoint me. She waited for Yuan Gun Gun’s reaction.

Yuan Gun Gun dropped the lollipop in her hand, and Qiu Li Luo felt disappointed Yuan Gun Gun wasn’t happy to see the big dog.

End of Chapters Six to Seven

Related

Chapters Eight to Nine



Eight

Yuan Gun Gun glanced at the clothes on the floor around the big dog, she jumped off the bed and hugged the big dog.

‘Big dog, you’re beautiful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiu Li Luo was happy she was right about Yuan Gun Gun. She licked Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

‘Aunty Li are you the big dog?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Qiu Li Luo howled softly.

‘Aunty Li, you’re a beautiful big dog,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Aunty Li if you come home with me, I’ll marry aunty Li’s son.’

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to climb onto Qiu Li Luo’s back.

Qiu Li Luo wanted the innocent Yuan Gun Gun to be her daughter-in-law. Where else would Qiu Li Luo find such a loveable daughter-in-law who loved werewolves instead of being scared of werewolves? Qiu Li Luo believed Yuan Gun Gun would love Hao Yan Che too. Hao Yan Che needed someone warm and loving like Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Aunty Li, I want to sit on your back,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiu Li Luo’s tail lifted Yuan Gun Gun onto her back. Yuan Gun Gun clapped and laughed happily.

Yuan Gun Gun tickled Qiu Li Luo to make Qiu Li Luo roll on the floor and howl. Qiu Li Luo’s tail lifted Yuan Gun Gun onto the bed, she jumped on the bed and sat on Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun laughed and tickled Qiu Li Luo again. They played with each other until they fell asleep.

When Hao Yan Que walked into the guest room, he saw a sleeping little round ball hugging a snow white werewolf.

Hao Yan Que rubbed Qiu Li Luo's head. Qiu Li Luo opened her eyes and jumped off the bed. She pointed her head at Yuan Gun Gun on the bed. He understood what she wanted. He pulled the bedsheet over Yuan Gun Gun's body.

Qiu Li Luo rubbed her head on Han Yan Que's leg, and she walked out of the room.

Han Yan Que followed Qiu Li Luo outside and he closed the guest room door.

In the master bedroom, Qiu Li Luo jumped onto the bed and she transformed into a naked woman.

'Xiao Luo, are you seducing your husband?' Han Yan Que teased.

Qiu Li Luo crawled under the bedsheet.

'You perverted wolf,' Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Que slowly took off his clothes and smiled at Qiu Li Luo.

'Xiao Luo, you should know I'm a demon not a wolf,' Hao Yan Que said.

'You perverted demon,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'Why are you taking off your clothes?'

'You'll find out soon,' Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que crawled under the bedsheet and kissed Qiu Li Luo's lips.

'Xiao Luo, your first sin was leaving the bed before me,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Neglecting me to be with the little round ball is your second sin. Calling your husband a perverted demon is your third sin. What can you say to defend yourself?'

Qiu Li Luo pouted her lips and hugged Hao Yan Que's neck.

'Are all vampires like you?' Qiu Li Luo asked. 'Only loves to drink blood and sleep with their lover?'

'I'm not an ordinary vampire,' Hao Yan Que said. 'I'm a vampire king. My head doesn't lust for blood and naked bodies.'

'Then what's in your head?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘There’s only you in my head,’ Han Yan Que said. ‘I want to sleep with you so there is only me in your head.’

Han Yan Que bit Qiu Li Luo’s lips.

‘Oh, then vampire king, you should punish me,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, it’s good you admitted your sins,’ Han Yan Que said.

Han Yan Que enjoyed punishing Qiu Li Luo.

Nine

The vampire king thoroughly punished Qiu Li Luo, and she laid on his chest.

Han Yan Que stroked Qiu Li Luo’s hair. He loved to see how relaxed she looked after each time they were intimate.

‘Que, have you heard of a family household named Fat?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Didn’t you say I’m a foreigner?’ Hao Yan Que asked. ‘Shouldn’t you know the family names of your own nationality?’

Qiu Li Luo bit Hao Yan Que’s chest.

‘How many years have I been alive?’ Qiu Li Luo asked. ‘How many years have you been alive? You’re an ancient vampire and lived through history. You’ve travelled everywhere too. Of course you would know more than me.’

‘Luo Li Qiu!’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘I think your heart and head isn’t with me. Let’s frolic on the bed until you only think of me.’

Qiu Li Luo knew Hao Yan Que was angry whenever he mixed up her name.

‘I don’t want to,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘You’ve exhausted my body.’

‘Even if you don’t want to, you have to want to,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘It’s your fault for biting me.’

Hao Yan Que began to tease Qiu Li Luo’s body.

‘Han Yan Que!’ Qiu Li Luo called. ‘Do you know how to be reasonable?’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘So you don’t need to open your mouth.’

Hao Yan Que kissed Qiu Li Luo's lips.

Qiu Li Luo turned her head to the side.

'Wait,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'Answer my question first.'

'There isn't a family called Fat,' Hao Yan Que said. 'The little round ball's mum is Feng Du Du and the little round ball's dad is Yuan Ting Liu. Her dad is the CEO of Yuan's company. I've notified her dad that she is safe here with us. He'll come here to pick up the little round ball soon. You saved the little round ball's life, her dad will grant any request you want.'

Hao Yan Que held Qiu Li Luo's face, and he kissed her senseless.

The atmosphere in the master room became steamy again.

At Yuan's company, Yuan Ting Liu looked suspiciously at the letter he received early in the morning, 'Mr Yuan, if you want to know where your daughter is, wait outside Yuan's company headquarters tomorrow morning at nine.'

Then Yuan Ting Liu picked up the strange plaque left on his office desk.

Na Liu Ting Du knocked on Yuan Ting Liu's office door.

'Dad, it's me,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Come in,' Yuan Ting Liu said. He nodded his head at his adoptive son Na Liu Ting. 'Ting Du, investigate the origin of this plaque.'

Na Liu Ting Du was a handsome fifteen-year-old who had intelligent eyes, long hair and a regal aura.

'Dad, Gun Gun isn't found yet,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Dad, what do you think this plaque means? Do you think it belongs to the kidnapper? Do they want money or is this a trap? Dad, don't go see the owner of this plaque tomorrow.'

'Ting Du, if you can't find out news about this plaque by tomorrow then I need to go see the owner of this plaque,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I don't care if it's a trap. If there's a chance of finding Gun Gun, I need to take it. Ting Du, if anything happens to me, Yuan's company is yours and I want you to take care of Du Du and Gun Gun for me.'

'No,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I don't want anything to happen to you. Dad, let me

come with you tomorrow.'

'Ting Du, you can't come with me,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I need you to be safe.'

'Dad, take me with you,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'If something happens to you, I can sacrifice my life to protect Gun Gun.'

'Alright,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I'll take you with me. Ting Du, you have to protect Gun Gun if anything happens to me.'

'Yes dad,' Na Lui Ting Du said. 'I'll go investigate this plaque.'

'Um, go,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Na Lui Ting Du left Yuan Ting Liu's office.

'Gun Gun, daddy won't let anything happen to you,' Yuan Ting Liu promised.

End of Chapters Eight to Nine

Related

10 – 11

Chapters Ten to Eleven



Ten

In the master bedroom of the Yuan Mansion, Feng Du Du laid her head on Yuan Ting Liu’s chest and he stroked her hair.

‘Ting Liu, I really miss Gun Gun,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘When will you let me see Gun Gun?’

‘If you listen to me, I’ll let you see Gun Gun in two days,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘I have listened to you,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘I confess,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I wanted you all to myself for a little while longer. Satisfied?’

Feng Du Du hugged Yuan Ting Liu’s neck and she smiled at him. He felt he wasted years denying he loved Feng Du Du. It was too late. By the morning, he would be separated from Feng Du Du forever.

‘Ting Liu, I want time to past faster so I can see Gun Gun,’ Feng Du Du said.

Feng Du Du kissed Yuan Ting Liu’s cheek. After the day he confessed to her, she saw him slowly change. He was gentler with her to show he cared about her.

Yuan Ting Liu hugged Feng Du Du tightly.

‘If one day I’m not here anymore, you have to listen to me and let Ting Du take care of you,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Ting Du is only fifteen,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘I’m twenty-five. How can Ting Du take care of me? I don’t need anyone else to take care of me, I only want you.’

‘It’s only a hypothetical situation,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘I’ll go wherever you go,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘What if I die?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘I’ll die with you,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘If you die with me, what about Gun Gun?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Ting Du will take care of Gun Gun,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Gun Gun loves Ting Du. Ting Liu, have you thought about letting Ting Du marry Gun Gun?’

Yuan Ting Liu pinched Feng Du Du’s nose.

‘Do you want Ting Du to suffer?’ Yuan Ting Liu teased.

Feng Du Du hit Yuan Ting Liu’s chest.

‘Why would Ting Du suffer?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘Don’t you think Gun Gun is adorable, warm and loving?’

‘Yes, Gun Gun is loveable,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu silently stroked Feng Du Du’s hair. She was proud that Yuan Gun Gun was their daughter.

Yuan Ting Liu saw Na Liu Ting Du’s caller ID on his phone. He let go of Feng Du Du, and walked to the study room.

‘Ting Du, what did you find out?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Dad, the owner of the plaque has no criminal record,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Also, I don’t think the owner kidnapped Gun Gun for money.’

‘I agree,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I’ll see you tomorrow morning.’

‘Bye dad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Ting Liu went back to bed.

‘Ting Liu, are you worried about something?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Ting Liu, whenever you’re worried about something, you can share your worries with me,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Let’s sleep,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu was worried what Yuan Gun Gun’s kidnapper wanted if the

kidnapper didn't want money.

Eleven

At nine in the morning, in front of Yuan's company headquarters, a silver Rolls-Royce stopped in front of Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du. The luxury car confirmed that the kidnapper didn't want money.

'Mr Yuan, I thought I said my master only wanted to see you,' Jia Tu said.

'The letter didn't say I had to see your master alone,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

The passenger doors were unlocked. Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du sat in the car. The silver Rolls-Royce quickly disappeared from Yuan's company headquarters.

The Rolls-Royce stopped in front of a private airport. The three young men stepped onto a small private jet to fly to the Hao Mansion.

Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du didn't understand why someone would build a mansion near a forest of wild animals.

Jia Tu pressed a secret knob and the front door opened.

'Come inside,' Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du were surprised to see a beautiful woman with long white hair waiting for them behind the door.

'Thank you Jia Tu,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'You can leave.'

'Yes mistress,' Jia Tu said and left.

Qiu Li Luo closed the door. Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du followed her to the living room. The men thought the mansion was furnished like a Victorian home.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the sofa, she ran to Yuan Ting Liu and hugged him.

'Daddy!' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Ting Liu held Yuan Gun Gun tightly in his arms. His little girl was safe.

'Daddy, what took you so long to come here?' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I really

missed you and mummy.'

'What about me?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'Gun Gun, didn't you miss me?'

'Big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun stretched her chubby arms for Na Liu Ting Du to hold her. Yuan Ting Liu loosened his hold on Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Ting Du held her.

Yuan Ting Liu assessed the man sitting on the sofa. The man didn't look like a simpleton.

Hao Yan Que thought the little round ball's dad had icy eyes.

'Mr Yuan, I have something I want to discuss with you in private,' Hao Yan Que said. 'Come with me.'

'Ting Du, stay here and play with Gun Gun,' Yuan Ting Liu instructed.

Yuan Ting Liu followed Hao Yan Que to the study room.

'Big brother Du, lollipop,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun's cheek. He picked up a lollipop from the coffee table, and gave it to Yuan Gun Gun. He thought she was a sweet little mouse.

Yuan Gun Gun unwrapped the lollipop and she held it in front of Na Liu Ting Du's mouth.

'Big brother Du, eat,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du sighed inwardly and put the lollipop in his mouth. He stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair that was brushed smoothly.

'Gun Gun, did you have fun here?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Aunty Li let me eat delicious food. She gave me a pink butterfly clip. Big brother Du, is it pretty?'

'Yes,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Gun Gun looks like a little princess.'

'Big brother Du, look at this beautiful dress aunty Li helped me wear,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's beautiful,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Gun Gun, did you miss home?'

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I missed big brother Du, mummy and daddy.’

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek again. When he was with Yuan Gun Gun, all his worries disappeared. He even forgot why he and Yuan Ting Liu came to the Hao Mansion.

End of Chapters Ten to Eleven

Related

12 – 13

Chapters Twelve to Thirteen



Twelve

In the study room of the Hao Mansion, two alpha men faced off with each other.

‘Mr Yuan, I believe you’re curious what your daughter is doing in a mansion near a forest,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘I don’t know who you offended for them to kidnap your daughter and abandon her in the middle of a forest,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Your daughter is alive because my wife saved her.’

Hao Yan Que drank a sip of coffee, and glanced at Qiu Li Luo’s anxious face.

‘Thank you for saving my daughter’s life,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Tell me what you two want in return. If it’s something I can give, I won’t withhold it from you two.’

‘It’s good we’re straight forward like each other,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘My wife and I only have one request. We want Gun Gun to marry our oldest son.’

‘What?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Mr Yuan, my husband and I truly love Gun Gun,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘All we want is you to give your blessing for Gun Gun to be our daughter-in-law for saving her life. We promise we’ll be good in-laws to Gun Gun.’

‘I can’t decide Gun Gun’s fate,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘What if your oldest son doesn’t love Gun Gun? It’s not enough if you and your husband love Gun Gun. I don’t want Gun Gun to be unhappy in the future.’

Hao Yan Que saw disappointment in Qiu Li Luo’s violet eyes.

‘Mr Yuan, how do you want to repay my wife for saving your daughter’s life?’

Hao Yan Que asked.

‘When Gun Gun is eighteen, I’ll let her come here to be your oldest son’s maid for three years,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘If your oldest son and Gun Gun love each other then I’ll give my blessing for your oldest son to marry Gun Gun. If your oldest son rejects Gun Gun then Gun Gun can return to her family, because taking care of your oldest son for three years is enough to repay your wife for saving her life.’

‘Why does Gun Gun need to be my oldest son’s maid?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘It’s a good cover for Gun Gun to live here and spend time with your oldest son,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Qiu Li Luo nodded her head at Hao Yan Que.

‘It’s settled,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘In thirteen years, I’ll ask someone to escort Gun Gun here.’

‘It’s a promise,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Since there is a chance your oldest son will be my son-in-law, can you tell me his name?’

‘Hao Yan Che,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Yuan Ting Liu heard the twelve-year-old Hao Yan Che was CEO of Hao Yan’s company.

‘Can you tell me if there is a rift between you and your oldest son?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Mr Yuan, why do you think there is a rift?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Your oldest son is a successful genius,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘My daughter’s IQ is in the bottom end of the spectrum. She’s only good at taking care of animals, and knowing how to empty a fridge of full of food into her stomach.’

‘I love Yuan Gun Gun’s simple mind and her gentle soul,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Ting Liu drank his cup of coffee. He didn’t admit how much he loved Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun didn’t need to be smart and successful. It was enough Yuan Gun Gun was his and Feng Du Du’s daughter. In his heart he only had room for Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Mr Yuan, I believe Gun Gun will be mine and my husband’s daughter-in-law,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Ting Liu smiled politely at Qiu Li Luo and Hao Yan He. Yuan Ting Liu knew intelligent men didn’t want a dummy wife. But they wanted a wife with a pure heart. Yuan Ting Liu was a prime example, he lost his heart to a simpleton like Feng Du Du.

Thirteen

Thirteen years later.

A chubby young woman snuck out to the garden of strange animals. There were rabbits, chipmunks, mice, snakes, birds, dogs and cats. The animals were strange because they didn’t eat each other, and lived in harmony with each other.

‘Don’t lick big sister,’ Yuan Gun Gun said to the animals. ‘Big sister just washed her face. Don’t make noises. If you do, big sister can’t sleep with everyone, because daddy and big brother Due will come out here.’

‘I’m here already,’ Na Liu Ting Du said to Yuan Gun Gun who was lying on the grass with the animals.

‘Big brother Due,’ Yuan Gun Gun called sweetly.

‘Gun Gun, how many times have I said you can’t sleep out here with them?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun stood, and a chipmunk perched on her shoulder.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But you don’t let me sleep with you. So I came out here to sleep with them. I’m not used to sleeping alone.’

Na Liu Ting Du untangled knots out of Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘Gun Gun, you’re grown up now,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You need to learn to sleep by yourself. Be good. Come inside, dad’s looking for you.’

Yuan Gun Gun felt sad to part with the animals. She slowly followed Na Liu Ting Du into the Yuan Mansion.

Na Liu Ting Du suddenly turned around and he brushed the chipmunk off Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder.

The chipmunk picked up its fallen nut, and glared at the man who knocked the chipmunk off Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder.

'Ah, Xiao Bi...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du pulled Yuan Gun Gun inside.

'Dad will be angry if you make him wait,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

End of Chapters Twelve to Thirteen

Related

14 – 15

Chapters Fourteen to Fifteen



Fourteen

In the study room of the Yuan Mansion, Yuan Ting Liu looked sadly at the plaque. He wished thirteen years didn't past by so quickly, but he had a promise to keep.

'Daddy,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'Come in,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Ting Du walked into the study room and they sat on the sofa.

'Daddy, why do you want to see me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I found the painting you accidentally teared hidden behind a bookshelf,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Gun Gun hid her face behind Na Liu Ting Du's back.

'Dadddy... I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I shouldn't have played with a ball inside. Daddy, don't be angry.'

'Don't worry,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I didn't ask you to come here to talk about the painting.'

Yuan Gun Gun sighed. She was relieved Yuan Ting Liu wasn't angry about the painting. She ran to sit next to Yuan Ting Liu and she hugged his arm.

'Daddy, what do you want to talk about with me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked sweetly.

'Starting tomorrow you'll be going to the CEO of Hao Yan's company's home to be his maid,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu took out a feather from Yuan Gun Gun's hair.

‘What?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘CEO of Hao Yan’s company’s maid?’

Na Liu Ting Du silently looked at Yuan Ting Liu’s poker face.

‘Tomorrow someone will come here to pick you up,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Gun Gun, you’ll be living at his home from now on.’

‘Daddy, I don’t want to go,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to live here with daddy, mummy and big brother Du.’

‘Are you disobeying me?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Daddy, I don’t know how to be a maid,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If I go, my small friends will miss me and I’ll miss them too.’

‘You can learn how to be a maid,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I’ll hire someone to take care of your small friends.’

‘Daddy, I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ve made my decision,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Gun Gun cried.

‘Daddy, why do you want me to leave home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Daddy, don’t you need me anymore?’

‘Gun Gun, you’re grown up now,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. He suppressed the sadness in his heart. ‘You can’t be here with everyone. You need to learn to be independent so in the future you won’t be useless.’

‘Daddy, are you saying if I learn to be a maid then I’ll be useful in the future?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You’ll at least learn how to take care of yourself and others,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s tears.

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose.

‘How long do I need to train as a maid before I can come home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Three years,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Gun Gun cried uncontrollably.

‘Daddy will buy a baby panda for you as a welcome home gift,’ Yuan Ting Liu bribed.

Yuan Gun Gun was conflicted. She wanted a baby panda to raise, but she didn’t want to leave home.

‘Daddy will buy you a baby fox too,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Daddy, I want a white fur baby fox,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her face.

‘Alright,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s nose affectionately. He wanted his little girl to be happy. He believed it was fate giving her a chance to find her own happiness.

Fifteen

Yuan Gun Gun had a long crying session.

‘Gun Gun, don’t cry,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Go to sleep. Your bags are packed. Tomorrow morning someone will come pick you up.’

‘Daddy, can I sleep with big brother Du tonight?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Ting Liu said firmly. ‘You can’t sleep with daddy and mummy tonight either. You’re eighteen. You can sleep by yourself.’

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips, stood and walked to the door.

‘And you can’t sleep with your small friends,’ Yuan Ting Liu warned.

Yuan Gun Gun’s shoulders sagged, and she walked pitifully to her bedroom.

‘Dad, can you tell me why?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘It’s a promise I made with the person who saved Gun Gun’s life,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Dad, are you saying...’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Um, the wife of the founder of Hao Yan’s company that we met thirteen years ago is the person who saved Gun Gun’s life,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Does Gun Gun need to be their maid?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Not their maid but their oldest son’s maid,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Why?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘His parents want Gun Gun to be their daughter-in-law,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Na Liu Ting Du stared at the tea cup on the desk. He hid his secret desire deep in his heart.

‘I only agreed for Gun Gun to live with their oldest son for three years,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘If after three years, they don’t love each other then Gun Gun is free to come home.’

‘Dad, Gun Gun doesn’t need to be his maid,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Gun Gun lived a sheltered life. I don’t want Gun Gun to be taken advantage of.’

‘Ting Du, it’s our fault for sheltering Gun Gun,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘What will happen to Gun Gun after dad and mum die?’

‘Dad, I’ll be there to take care of Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Ting Du, how can you take care of Gun Gun the rest of your life after you’re married with children and a busy career?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Na Liu Ting Du didn’t say what was in his heart.

‘Ting Du, we can’t shelter Gun Gun forever,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘We need to let her mature.’

‘Dad, I understand,’ Na Liu Ting Du said softly.

Yuan Ting Liu patted Na Liu Ting Du’s shoulder.

‘Go to bed,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Na Liu Ting Du didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to leave the nest.

End of Chapters Fourteen to Fifteen

Related

16 – 17

Chapters Sixteen to Seventeen



Sixteen

At the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Que was sitting on a sofa reviewing reports. Suddenly two figures appeared in front of him.

‘Xiao Che,’ Qiu Li Luo called. ‘Mummy really missed you.’

Qiu Li Luo wanted to hug her oldest son who grew more handsome by the day. But Hao Yan Que held her waist too tightly.

‘Mum, why are you and dad here?’ Hao Yan Che asked coldly.

‘Are you saying mummy and daddy can’t see you unless it’s important?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Isn’t it the truth?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che’s parents’ burning love for each other, let him live independently at an early age.

Qiu Li Luo glared at Hao Yan Que. She wanted to visit her sons often, but Hao Yan Que didn’t let her.

‘Mum, tell me why you and dad are here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Tomorrow, mummy will bring a loveable young woman here to be your maid,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo waited thirteen years for Yuan Gun Gun to be with Hao Yan Che.

‘I don’t need a maid,’ Hao Tan Che said.

‘Even if you don’t need her, you have to accept her,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Mummy wants her to be my daughter-in-law.’

‘Mum, Hao Yan Ming is your son too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che signed a reviewed report.

‘No,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘This young woman is suited to you. Xiao Che, if you’re not good to her, mummy will make you suffer.’

Qiu Li Luo snatched the reports out of Hao Yan Che’s hands.

‘Mum, what makes you think I’ll agree?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Because I’m your biological mother,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Che silently looked at Hao Yan Que. Qiu Li Luo hid behind Hao Yan Que’s back.

‘Because... Que is your biological father,’ Qiu Li Luo said softly.

Qiu Li Luo pulled Hao Yan Que’s shirt sleeve and she looked pitifully into his amber eyes.

‘Three years,’ Hao Yan Que negotiated. ‘Xiao Che, after three years, you’re free.’

‘Dad, what do you mean?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Let the little girl stay with you for three years,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘If after three years, you feel nothing for her then I’ll give the CEO position of Hao Yan’s company to someone else.’

‘Deal,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘If you love the little girl then you need to be CEO of Hao Yan’s company until you have an heir.’

‘Dad, that day won’t happen,’ Hao Yan Chen said. ‘After three years I won’t be CEO of Hao Yan’s company anymore.’

‘Xiao Che, what have I taught you?’ Hao Yan Que asked. ‘Don’t be too cocky before the end. There are no guarantees in life.’

Hao Yan Che looked at the reports Qiu Li Luo put back on his desk.

‘The little girl’s name is Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo disappeared from the room.

Hao Yan Che reviewed the reports like nothing happened. Except he thought

Yuan Gun Gun's name was a laughable name.

Seventeen

At night at the Yuan Mansion, Yuan Gun Gun listened to the animals snore. She wasn't sleepy.

The animals saw Na Liu Ting Du walked into Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom, and they hid under the bedsheet.

Na Liu Ting Du laid on Yuan Gun Gun's bed, and he hugged her from behind.

'Big brother Du, didn't you say I can't sleep with you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Didn't I say you're not allowed to sleep with them either?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and hugged Na Liu Ting Du like she did when she was younger.

Na Liu Ting Du stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair and she cried.

'Big brother Du, does daddy not love me anymore?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Impossible,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Don't you know how much dad loves you?'

'If daddy loves me, why is he forcing me to live in another person's home?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I don't want to leave. I want to stay here with everyone.'

'Gun Gun, three years will fly by,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du felt he was comforting himself more than comforting Yuan Gun Gun.

'What happens when I miss home?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du let Yuan Gun Gun play with his long hair.

'I'll come and visit you,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'What happens when I miss my small friends?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I'll take you home to visit them when I'm free,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, when you’re living in Hao Yan Che’s home, you need to be careful,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Hao Yan Che has a bad temper. You should keep your distance from him.’

‘Who is Hao Yan Che?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘He’s the young master of the place you’re going to,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Is he scary?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Does he hit people?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘If he hits you, tell me straight away.’

‘I will,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go to sleep,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, are you sleeping here with me tonight?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Why?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s nose. ‘Can’t I sleep here?’

‘But you said I had to sleep on my own,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du glared at the animals behind Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Tonight’s an exception,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You’re leaving tomorrow. Don’t you want to sleep with me tonight?’

‘Big brother Du, you’re the best,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I love big brother Du the most.’

‘Um, I love Gun Gun too,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back. ‘Go to sleep.’

Na Liu Ting Du listened to Yuan Gun Gun’s steady breathing. He suspected his feelings for Yuan Gun Gun surpassed a brother’s love, he loved her like how a man loved a woman.

End of Chapters Sixteen to Seventeen

Related

18 – 19

Chapters Eighteen to Nineteen



Eighteen

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up in a daze. The next moment she was shipped into the Rolls-Royce.

‘Gun Gun, be good and if anything happens, you need to tell mummy,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Yes, mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun stuck her head out of the window and she kissed Feng Du Du’s cheek.

‘Gun Gun... my little girl...’ Feng Du Du said in between sobs.

Yuan Ting Liu held Feng Du Du’s waist to stop her from jumping into the car with Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun, remember to listen to daddy’s advice,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Learn to take care of yourself and others. Don’t cause trouble.’

‘Yes daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Daddy, don’t forget...’

‘Baby panda and baby fox,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘White fur baby fox,’ Yuan Gun Gun reminded.

‘I promise,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Dad, mum go back inside,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’ll take Gun Gun there and I’ll come back.’

‘Um,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu sadly pulled Feng Du Du inside their home.

Na Liu Ting Du sat in the car and closed the door.

‘Uncle Zheng, you can drive now,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Mr Zheng drove and hummed the phantom of the opera tune.

Yuan Gun Gun knelt on the car seat like a little puppy. She stuck her head out of the window until she couldn’t see Yuan Ting Liu and Feng Du Du.

‘Gun Gun, do you remember everything I told you last night?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

The last thing Yuan Gun Gun remembered was she slept on Na Liu Ting Du’s lap in the car.

‘Gun Gun wake up,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He patted Yuan Gun Gun’s biteable pink cheek. ‘We’re here.’

‘We’re here already?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked in a drowsy voice.

Na Liu Ting Du helped Yuan Gun Gun out of the car.

‘Stand straight,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the Hao Mansion. It looked like a painting of a mansion in a forest.

Na Liu Ting Du rolled Yuan Gun Gun’s suitcases to the front door where a crowd was waiting for Yuan Gun Gun.

The caretaker Mrs Chen was a forty-year-old woman.

‘Hello Miss Yuan,’ Mrs Chen greeted.

‘Aunty you can call me Gun Gun,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’m the caretaker,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Miss Yuan, you can call me Mrs Chen. Come with me inside.’

‘Gun Gun, I have to go,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He passed the suitcases to Yuan Gun Gun. ‘Be good. If anything happens call me.’

‘Bye big brother Du, I’ll miss you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't care about the crowd, she kissed Na Liu Ting Du's cheek.

Na Liu Ting Du rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

After Na Liu Ting Du left, Yuan Gun Gun ran to Mrs Chen.

'Mrs Chen, I'm sorry I made you wait,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Let's go,' Mrs Chen said.

Years later, Yuan Gun Gun looked back at her time being a maid as the most painful period of life when she was bullied the most.

Nineteen

Yuan Gun Gun's dad was a rich man. She wasn't shocked by how big the interior of the Hao Mansion was.

'Everyone can go back to their duties,' Mrs Chen said to the maids and butlers.

'Yes Mrs Chen,' the maids and butlers said together.

'Miss Yuan, follow me,' Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun followed Mrs Chen to a princess bedroom. The walls were pink, and the curtains were white silk. In centre the bedroom was a canopy bed and a vanity table.

Mrs Chen closed the door and she assessed the chubby little girl in front of her. The little girl owned a good pelvis, good for child bearing. The little girl had ample breasts, an average waist, average legs and a round bottom. The little girl had beautiful hands and a loveable round face. Mrs Chen loved the little girl's big round eyes with long eyelashes. Mrs Chen also loved the little girl's small straight nose and apple red lips. Mrs Chen concluded the little girl was an innocent chubby beauty.

Yuan Gun Gun widened her eyes, swallowed her saliva and looked at the stern Mrs Chen. She wasn't certain if Mrs Chen liked her.

Suddenly Mrs Chen pulled Yuan Gun Gun to sit on the bed.

'You're the type of girl I like,' Mrs Chen said. 'In front of other people, call me Mrs Chen. When it's only us, you can call me aunty Chen.'

Yuan Gun Gun would forget everything if someone smiled at her.

‘Aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun called sweetly.

‘You’re a loveable girl,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘I want you to hear you call me again.’

‘Aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘You make me want to squeeze your cheeks,’ Mrs Chen said. She squeezed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks. ‘You have adorable soft cheeks.’

Yuan Gun Gun smiled and let Mrs Chen squeeze Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks. Mrs Chen thought Yuan Gun Gun was too good for Hao Yan Che.

‘Aunty Chen, if you’re the caretaker, does that mean in the future you’ll be training me to be a maid?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and rubbed her sore cheeks.

‘Yes,’ Mrs Chen said. She patted her chest. ‘As long as you follow aunty, your work life here will be smooth under my watch.’

‘Aunty Chen, what will I be doing each day?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘We’ll talk about it another time,’ Mrs Chen said. She squeezed Yuan Gun Gun’s irresistible cheeks again. ‘You can unpack first. Later you’ll serve young master dinner.’

‘Serve?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You’ll find out later,’ Mrs Chen said. She smiled cryptically. ‘I’ll leave you here to unpack. Someone will come soon to bring your uniform.’

Mrs Chen rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Uniform?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Everyone here wears a uniform according to their status. After you change into your uniform, I’ll take you to young master’s bedroom for you to wake him up.’

‘Yes aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun... remember you can’t touch young master,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Young master is a clean freak, he doesn’t like people touching him. If you touch young master, he’ll take you out to play golf. But you’ll be his golf club.’

Yuan Gun Gun pictured her head hitting a golf ball and she gulped.

‘Remember, in front of everyone you need to call me Mrs Chen,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Hurry up and pack.’

‘Yes aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen left Yuan Gun Gun to sit on the floor and pack. Yuan Gun Gun thought Na Liu Ting Du was right, Hao Yan Che was a scary man. Thinking about being used as a golf club again made Yuan Gun Gun shivered.

End of Chapter Eighteen to Nineteen

Related

Chapter Twenty



Yuan Gun Gun unpacked her clothes. But she didn't know how to refold her clothes. When she was about to give up, she heard a knock on her door.

'Come in,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Two beautiful maids walked onto Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom. The first maid carried a uniform and the second maid carried new shoes.

'Hello Miss Yuan,' the maids greeted politely and bowed in front of Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun stood and she smiled at the two maids.

'You two don't need to call me Miss Yuan,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You two can call me Gun Gun. What are your names?'

'I'm Chen Jia Ting,' Chen Jia Ting said. 'You can call me Jia Ting.'

'I'm Chen Jia Wen,' Chen Jia Wen said. 'You can call me Jia Wen.'

Yuan Gun Gun pulled Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen to sit on the bed.

'Are you two sisters?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Chen Jia Wen said. 'I'm the little sister.'

'We're Mrs Chen's daughters,' Chen Jia Ting said. 'I'm twenty. Jia Wen is nineteen. We're both older than you. In the future you can call us big sister.'

'Big sister Ting, big sister Wen,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'You have adorable soft cheeks,' Chen Jia Wen said. She squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's cheek and smiled warmly.

'Jia Wen, stop,' Chen Jia Ting said.

Chen Jia Ting pulled Chen Jia Wen's hands away from Yuan Gun Gun's sore

cheeks.

Chen Jia Wen loved Yuan Gun Gun's irresistible cheeks. But Chen Jia Ting's dagger warning was scary.

'It's OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'My family love squeezing my chubby body too.'

'Gun Gun, go to the bathroom and change into your uniform,' Chen Jia Ting said. 'Mrs Chen asked us to take you to young master's bedroom.'

'Yes big sister Ting,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the bed and went to change clothes in the bathroom.

Chen Jia Ting looked at the pile of clothes on the floor and she smiled. Yuan Gun Gun wasn't someone who knew how to take care of herself.

After Yuan Gun Gun came out of the bathroom, Chen Jia Wen squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's cheeks again.

'Gun Gun, you suit wearing a maid's uniform,' Chen Jia Wen said. 'If you wore a lace hat then you can be cast as a maid in a TV drama where the young master bullies you.'

'Big sister Wen, why would I be bullied?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Because you have an innocent face that makes people want to bully you,' Chen Jia Wen said.

'Really?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Gun Gun, don't listen to Jia Wen's nonsense,' Chen Jia Ting said. 'Come here, put on your shoes. Then we'll take you to meet young master.'

Yuan Gun Gun put on her shoes, and followed Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen toward Hao Yan Che's bedroom.

'Gun Gun, tonight I'll help you tidy your room,' Chen Jia Ting said.

'Big sister Ting, I don't want to trouble you if you're busy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Don't worry,' Chen Jia Ting said. She couldn't resist squeezing Yuan Gun Gun's soft cheeks anymore. 'Tonight I'm free to help you.'

‘Thank you big sister Ting,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun linked arms with Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen.

Fifteen minutes later, the three young women stopped in front of a two metre violet door. On the door were ancient inscriptions.

‘Gun Gun, remember don’t touch young master,’ Chen Jia Ting warned.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head and she quietly walked into Hao Yan Che’s bedroom. His bedroom was bigger than Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom. She would be scared to sleep in his bedroom alone. She thought he looked like the sleeping beauty in fairy tales.

Yuan Gun Gun crept closer to Hao Yan Che’s bed. A bedsheet draped over his waist and legs. She wanted to touch his smooth silver hair and skin. His straight nose and eyelashes were longer than her nose and eyelashes. She thought he looked more beautiful than the maids and Na Liu Ting Du.

Yuan Gun Gun was transfixed on Hao Yan Che’s beauty for a long time.

‘Young master, wake up,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s after sunset.’

Hao Yan Che continued to sleep.

‘Young master if you don’t wake up to eat your dinner, I’ll eat all your dinner,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was disappointed Na Liu Ting Du’s trick to wake her up didn’t work on Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, I can see your naked bottom,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun still couldn’t wake up Hao Yan Che. She was about to shake him awake, but she remembered Mrs Chen and Chen Jia Ting’s warnings. She looked around the bedroom for something to poke him awake. Her eyes landed on the bathroom door. She quietly walked to the bathroom, and picked up a plunger.

Yuan Gun Gun walked back to Hao Yan Che’s bed. When she was about to poke him with a plunger, she heard his voice.

‘If you dare touch me with the plunger, I’ll turn you into paper,’ Hao Yan Che warned.

End of Chapter Twenty

Related

Chapter Twenty-One



Hao Yan Che looked at the little girl in front of him. She had snow white skin, her body was like a little round ball. The black and white maid's uniform made her look like a seaweed wrapped rice ball. No matter what angle he looked at her face, she looked like a dummy, which meant she must be his parents' ideal daughter-in-law.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che looked more handsome with his eyes opened. His eyes were violet like violet eyes she had seen somewhere buried deep in her memories.

'How will you turn me into paper?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'First I'll chop off your arms and legs,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Then I'll poke out your eyes, cut off your tongue, hammer your ears off, and lastly I'll nail your head to a wall.'

Yuan Gun Gun dropped the plunger and cried.

'Big sister Ting... big sister Wen...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che was a scary beautiful monster.

Hao Yan Che considered calling someone to whip Yuan Gun Gun for daring to wail in front of him.

Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen heard Yuan Gun Gun's cry. They ran into the room and they were sad to see Yuan Gun Gun crying pitifully.

'Young master,' the Chen sisters greeted and bowed.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the Chen sisters, she hid behind them and her round face looked over their shoulders at the scary Hao Yan Che.

'Who is she?' Hao Yan Che asked coldly.

‘She is Yuan Gun Gun,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘It’s her first day working as a maid her. Young master if she offended you, forgive her first offence.’

Chen Jia Ting was scared Hao Yan Che would vent his anger on Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Close your mouth,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you don’t stop crying, I’ll sew your mouth close.’

Yuan Gun Gun closed her mouth, and too scared to make a sound.

‘Take her outside,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

Chen Jia Ting was relieved Yuan Gun Gun got to stay alive.

Hao Yan Che watched the little round ball leave his bedroom. He hated females like Yuan Gun Gun the most, a dummy who only knew how to cry.

Fifteen minutes later, inside Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun hugged Chen Jia Ting on the bed and cried.

‘I want to go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Chen Jia Ting patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Gun Gun, young master has a bad temper,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘He’s good at cursing people, and punishes people cruelly. Apart from those traits, he isn’t scary. Don’t cry.’

‘If he isn’t scary then nothing is scary,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, think about what you did wrong,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘Why did you want to poke young master with a plunger?’

‘I couldn’t find anything else to wake him up with,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I listened to big sister Ting, I didn’t touch him. Besides, I didn’t poke him with the plunger.’

‘Don’t cry,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘Young master was lenient on you. If someone else cried in front of him, they would be dragged outside and be whipped.’

‘Whip?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I want to go home.’

‘Gun Gun, if you’re good, no one will whip you,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

‘Big sister Ting, can I be a maid for someone else?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘You’re young master’s maid. In the future you’re responsible for serving him.’

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I don’t want to be his maid. He’ll turn me into paper.’

‘Don’t cry,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘All the maids and butlers here needs to listen to Mrs Chen. There are no exceptions.’

‘Gun Gun, don’t cry,’ Chen Jia Wen said. ‘Young master was only scaring you. He won’t turn you into paper.’

Chen Jia Wen gave Yuan Gun Gun an apple.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and bit the apple.

‘I’m telling you the truth,’ Chen Jia Wen said.

Chen Jia Wen thought Yuan Gun Gun was like a scared chubby deer.

Yuan Gun Gun quietly ate the apple.

Chen Jia Wen threw the apple core in the bin.

‘It’s late,’ Chen Jia Wen said. ‘Gun Gun, you need to serve dinner to young master.’

‘How do I serve him?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Do I feed him food?’

‘No,’ Chen Jia Wen said. ‘You only need to carry the tray of food to his bedroom. Wait for him to finish eating dinner. Then take the tray away.’

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che had a strange habit of wanting someone to watch him eat dinner.

End of Chapter Twenty-One

Related

22 – 23

Chapters Twenty-Two to Twenty-Three



Hao Yan Chen sat at the dining table, and he watched the dummy carry food to him.

Yuan Gun Gun felt pressured to not drop anything. It was natural for accidents to follow nervous people. Yuan Gun Gun tripped over her feet, an omelette flew up in the air and landed on Hao Yan Che's handsome face while she fell onto his chest.

What shocked the servants in the Hao Mansion was their young master didn't kick the little round ball into space.

In Hao Yan Che's memories no one could touch him and be unharmed. He didn't know why he didn't make Yuan Gun Gun fly out the window.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared of her own hands on Hao Yan Che's chest.

'Ah...' Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

'Zip your mouth,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to stand behind Mrs Chen. Hao Yan Che didn't know why he was displeased Yuan Gun Gun acted like she was running away from a monster.

Yuan Gun Gun gripped the back of Mrs Chen's dress. Her eyes peaked over Mrs Chen's shoulder. She was scared Hao Yan Che would hit her with a whip.

'Come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun acted like she couldn't hear Hao Yan Che's voice.

'Don't make me tell you a second time,' Hao Yan Che threatened.

Mrs Chen gave Yuan Gun Gun a nudge in Hao Yan Che's direction.

Yuan Gun Gun nervously put a bowl and chopsticks in front of Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t hit me.’

Hao Yan Che looked at the plate of bacon and the steaming hot bowl of noodles Yuan Gun Gun put on the dining table before she dressed his face with an omelette.

‘I... I... accidentally touched your chest,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Your chest isn’t soft. I wouldn’t touch a hard chest on purpose.’

‘I want everyone to leave,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

‘Yes young master,’ the servants said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to run away with the servants.

‘You, stay here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun acted like she couldn’t hear.

‘The little round ball with long hair, stay here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the servant’s slim backs. She was disappointed the little round ball wasn’t someone else.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and slowly walked back to the dining table.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s waist and he pulled her to sit on his lap.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

‘Zip it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun immediately closed her mouth.

Hao Yan Che squeezed Yuan Gun Gun’s soft body left to right. He wondered if she was a soft plush toy.

‘It tickles,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s face curiously. He didn’t know why he didn’t hate touching her body.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped drool off her face.

‘Touch me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I said touch me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If I touch you, will you kick me like a ball?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then I don’t want to touch you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘If you don’t touch me right now, I’ll kick you out the window,’ Hao Yan Che threatened.

Yuan Gun Gun tentatively touched Hao Yan Che’s face. He didn’t hit her. She squeezed his face boldly. She was envious of his smooth firm skin.

Hao Yan Che creased his brows. He couldn’t believe his body allowed Yuan Gun Gun to touch him freely.

Since Hao Yan Che didn’t react, Yuan Gun Gun played with his cheeks. Suddenly he pushed her off his lap and onto the floor.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out and rubbed her sore bottom.

‘Go outside and tell another maid to come in here,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yuan Gun Gun walked outside and mumbled curses under her breath, like Hao Yan Che the temperamental monster.

Mrs Chen was waiting outside the dining room for Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Mrs Chen, young master asked for another maid to come into the dining room,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen sent a beautiful maid with a slim waist into the dining room.

Half a minute later, a body was heard crushing into a table followed by a scream of pain.

‘Mrs Chen, call the doctor,’ a servant said.

Mrs Chen pitied the sacrificial maid. Mrs Chen wondered why Yuan Gun Gun could touch Hao Yan Che’s body and remain in one piece.

Mrs Chen instructed some servants to take the sacrificial maid to see the doctor for bandaging. Afterward Mrs Chen led the rest of the servants back to the dining room.

Yuan Gun Gun would rather die than stand in front of the crowd. She stood hidden behind the crowd.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun heard her name. She clutched onto Chen Jia Ting’s body and shivered.

Chen Jia Ting poked Yuan Gun Gun’s waist. Yuan Gun Gun understood, and went to stand in front of the scary Hao Yan Che again.

Hao Yan Che was in a good mood to see the little round ball walked to him like she was going to be executed. But he knocked on the dining table and spoke coldly.

‘Where’s the omelette?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It flew,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. ‘I’m sorry... don’t be angry.’

‘Go cook the same dishes for me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If my stomach rejects your food then I’ll order someone to give you good service.’

‘How will they serve me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘They’ll use a whip to serve you,’ Hao Yan Che said and smiled like the devil.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand why such a cruel beautiful monster existed.

‘What happens if your stomach thinks the food I cook is delicious?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’ll forgive your offences,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Hao Yan Che, cooking was her forte.

‘One more thing,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘In the future if you walk like you’re crawling when I call you, I’ll chop off your legs. I’ll be doing a good deed, because it’ll help you crawl like the paste you like to walk.’

Mrs Chen who helped raised Hao Yan Chen since he was a baby, thought Hao Yan Chen was being naive if he didn’t hurry up and accept Yuan Gun Gun. She

could see clearly, Hao Yan Chen treated Yuan Gun Gun differently compared to how he treated everyone else.

Thirteen minutes later, a proud Yuan Gun Gun brought plates of food she cooked to the dining table. She bravely cut the omelette, used a fork to pick up a piece of omelette and held it in front of Hao Yan Che's mouth.

'Have a bite,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'My daddy always say my cooking is delicious.'

Hao Yan Che looked at Yan Gun Gun's smiling face, and he didn't know what she was thinking.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered where she was and her smile disappeared. She put the fork back down on the plate, took a step back, lowered her head and wrung her wrists nervously. She wasn't at home with her family who loved her.

Hao Yan Che picked up the abandoned fork, and put the piece of omelette in his mouth. He chewed and swallowed. He noticed Yuan Gun Gun stole glances at him.

'Not bad,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che began to eat the other dishes Yuan Gun Gun cooked.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled again. She was happy Hao Yan Che didn't hate her cooking.

Hao Yan Che quickly emptied the plates of food on the dining table into his stomach and used a napkin to wipe his mouth.

'I want to eat more,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, and ran into the kitchen to cook more dishes for Hao Yan Che.

That day Yuan Gun Gun was immortalized as a legend in the Hao Mansion, because it was the first time Hao Yan Che ate three portions of food in one sitting.

End of Chapters Twenty-Two to Twenty-Three

Related

Chapter Twenty-Four



The legendary Yuan Gun Gun was responsible for waking up Hao Yan Che and cooking three meals a day for him. Each day she was frightened for her life.

After living together several days with Hao Yan Che, Yuan Gun Gun was used to his habits. He liked to work at home, and if he went to Hao Yan's company headquarters, two handsome men followed him. The first man was Jia Tu, he was a quiet man. The second man was Yi Tu who was friendly, and reminded Yuan Gun Gun of Na Liu Ting Du.

Yuan Gun Gun sat in the study room as usual while Hao Yan Che worked on his laptop. She didn't understand the strange beautiful monster who wanted her to watch him work and eat every day.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around to look at Jia Tu and Yi Tu standing still. She wondered why how they could stand still all day and not feel frustrated.

Yi Tu smiled at Yuan Gun Gun's curious face looking at him and Jia Tu. Yuan Gun Gun smiled back at Yi Tu and two dimples appeared on her cheeks.

'Yuan Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Che called.

'Yes young master,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Go cook twenty dishes including one bowl of soup,' Hao Yan Che ordered. 'If you don't cook properly, you know the consequences.'

'Twenty dishes?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Are you opposing me?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'But...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why are you still here?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun ran outside. Hao Yan Che glared at Jia Tu, and resumed working

on his laptop.

A couple of seconds later, Yuan Gun Gun ran back to the room.

‘Young master, is there a time limit?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If you don’t finish cooking in an hour, you’ll find out what will happen to you,’ Hao Yan Che threatened.

Hao Yan Che shot a pen into the door. Yuan Gun Gun pitied the pen and she ran into the kitchen.

Hao Yan Che cursed the chubby little girl. Why couldn’t he kill her?

One hour later, Yuan Gun Gun popped her head into the study room.

‘Young master, your meal is cooked,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che scoffed at the scared little rabbit, and he walked to the dining room.

‘Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun whispered. ‘Today young master is angrier than usual. What did I do wrong?’

Yi Tu rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘You didn’t do anything,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Young master is being his usual self.’

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun ran witless to the dining room.

‘Why are you crawling like a snail?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Are you waiting for someone to serve you?’

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. She didn’t know why the icy Hao Yan Chen suddenly turned into a fire breathing dragon.

‘Feed me!’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yuan Gun Gun quickly put a variety of food into Hao Yan Che’s bowl.

Hao Yan Che picked up his chopsticks and he ate a mouthful of food.

‘Tastes bad,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Impossible,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun obviously took Hao Yan Che's chopsticks and sampled a mouthful of the food she cooked.

'It tastes delicious,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che silently looked at his chopsticks in Yuan Gun Gun's hands.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'I said it tastes bad so it tastes bad,' Hao Yan Che said.

'But yesterday you liked eating this dish,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Which one of your ears heard I said I liked eating this dish?' Hao Yan Che asked. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun's ears. 'Is it your left ear or your right ear?'

'It hurts... yesterday young master ate many portions of this dish,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Today I said this dish tastes bad,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Go clean the bathrooms.'

'Young master, you're being unreasonable,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'I'm unreasonable,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Do you want to see what happens if you cry?'

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips.

'And who said you can ask other people to help you cook?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'There are ten dishes on this table cooked by someone else.'

'Young master, you didn't say I couldn't ask other people to help me cook,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che thumped the table.

'If I find a spot of dust in the bathrooms, I'll ask someone to give you a beating,' Hao Yan Che threatened. 'Go!'

Yuan Gun Gun ran outside the dining room.

Hao Yan Che stared at the twenty dishes on the dining table. He was angry. Yuan Gun Gun smiled alluringly at his guards.

End of Chapter Twenty-Four

Related

25 – 26

Chapters Twenty-Five to Twenty-Six



Yuan Gun Gun wiped the windows and pitied herself. At home, her family loved her. Even the cold Yuan Ting Liu didn't raise his voice when he spoke to her.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't think she did anything wrong. Who wanted to be Hao Yan Che's maid? If Hao Yan Che punished her because she was chubby then he should ask Mrs Chen to find someone else to be his maid. If Hao Yan Che hated her because of her chubby body then she hated his handsome face.

'Gun Gun,' Qiang Jia Tao called.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and saw a young woman with short hair smiling at her.

'Who are you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I'm Qiang Jia Tao,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'You can call me Jia Tao.'

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her tears.

'Why do you want to see me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'You didn't close the door,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'I heard you crying.'

Qiang Jia Tao passed Yuan Gun Gun tissues, and Yuan Gun Gun blew her nose.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I forgot to close the door.'

'What happened?' Qiang Jia Tao asked. 'Did young master punish you?'

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Qiang Jia Tao's neck and cried.

'I don't understand him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He's a bully. He asked me to make twenty dishes in one hour. I had to ask big sister Ting to help me. He ate one mouthful and said the food tastes bad. But yesterday he ate a lot of the same food. He made me clean as a punishment. If he finds dust where I cleaned,

he'll ask someone to whip me. He bullies me because my chubby body is an eyesore. Jia Tao, do you think I want to be chubby? It's not my fault there are delicious food in the world. When I want to diet, the delicious tempt me. Is being chubby a crime?'

'Don't cry,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'You didn't do anything wrong.'

Yuan Gun Gun had a good cry, she let go Qiang Jia Tao and wiped her face with the dirty rag in her hands.

Qiang Jia Tao helped Yuan Gun Gun wash her face.

'Young master is an unreasonable person,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'I'll help you clean.'

'Aren't you scared you'll be punished if he finds out?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'We'll be careful,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'Young master won't find out.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't notice the cold gleam in Qiang Jia Tao's eyes.

'Thank you big sister Tao,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Let's clean,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

The following morning, Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Qiang Jia Tao who entered his bedroom.

'Where's Gun Gun?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'She asked me to come here to wake young master up,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

'She asked you to come here?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Is she a maid or a mistress?'

'But she said she didn't want to see young master,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

'Oh, is that why she asked you to come here?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

'Where is she?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'She's sleeping in room thirty-five,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

'Leave,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

Hao Yan Che walked into the bathroom. Qiang Jia Tao fisted her hands and left his bedroom.

Chapter Twenty-Six

Hao Yan Che walked into room thirty-five. Yuan Gun Gun was sleeping on the bed in the shape of a little ball, and hugging a pillow. Her sleeping position exposed her white underwear. He looked around the room, it was messier than he remembered.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun slept soundly.

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che poked Yuan Gun Gun’s face to wake her up, but she grabbed his hand.

‘Tastes delicious,’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep.

Hao Yan Che laid on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun. She hugged his waist and purred like a little kitten. Her body felt soft like she didn’t have any bones.

‘Big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun and kicked her off the bed.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out. She opened her eyes. ‘Young master?’

Hao Yan Che scoffed. Who else did Yuan Gun Gun think was lying on the bed with her?

‘Why did you kick me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. She rubbed her sore body. ‘It hurts.’

‘You have guts, giving orders to my servants,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun knew Hao Yan Che would find out Qiang Jia Tao helped her clean last night. But she didn’t give orders to anyone.

‘I... I didn’t give orders... I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You don’t want to see me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Who do you think you are?’

Yuan Gun Gun was surprised Hao Yan Che was psychic.

‘You’re my maid,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t overstep your status. Don’t think you’re the mistress in my home. Here you’re nobody.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t know why he was wasting his time with Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes stung and she lowered her head.

‘I know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Don’t bother crying,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Your tears are not going to work on me.’

Yuan Gun Gun quietly cried.

‘You’re is right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m sorry.’

‘What did I say to you yesterday?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t understand why Yuan Gun Gun looked loveable in his eyes.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t hold back her sadness. She sat on the floor and cried like an abandoned child.

‘I did my best... don’t hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her mouth and looked at him pitifully.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said and patted the bed.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

‘Are you coming?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the bed. Hao Yan Che hugged her, and looked at her adorable face.

‘You’re really ugly,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun lowered her head to avoid seeing Hao Yan Che’s face.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s chin, wiped her tears off her face and let go of her.

Yuan Gun Gun was awestruck again by the scary monster’s beautiful face.

‘What are you looking at?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked down and twiddled her fingers.

‘How many rooms did you clean?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘One,’ Yuan Gun Gun confessed.

‘For the whole night, you only cleaned this room?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Look how messy this room is. Are you lazy or you deliberately made this room messier? Do you want to defy me?’

‘I’m not lazy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. ‘I promise I did my best to clean this room.’

‘If you did your best to clean this room, what happens when you don’t put effort into cleaning?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Will my home be destroyed by you?’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why her best efforts to clean turned into a pig sty. Last night after she cleaned everything in the room, she carried a vase to replace the flowers and tripped. Qiang Jia Tao avoided getting wet, but Qiang Jia Tao knocked over a bookshelf and more than thirty books fell on Yuan Gun Gun’s legs.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You can punish me but don’t hit me. I’m scared of pain.’

‘Go wash up and cook breakfast,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re not angry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled, she got out of bed and walked toward the door.

‘Wait,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Why are there bruises on your legs?’

‘Last night, I was nearly squashed to death by the fallen books... and the vase...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You deserve it,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Go wash your face and brush your hair. You don’t need to strut in front of me.’

‘Do I still need to cook breakfast... hehe... I’ll go...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun leave the room. He didn’t understand why Yuan Gun Gun was someone special to him.

End of Chapters Twenty-Five to Twenty-Six

Related

27 – 28

Chapters Twenty-Seven to Twenty-Eight



Yuan Gun Gun proudly presented Hao Yan Che a hot bowl of congee.

Hao Yan Che didn't know if there was anything inside Yuan Gun Gun's brain. A moment ago, she was crying and the next moment she was smiling happily at him.

'What is this?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Congee,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Of course Hao Yan Che knew it was a bowl of congee.

'When did I say I wanted to eat congee?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I broke many of your possessions but you're not angry with me,' Yuan Gun Gun whispered in Hao Yan Che's ear. 'I made this congee especially for you. It tastes delicious.'

The servants were flabbergasted. Even Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen thought Yuan Gun Gun was brave to change Hao Yan Che's strict diet. Mrs Chen stood sternly, but inwardly she was happy to see Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che get along.

'Taste it,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'If you don't like it, I'll cook something else for you to eat.'

After Hao Yan Che ate a spoonful of congee, the servants' mouths gaped open. Hao Yan Che wasn't angry at Yuan Gun Gun, he ate the congee.

'Is it delicious?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che silently ate the congee gracefully.

Suddenly Yuan Gun Gun's stomach rumbled.

'Are you hungry?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head. She skipped breakfast and lunch. She anticipated Hao Yan Che would ask her to sit and eat with him like in fairy tales.

‘Continue being hungry,’ Hao Yan Che said and ate another dish.

Yuan Gun Gun stood watching Hao Yan Che eat. Na Liu Ting Du was right, reading fairy tales would give her false expectations.

The servants pitied Yuan Gun Gun. Since Yuan Gun Gun arrived at the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Che talked more. Hao Yan Che only talked to Yuan Gun Gun, but only to say cruel things to her. They pitied Yuan Gun Gun being treated special by Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che thought it was a beautiful day. He even liked looking at the sky he usually hated.

After the meal, Yuan Gun Gun stood like a sleepy mummy in the study room.

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che ordered Jia Tu and Yi Tu.

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu and Yi Tu said and left the room.

Hao Yan Che poked Yuan Gun Gun’s sleepy face. He was impressed she could sleep standing.

‘You dare sleep?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, I’m really sleepy,’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun down to sleep on his lap. He looked closely at her face. He stroked her soft cheeks. She snored out of her small straight nose. Her eyes were big and she pouted her lips in her sleep.

Chapter Twenty-Eight

When Yuan Gun Gun woke up, she scratched her head. She didn’t know how she ended up sleeping on the big pink bed in her bedroom. She looked at the pig clock on the bedside table, it was eight in the morning.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped out of bed, ran to the bathroom to wash and dress. She was starving, but she had to wake up Hao Yan Che.

At eight-thirty in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun walked into Hao Yan Che’s

bedroom.

‘Young master, wake up!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Hao Yan Che, and she followed him to the bathroom.

‘Young master, what do you want to eat and drink for breakfast?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Your choice,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Do you want to eat fried mung bean donuts, a vegetarian dish or bacon for breakfast?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘One portion of each dish,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Do you want to drink soy bean milk? It’s good for your skin. But you have smooth skin already. Drinking coffee isn’t good for you. What about drinking hot chocolate?’

Hao Yan Che quietly brushed his teeth in front of the sink.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che turned around and looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re in the middle of brushing your teeth. It’s not good to speak and spit toothpaste everywhere.’

Yuan Gun Gun laughed awkwardly, and went to make Hao Yan Che’s bed.

After Hao Yan Che walked out of the bathroom, Yuan Gun Gun was waiting for him at the door.

‘What about drinking milk tea?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Water,’ Hao Yan Che said and walked outside his bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun followed Hao Yan Che to the dining room.

After breakfast, Hao Yan Che worked in the study room. When he had a headache, Jia Tu gave Hao Yan Che two pills. Yuan Gun Gun grabbed the pills from Hao Yan Che’s hands.

‘Young master, do you have a headache?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun, he took out another two pills from a drawer. Yuan Gun Gun grabbed the pills from his hand again.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, do you want to die?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

‘Give me the pills,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, it’s not good to take painkillers,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let me help you use natural ways to ease your headache.’

‘I said give me the pills,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared, but she held her hands behind her back.

Hao Yan Che squeezed Yuan Gun Gun’s neck. She gasped for air and tears flowed out of her eyes.

‘Young master,’ Jia Tu and Yi Tu called.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu didn’t dare touch Hao Yan Che.

A couple of seconds later, Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and coughed. After she breathed steadily again, she wiped tears off her face and stood.

‘Painkillers are bad for the body in the long term,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let me help you.’

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che ordered Jia Tu and Yi Tu.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu left. Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Che’s arm and took him to the spa room.

Hao Yan Che laid on the massage table. Yuan Gun Gun oiled her hands, and massaged his head.

‘Young master, I don’t know what is giving you stress,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But if you don’t think about it, you won’t get headaches.’

Hao Yan Che relaxed. It was the first time someone massaged him in his life. Since he was a child his body’s natural defence mechanism wouldn’t let anyone touch him without them being flung away from his body.

‘Young master, do you want to play a game of riddles with me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che kept his eyes closed and Yuan Gun Gun continued to massage his head.

‘Why do Chinese men eat more rice than Japanese men?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because there are more Chinese men than Japanese men in the world,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, why are you so smart?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Why are you a dummy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips.

‘Young master, do you want me to tell you a funny story?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che kept silent.

‘Listen carefully,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s a tragic comedy.’

Hao Yan Che opened his eyes, he was curious to hear Yuan Gun Gun’s story.

‘Long, long ago there was a scary monster,’ Yuan Gun Gun said in a serious tone of voice. ‘No one could slay the scary monster. But the scary monster had one weakness, its one weakness killed it. One day long, long ago the scary monster released its deadly fart and died.’

Yuan Gun Gun laughed at her own funny story.

‘Young master, don’t you think it’s a funny story?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Only a dummy would think of a dummy story,’ Hao Yan Che said and closed his eyes.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why she couldn’t make Hao Yan Che laugh. At home her family loved to hear her tell funny stories and they laughed with her.

End of Chapters Twenty-Seven to Twenty-Eight

Related

Chapter Twenty-Nine



Yuan Gun Gun washed Hao Yan Che's long silver hair while he slept. She thought he dyed his hair, but there was no sign of dye in his hair roots. Like his violet eyes, he didn't wear contacts and sometimes she could see specks of amber in his violet eyes.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che didn't answer Yuan Gun Gun. She walked to a cupboard, took out two bedsheets and two pillows. She covered his body from the neck down and propped a pillow behind his head. Then she slept on the chair next to him.

Several days past. Since the day Yuan Gun Gun massaged Hao Yan Che's head. He didn't cause her trouble anymore. Except she hated the nickname he gave her.

'Little Chub,' Hao Yan Che called.

'Don't call me Little Chub,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'At home my family call me Little Rabbit.'

'Massage my back,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips, and massaged Hao Yan Che's back. He secretly looked at her reflection in the mirror. Looking at her adorable face put him in a good mood.

Mrs Chen knocked on the door.

'Come in,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Young master, there is a young man named Na Liu Ting Du waiting outside,' Mrs Chen said. 'He wants to see Gun Gun.'

'Big brother Du?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun immediately let go of Hao Yan Che's shoulders. She ran to Mrs Chen and kissed Mrs Chen's cheek.

'Thank you aunty Chen,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun ran toward the door.

'Stop!' Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and looked confusedly at Hao Yan Che.

'Did I give you permission to leave?' Hao Yan Che asked coldly.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called softly.

'Come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn't know why he suddenly felt angry.

Yuan Gun Gun's eyes stung. She didn't walk toward Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che slammed the reports on the desk.

'I said come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun's body trembled, and she slowly walked to Hao Yan Che.

'Mrs Chen, tell Mr Na that he can't see my maid and escort him to his car,' Hao Yan Che instructed.

'Yes young master,' Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled Hao Yan Che's shirt sleeve and looked at him pitifully.

'Young master, I really miss big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Let me see big brother Du for a little while.'

'No,' Hao Yuan Chen said. He turned around and looked at Mrs Chen. 'Mrs Chen, why aren't you leaving?'

Mrs Chen was sad to see Yuan Gun Gun's teary eyes. Mrs Chen turned around and left the room.

'Mrs Chen...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried. She missed her family. Why wouldn't Hao Yan Che at least let her see Na Liu Ting Du?

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun up.

‘Don’t forget your status,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’re my maid. You have to obey to my orders. If you don’t have my permission then you can’t take a step away from me.’

Yuan Gun Gun cried and didn’t answer Hao Yan Che.

‘Do you understand?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I hate you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s tears fell onto Hao Yan Che’s arms.

‘I hate you too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun, and looked at the reports on the desk.

Yuan Gun Gun walked toward the door. She wanted to be sad in her bedroom.

‘Do you dare take another step?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun stood still.

‘Come here and massage my back,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked back to Hao Yan Che. She cried and pounded his back.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu thought Hao Yan Che was being unreasonable. Yuan Gun Gun was only an eighteen-year-old who missed her family after being away from her family for a long time.

Hao Yan Che put down the reports on the desk and turned around to face Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Is your skin itchy?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Is that why you want to hit another person’s back?’

‘Yi Tu, take her to her room,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t let her go outside.’

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu led Yuan Gun Gun to her bedroom.

‘Gun Gun, listen to young master,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Don’t provoke him.’

‘I want to see big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, don’t mention that again in front of young master,’ Yi Tu advised.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand why the last several days she and Hao Yan Che were getting along, but he wouldn’t let her see Nan Liu Ting Du.

End of Chapter Twenty-Nine

Related

30 – 31

Chapters Thirty to Thirty-One



Outside the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen apologised to Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Mr Na, I’m sorry,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Young master said he’s not going to let his maid see you.’

‘A maid is a human being,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Gun Gun should have free time. When does Gun Gun finish work? I can wait to see her.’

‘Gun Gun is young master’s maid,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘If she doesn’t have young master’s permission, she can’t leave his side.’

Na Liu Ting Du saw Yuan Gun Gun’s caller ID on his phone, and he walked back to his car.

‘Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why are you crying?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I miss big brother Du, daddy, mummy, Xiao Bi, Xiao Ban, Xiao Yuan, Xiao Gun... I miss home...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, come out here and I’ll take you home,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I can’t,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Young master will hit me.’

‘Did he dare hit you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But he won’t let me see big brother Du.’

‘Gun Gun, if he hits you, you can tell me and I’ll take you home,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du will you come save me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Of course I’ll come save my Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I really miss big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Are daddy and mummy healthy? How are my small friends? Big brother Du have you helped take care of them for me?’

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Dad and Mum are healthy. Everyone is waiting for you to come home.’

‘Big brother Du, now I know how much everyone at home loves me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, you’ll be starting a new term soon,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’ll drive you to school and take you home on the weekdays.’

‘Big brother Du, I don’t know if young master will let me go to school,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t worry,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’ll ask dad to talk to him.’

‘Big brother Due, does mummy still get headaches?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Big brother, is Xiao Bi sleeping? What about Xiao Yuan’s constipation...’

Na Liu Ting Du and Yuan Gun Gun talked to each other like they weren’t separated by walls.

‘Big brother Du, aunty Chen is calling me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I have to go.’

‘Um, be good,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Tomorrow I’ll call big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Bye.’

Na Liu Ting Du sat in his red sports car for a long time staring at his phone. He vowed he would make Hao Yan Che suffer if Hao Yan Che did anything to hurt Yuan Gun Gun.

Upstairs, Hao Yan Che watched the red sports car drive off, he broke the glass in his hand and blood dripped onto the floor.

Chapter Thirty-One

At eight thirty in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun walked into Hao Yan Che’s bedroom.

‘Young master, wake up,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che opened his eyes. He looked at Yuan Gun Gun's face, but she kept her head down and didn't look at him.

Hao Yan Che walked to the bathroom to brush and wash. But Yuan Gun Gun didn't follow him like usual. She stayed behind to make his bed and tidy his bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun finished her duties in Hao Yan Che's bedroom, and she walked toward the door. But Hao Yan Che came out of the bathroom, and grabbed her arm.

'Are you angry?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I wouldn't dare be angry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Good,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun's arm, and he walked outside before her.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her sore arm, cursed Hao Yan Che softly and followed him to the dining room.

Yuan Gun Gun cooked breakfast for Hao Yan Che like usual except she didn't smile at him.

'Did I say I wanted to eat congee?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun carried the bowl of congee into the kitchen, and she came back to the dining room with an English breakfast of bacon, sausage and eggs.

Hao Yan Che ate the English breakfast, but he was angry Yuan Gun Gun didn't pay attention to him. She walked back to the kitchen and returned with a plate of pastries. He knocked the plate of pastries onto the floor, and walked to the study room.

Yuan Gun Gun knelt on the floor, and she felt sad to see food wasted.

'Yuan Gun Gun, stand up!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked up, she was startled to see Hao Yan Che was standing in front of her. He put her bleeding hand in his mouth.

'What are you doing sitting here?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Are you a dummy?'

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun into the bedroom.

The servants whispered to each other about what they witnessed. They speculated Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun were secret lovers.

In the bedroom, Hao Yan Che washed Yuan Gun Gun's hands in the bathroom.

'Put me down,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bed. She stood to leave.

'Sit down!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat back on the bed, and Hao Yan Che went to get the first aid kit.

'Give me your hand,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head, and kept her hands behind her back.

'Give me your hand!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun gave Hao Yan Che her injured hand. He disinfected the cut on her hand, and bandaged her hand.

Yuan Gun Gun's hand hurt. She was scared of pain, and quietly cried.

Hao Yan Che put the first aid kit away. He held Yuan Gun Gun's chin and wiped her tears.

'Where did you put your brain?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Is it rotting somewhere outside? What were you doing picking up broken glass? If you pick up broken glass again, I'll make you eat it.'

Yuan Gun Gun silently looked at her bandaged hand.

'Did you hear me?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I... I heard you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You're all meat and no brain,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips.

'Am I wrong?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned her head to the side to avoid seeing Hao Yan Che's face.

'Talk!' Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to talk to you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Say it again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to talk to someone who bullies me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You didn’t even let me see my family. Do you know how much I miss my family? How much I want to go home?’

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face and cried.

‘Why do you bully me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know what to say.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Why do you treat me this way when I’ve only been good to you? If you hate me, and don’t want to see me then you can ask aunty Chen to let me work somewhere you can’t see. I don’t want to be your maid.’

**

End of Chapters Thirty to Thirty-One

Related

Chapter Thirty-Two



Hao Yan Che sat on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘If you don’t stop crying, I’ll sew your lips together,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned her back to Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun from behind.

‘You’re really ugly,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If I’m ugly, I’m ugly,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t need to marry you.’

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun’s face to him, and pinched her cheeks.

‘Who would want to marry you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Who needs you to care?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Who are you talking to?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to endure Hao Yan Che pinching her face, she turned her head to the side.

‘You want to avoid me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘This is my face,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks.

‘Right now, your face belongs to me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because you’re my maid,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘For three years, you belong to me.’

‘Young master, let me go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che poked Yuan Gun Gun's rosy face.

Yuan Gun Gun hit Hao Yan Che's shoulders.

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I miss big brother Du, daddy, mummy and my small friend.'

Hao Yan Che's good mood soured after he heard Na Liu Ting Du's name from Yuan Gun Gun's lips.

'That is your business,' Hao Yan Che said coldly. 'Not mine.'

'I want to go home,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'In another three years you can leave!' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che walked outside and slammed the door shut.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the closed door. She didn't understand why Hao Yan Che was always cold one second and hot the next second.

Days later, the servants suspected Yuan Gun Gun was giving Hao Yan Che the silent treatment. It made them more fearful of offending Hao Yan Che. They thought Hao Yan Che truly loved Yuan Gun Gun if he wouldn't let her work after a small cut on her hand, he coddled her in her bedroom like she had a terminal illness. In the heat of the moment they heard him say, 'Yuan Gun Gun, if you die, who is going to be my maid?' Only a Hao Yan Che and naive people would believe Hao Yan Che hated Yuan Gun Gun.

In the study room, Hao Yan Che couldn't think and felt frustrated without Yuan Gun Gun.

'Yi Tu, call Gun Gun to come here,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

In Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom, she sat on the bed, snacked and watched TV. It was the first time she had an opportunity to eat snacks since she arrived at the Hao Mansion, because she usually spent most of her days serving the scary monster.

'Gun Gun, are you in there?' Yi Tu asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She put the potato chip on the bedside table. 'Come

in.'

Yi Tu opened Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom door, and he walked inside.

'How's your hand?' Yi Tu asked.

'Good,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed, she picked up a chair and put it next to her bed. She sat back on the bed and Yi Tu sat on the chair.

'Gun Gun, did you and young master have a fight?' Yi Tu asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said and wiped her greasy hands.

'Honestly?' Yi Tu asked.

'I want to go home but young master won't let me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, do you think young master is attractive?' Yi Tu asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He's the most handsome person I met.'

'Do you think young master is a bad person?' Yi Tu asked.

Yuan Gun Gun poured Yi Tu a glass of water, and she thought about his question.

'Yes or no?' Yi Tu asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you like young master?' Yi Tu asked.

'I don't hate him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He's the one who hates me and bullies me.'

'Gun Gun, can't you see young master gives you special treatment?' Yi Tu asked.

'I can see he gives me special treatment,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He's especially cruel to me.'

'Gun Gun...' Yi Tu said.

'Big brother Yi Tu, why did you come here to look for me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Nothing,’ Yi Tu said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Since you’re here, do you want to play a game of chess with me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Sure,’ Yi Tu said.

Yuan Gun Gun set the chess board on her bed, and played chess with Yi Tu.

After a game of chess ended, Yi Tu stood and accidentally fell onto the bed and on top of Yuan Gun Gun. His lips landed on her forehead.

‘What are you two doing?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter Thirty-Two

Related

33 – 34

Chapters Thirty-Three to Thirty-Four



Yi Tu quickly got off the bed, and helped Yuan Gun Gun sit up.

‘Yi Tu, do you think calling someone is getting into someone’s bed?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yi Tu didn’t say anything because he didn’t want to make Hao Yan Che angrier.

Yuan Gun Gun avoided looking at Hao Yan Che’s face because she was angry at Hao Yan Che for not letting her see her family.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun’s chin, and forced her to look at him.

‘Are you this lonely?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You couldn’t see that family member of yours so you seduce the men around you?’

‘Seduce?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked confusedly.

‘What else were you two doing lying on the bed?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Playing chess?’

‘We were playing chess,’ Yuan Gun Gun said firmly.

‘Do you call playing chess is having someone lying on top of you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Let go of me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re hurting me.’

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s chin.

‘Aunt Chen!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Mrs Chen ran into Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom.

‘Lock her in the dark room,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

‘Young master...’ Mrs Chen and Yi Tu said.

‘Don’t forget your status,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s not your place to question my orders.’

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She pulled Hao Yan Che’s shirt sleeve. ‘Why do you want to lock me up?’

‘Causing trouble is your own business,’ Hao Yan Che said. He pushed Yuan Gun Gun’s hand away. ‘But you’re not allowed to seduce my servants.’

‘You’re being unreasonable,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Take her away,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Mrs Chen held Yuan Gun Gun’s wrist.

‘I can walk on my own,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun puffed her chest and walked outside confidently.

A couple of seconds later, Yuan Gun Gun walked back to her bedroom and held Mrs Chen’s hand.

‘Auntie Chen, I don’t know the way there,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go!’ Hao Yan Che said.

Mrs Chen took Yuan Gun Gun to the dark room.

Hao Yan Che glared at Yi Tu, broke down the door and left.

‘Yi Tu, do you think this is a good situation?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Isn’t it good?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Do you think Gun Gun will cope being in the dark room?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘I’m shocked,’ Yi Tu said. ‘You actually care about another person’s welfare?’

Jia Tu didn’t answer.

‘Gun Gun, does she know her own powers?’ Yi Tu asked. ‘She can capture young master’s heart, and make Jia Tu who hates women care about her too.’

Jia Tu didn’t let Yi Tu provoke him. Yi Tu smiled and patted Jia Tu’s shoulders.

‘Don’t worry,’ Yi Tu said. ‘I bet ten thousand dollars young master will carry Gun Gun back to her bedroom before tomorrow morning.’

‘I bet one hundred thousand dollars young master will bring Gun Gun back here before eleven tonight,’ Jia Tu said calmly.

‘Deal,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Jia Tu, it appears you’re not a fool.’

Jia Tu walked away from the trouble maker Yi Tu.

Yi Tu packed the chest set.

‘Gun Gun, don’t blame your big brother Yi Tu,’ Yi Tu said to himself. ‘I’m packing the chest set for you because I care about you.’

Chapter Thirty-Four

In the dark room, Yuan Gun Gun curled herself up in a corner. It was dark and cold in the dark room. She reasoned hers and Hao Yan Che’s birthdays weren’t compatible. Why else would Hao Yan Che be angry every time he saw her? Hao Yan Che acted like she stepped on his tail if they were in the same room with each other. She didn’t even need to offend Hao Yan Che, and he would still be angry with her. She vowed to keep her distance from Hao Yan Che. Even if she was beaten to death, she wouldn’t talk to Hao Yan Che again.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged the hot water bottle Mrs Chen left for her in the dark room.

‘Big brother Du... save me...’ Yuan Gun Gun said weakly.

At twenty past ten at night, Hao Yan Che laid sleepless on his bed.

‘Young master!’ Chen Jia Ting called from outside Hao Yan Che’s bedroom.

‘Come in,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Chen Jia Ting opened the door. It was pitch black in the bedroom. She stood near the door because she couldn’t see in the dark.

‘What’s the problem?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, do you think Gun Gun’s body can cope in the dark room?’ Chen Jia Ting asked. ‘She’s only a little girl.’

‘Have you ever seen such a destructive little girl?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, Gun Gun is the Yuan Household’s little princess,’ Chen Jia Ting said. ‘Her family didn’t let her lift a finger. She’s been sheltered most of her life. It’s natural for her to make simple mistakes. But she’s slowly maturing.’

‘Her growth has nothing to do with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, what did Gun Gun do wrong?’ Chen Jia Ting asked. ‘If you let her take time to rest. Then she is free to do whatever she want to do while she’s resting.’

‘Leave,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Because you’re aunty Chen’s daughter, I didn’t tell you to get lost.’

‘Gun Gun has a fever,’ Chen Jia Ting said softly and left.

Hao Yan Che looked at the moon outside the window.

‘So what if she has a fever?’ Hao Yan Che asked himself. ‘What a weakling.’

Hao Yan Che got out of bed and went to the dark room.

In the dark room, Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t respond.

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bedroom, and he summoned a doctor.

At a quarter to eleven at night, the doctor arrived at the Hao Mansion to examine Yuan Gun Gun.

‘How is she?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘She has a fever... I gave her pills to help reduce her fever... she’ll be OK...’ the doctor stammered.

‘Get out!’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

‘Yes young master,’ the doctor said and ran outside.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s sick face, and asked himself if he felt regret for the first time in his life. He wanted to leave, but his body refused to

leave her. He thought he had turned strange the moment she entered his life.

Hao Yan Che laid next to Yuan Gun Gun on the bed. He stroked her hair until he fell asleep.

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up, stretched her body and walked to the bathroom.

‘Are you young master?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and rubbed her drowsy eyes.

Hao Yan Che was naked in the bath tub.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

A second later...

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun screamed.

Hao Yan Che calmly got out of the bath tub, picked up a towel, dried his body in front of Yuan Gun Gun and put on a shirt.

Yuan Gun Gun thought she was dreaming.

Hao Yan Che touched Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead. He thought she still had a fever because her forehead was hot.

Yuan Gun Gun blushed and avoided Hao Yan Che’s hand.

‘Go wash up and come outside,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che left his little round ball standing in a daze in the bathroom.

Hao Yan Che waited a long time, but Yuan Gun Gun refused to come out of the bathroom. He walked back to the bathroom, and carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bed.

Yuan Gun Gun looked fearfully at the person wearing a white lab coat, and she hid under the bedsheet.

‘Come out,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘No needles.’

‘If you don’t come out, I’ll ask them to use the biggest needle to give you an injection,’ Hao Yan Che threatened.

Yuan Gun Gun sat up on the bed. She stared at the needle and cried.

‘Miss, give me your left arm and fist your hand,’ the doctor said.

‘Listen to the doctor,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun slowly gave her left arm to the doctor and fisted her hand. Her right hand clutched Hao Yan Che’s shirt while the doctor gave her an injection.

‘All done,’ the doctor said.

The doctor smiled at the pitiful Yuan Gun Gun who had a fear of pain. The doctor wanted to squeeze Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks and console her. But Hao Yan Che looked at the doctor like Hao Yan Che wouldn’t hesitate to kill if the doctor touched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘I’ll leave,’ the doctor said.

Hao Yan Che let the doctor leave without thanking the doctor.

End of Chapters Thirty-Three to Thirty-Four

Related

35 – 36

Chapters Thirty-Five to Thirty-Six



‘People say fat helps fight against the cold,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Looks like you’re the exception.’

Yuan Gun Gun ignored Hao Yan Che.

‘Your fat is useless,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My fat can’t fight against the cold. So what if my fat is useless and an eyesore to you? My mum told me a cat who has fish to eat and a dog who has meat to eat are happy. I love eating and I love being fat. You have no reason to be angry because I’m fat.’

‘Who are you talking to?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned her head away from Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘Are you a cat or a dog?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘I’m a pet being mistreated by their owner,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che continued to pinch Yuan Gun Gun’s face and he smiled warmly. She didn’t know a cold person like Hao Yan Che knew how to smile warmly.

‘What are you looking at?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun ignored Hao Yan Che again. So he used his index finger to push her small nose up like a pig’s snout.

A while later, Hao Yan Che carried a tray with a hot bowl of congee on top to the bedroom for Yuan Gun Gun to eat.

‘Sit up and eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. Hao Yan Che put the tray on the bedside table,

he pulled her up to sit against the bedhead and began feeding her congee.

Hao Yan Che was surprised he had enough patience to slowly feed Yuan Gun Gun a whole bowl of congee.

Yuan Gun Gun licked her lips, because she didn't expect Hao Yan Che would wipe her mouth.

'Do you want to eat more?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'm full,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then why are you licking your lips?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Why can't I lick my lips just because you don't want to wipe my mouth?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'What did you say?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che roughly wiped Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

'Do you want to go home?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Don't you like living here?'

'I miss my family and I miss my small friends,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn't want to see Yuan Gun Gun cry.

'Who is Na Liu Ting Du?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'My big brother,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'I'll let you go home,' Hao Yan Che said.

'What?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'At midnight I'll ask someone to take you to see your family,' Hao Yan Che said.
'At midday tomorrow, I'll ask someone to take you back here.'

'Why do I have to come back that soon?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'You don't want to go?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I want to go!' Yuan Gun Gun said. She hugged Hao Yan Che's neck and smiled.
'Thank you young master.'

‘What happened yesterday?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I should be the one asking what happened yesterday,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Didn’t you know I called you to come see me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘When did you call me to come see you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Big brother Yi Tu came to visit me, and I asked him to play chess with me. After the game of chess, he stood and accidentally fell on top of me. Then you came and ordered aunty Chen to lock me in the cold dark room.’

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose.

‘Stay here,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Someone will take you to visit your family tonight.’

Hao Yan Che cursed Yi Tu.

‘Young master, are you leaving?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Can’t I leave?’ Hao Yan Che asked and stormed out of the bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun turned on the TV to past the time while waiting to go home.

Chapter Thirty-Six

In the study room, Hao Yan Che interrogated Yi Tu.

‘Yi Tu, lately do you have a lot of free time?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, how can I have free time when I’m busy all the time?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Yi Tu, don’t let it happen a second time,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You know the consequences.’

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che turned back to his laptop and worked.

In the middle of the night, Yuan Gun Gun arrived at the Yuan Mansion and ran to her parents’ room...

Yuan Ting Liu was in the middle of pleasuring Feng Du Du's body when the door opened. He saw his little girl standing at the door and froze on top of Feng Du Du's body.

'Daddy, mummy, do your best,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled awkwardly, walked outside and closed the door.

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Yuan Ting Liu yelled.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to Na Liu Ting Du's bedroom.

'Big brother Du, save me!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun,' Na Liu Ting Du said and hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'Big brother Du, I missed you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why are you home?' Na Ling Ting Du asked and stroked Yuan Gun Gun's long hair.

'Young master let me come home,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'He let you come home?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'For how long?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'At midday tomorrow someone will take me back to him,' Yuan Gun Gun said and kissed Na Liu Ting Du's cheek.

'That soon,' Na Liu Ting Du said. He kissed Yuan Gun Gun's cheek. 'You've lost a lot of weight.'

'Really?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Na Liu Ting Du said and squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's nose.

'Big brother Du, I want to see my small friends,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du wrapped an arm around Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder and walked with her to see her small friends.

'Did you see dad and mum yet?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why are you blushing?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Daddy and mummy are busy making a little sister or a little brother for me,’ Yuan Gun Gun whispered in Na Liu Ting Du’s ear.

When they arrived in the garden, Yuan Gun Gun’s small friends jumped onto Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

‘Xiao Bi, don’t pull big sister’s hair,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Xiao Yuan, don’t lick big sister’s ear. Xiao Liu, your spines are tickling me. Xiao Chen, you’re constricting my arm.’

Most of the animals hid after they saw Na Liu Ting Du. A white snake coiled around Yuan Gun Gun’s arm, a puppy licked Yuan Gun Gun’s face and a chipmunk sat on top of Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Big sister missed everyone,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat in the middle of the garden, and she fed her small friends.

‘Since everyone was good while I was away, I’ll tell everyone funny stories,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du went to get pillows and a bedsheet for Yuan Gun Gun. He sat next to Yuan Gun Gun on the ground, and listened to her tell funny stories to her small friends. He asked himself if he missed Yuan Gun Gun as a brother or if he missed her because he loved her.

End of Chapters Thirty-Five to Thirty-Six

Related

Chapter Thirty-Seven



Yuan Gun Gun slept on Na Liu Ting Du's chest to nine in the morning. Then Yuan Gun Gun spent time with her parents to eleven in the morning.

'Little treasure, give this to your handsome wolf,' Feng Du Du said.

'Mummy, what handsome wolf?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Who else but your young master?' Feng Du Du asked. 'Mummy saw him on TV.'

'Mummy, why...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's to say thank you for letting you see us,' Feng Du Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun accepted the three tier meal box.

'Gun Gun, remember...' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Yes daddy,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She kissed Yuan Ting Liu's cheek. 'I'll remember to knock before I walk into a room.'

Yuan Ting Liu rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Go safely and be good,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Bye daddy, bye mummy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat in the car and she waved bye.

'Little treasure, we're waiting for you to come back,' Feng Du Du said.

Feng Du Du kept waving until she couldn't see the car.

'Ting Liu, I'm always worrying when Gun Gun isn't with us,' Feng Du Du said.

'Don't worry,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Our daughter is a dummy like you. She'll have her own happiness.'

Yuan Ting Liu took Feng Du Du back to their bedroom.

In the car, Yuan Gun Gun unzipped a big back pack and some of her small friends jumped onto her lap.

‘Gun Gun, now I know why you took so long to pack,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, don’t tell daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged the white puppy, kissed the chipmunk, patted the snake and the baby hedgehog sat on the white puppy’s head.

‘Gun Gun, the Hao Mansion isn’t your home,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He lifted Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap. ‘It’s not good to bring your small friends there.’

‘I know it’s not my home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But I’m all alone there. I miss big brother Du, daddy and mummy. Is it wrong for me to bring some of my small friends there so I wouldn’t be lonely?’

‘Do your best not to let anyone discover them,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I promise I’ll be careful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and kissed Na Liu Ting Du’s cheek.

After the car parked in front of the Hao Mansion, Yuan Gun Gun waved bye to Na Liu Ting Du, she carried the big back pack on her back, held the three tier meal box in her hands and walked into the Hao Mansion.

‘Mrs Chen, I’m back,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um, young master is at Hao Yan’s company,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘You can go to your room and rest.’

‘Yes Mrs Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to the pink bedroom, and closed the door. She unzipped the back pack and her small friends snooped around the bedroom. She felt happy she brought them with her.

Suddenly the door opened.

‘Big sister Tao,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Xiao Yuan jumping at her feet, they were busted on

the first day.

‘Big sister Tao...’ Yuan Gun Gun said and held Xiao Yuan in her arms.

‘Don’t worry,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. She rubbed Xiao Yuan’s head. ‘I won’t tell anyone.’

‘Thank you big sister Tao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiang Jia Tao sat on a chair, and Yuan Gun Gun poured Qiang Jia Tao a glass of water.

‘Gun Gun, have you heard that the most dangerous place is the safest place?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, if you keep them here, other servants will see them and tell young master,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Young master will kill them after he finds out.’

Yuan Gun Gun held Xiao Yuan tightly.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Usually no one comes into my bedroom.’

‘Gun Gun, you’re just a maid,’ Qiang Jia Tao. ‘Anyone can come in here when you’re not here.’

‘Where should I keep them?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Young master’s room,’ Qiang Jia Tao suggested.

Yuan Gun Gun agreed Hao Yan Che’s bedroom wasn’t a place servants were allowed to enter without permission.

‘What if young master finds out?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Young master won’t find out,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Look how big young master’s room is. He won’t notice them if you hide them there. Besides, he works or exercise most of the day. He’s only in his room to sleep at night. You can take them to your room at night and bring them to his room before you wake him up.’

‘Big sister Tao, you know young master’s routine well,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I was young master’s maid before you came here,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

‘But there is a maid who cleans young master’s room during the day,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Become friends with her and she’ll keep them a secret from young master,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

‘Thank you big sister Tao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re a good person.’

‘We’re friends,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Of course I would help you.’

Qiang Jia Tao walked outside, and Xiao Yuan licked a paw while watching its mistress think about how to sneak everyone into Hao Yan Che’s bedroom.

End of Chapter Thirty-Seven

Related

Chapter Thirty-Eight



Yuan Gun Gun snuck her small friends into Hao Yan Che's bedroom. There was a big unused drawer beneath the book shelf furthest from Hao Yan Che's bed. The drawer could fit five people. There were decorative holes outside the drawer. It was a perfect hiding spot for her small friends. She lined the bottom of the drawer with blankets for them to sleep on, and she put food and water inside the drawer for them to eat.

'Stay here,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'At night, big sister will bring you back to my room. Don't let anyone see or hear you.'

Yuan Gun Gun ran back to the pink bedroom before Chen Jia Wen knocked on the door.

'Gun Gun, young master is back,' Chen Jia Wen said. 'He wants to see you.'

'Young master is back early,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped sweat off her forehead.

'Let's go,' Chen Jia Wen said.

'Wait,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the three tier meal box, and she followed Chen Jia Wen to the study room.

'Young master, you're back,' Yuan Gun Gun said and put the box on the desk.

'What is this?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'My mummy made it to bribe you... I mean mummy wanted me to give this to young master as a gift,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun opened the box, and she took out a hot bun. Hao Yan Che slapped her right hand away from the box, and he put the hot bun back in the

box.

‘Ow... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She rubbed her right sore hand. ‘Why did you hit my hand?’

‘Go wash your hands,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why aren’t you washing your hands?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che scoffed, and Yuan Gun Gun followed him to the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun washed her hands, and ran back to the desk. She picked up the hot bun again, but Hao Yan Che was glaring at her. She smiled at him and heled the bun in front of his lips.

‘Young master, eat this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che bit the bun, chewed and swallowed.

‘Your mum is a better cook than you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Of course my mummy is a better cook than me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up another hot bun, and her white teeth chomped the bun into her mouth. Hao Yan Che thought she looked like she was eating her own kind.

‘You and the bun are cast from the same mould,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Why are you eating your own kind?’

Yi Tu laughed at Hao Yan Che’s joke.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand Hao Yan Che’s words. She picked up a tier of food, and offered the food to Jia Tu and Yi Tu.

‘Big brother Jia Tu and big brother Yi Tu, taste my mummy’s cooking too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Ow... why did you hit my head?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che grabbed the tier of food from Yuan Gun Gun’s hands, and ate it by himself.

‘Save some for me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to eat too.’

Hao Yan Che closed the box, and he gave Yuan Gun Gun a warning look. She smiled at him, and patted his hand with her greasy fingers.

‘Hehe... I meant my mummy’s dishes are for young master to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go wash your hands,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to the bathroom and mumbled she wanted to eat too.

‘Why are you two giving me that look?’ Hao Yan Che asked Jia Tu and Yi Tu.

‘Young master, how do you feel after eating a little round bun for the first time?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu and Yi Tu said and left.

Hao Yan Che ignored Jia Tu and Yi Tu’s laughter from outside the door. He opened the box again, and looked at the hot buns. He wondered if their big sister would taste delicious like them.

End of Chapter Thirty-Eight

Related

39 – 40

Chapters Thirty-Nine to Forty



At the swimming pool, Yuan Gun Gun held a towel in her hands and she watched Hao Yan Che swim laps. If he wasn't such a scary monster, many women would fall in love with his beauty. Like how Na Liu Ting Du had many woman chasing after Na Liu Ting Du. She wondered why Hao Yan Che and Na Liu Ting Du didn't have fat on their bodies. She rubbed her stomach, it was soft, no signs of bones underneath her stomach. She was envious Hao Yan Che and Na Liu Ting Du ate more than her, but they weren't fat.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the clock on the wall, it was eleven at night.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called. 'I want to go to the bathroom.'

Hao Yan Che kept swimming. Yuan Gun Gun put the towel on a chair, she dashed to his bedroom to clean his bedroom and take her small friends back to her bedroom.

By the time Yuan Gun Gun returned to the swimming pool, Hao Yan Che was wiping his wet body with the towel. Then he flung the wet towel at her face.

'Ow... young master, it's wrong to throw your dirty towels at people,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Where did you go?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'To the bathroom,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She poked Hao Yan Che's chest. 'What's wrong?'

Hao Yan Che ignored her and walked to his bedroom.

The following night at ten, Yuan Gun Gun used the same reason to sneak into Hao Yan Che's bedroom. But she got caught the moment she opened the drawer.

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che glared at the small animals clinging to Yuan Gun Gun's body.

'Young master...' Yuan Gun Gun said. She pointed at the white puppy on her lap. 'Hehe... meet Xiao Yuan, Da Yuan's puppy.' She pointed at the white snake coiled on the white puppy's head. 'This is Xiao Chen, Da Chen's child.' She pointed at the baby hedgehog in the pocket of her apron. 'This is Xiao Gun, Da Gun's baby.' She pointed at the chipmunk on her shoulder. 'And this is Xiao Bi...'

'Da Bi's child,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Young master, you're an incredible psychic,' Yuan Gun Gun praised.

Hao Yan Che smiled for three seconds.

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Hao Yan Che said. 'You dare raise animals in my room. I'm going to strangle you.'

Yuan Gun Gun took steps back.

'Young master... don't be angry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'll take them outside.'

Hao Yan Che took a deep breath. He raised his hand to knock Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Wait,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'll hit myself.'

Yuan Gun Gun knocked her own head. Hao Yan Che stared at her speechless while she rubbed the bump on her head.

'It's late,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Goodnight young master.'

'Stop!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun stood still.

'Get rid of them,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

'Do you want me to get rid of them for you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, look at Xiao Yuan's cute white hair,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Look at Xiao Bi's cute tail. Look at Xiao Chen's smooth white skin, and Xiao Gun's cute spins. Young master, let me keep them here.'

'No!' Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m alone here in your home. I don’t have my loving parents here. I don’t have my doting big brother Du here either. Why won’t you grant my small request?’

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t stop herself from crying.

‘I want to go home... daddy... mummy... big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Chapter Forty

‘Yuan Gun Gun, your tears are useless,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun put her small friends on the floor. She wrapped her arms around Hao Yan Che’s neck and she kissed his cheek. He looked at the little ball’s lips, and couldn’t believe what happened.

‘Now can I raise them here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun off him.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘It always works on big brother Du...’

‘Yuan Gun Gun, be quiet!’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Who do you think you are? Do you think you’ll get your way if you kiss someone’s cheek?’

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why Hao Yan Che was angry to that extent. She looked at her feet, and wiped her tears.

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Tomorrow I’ll call big brother Du. He’ll come pick them up.’

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun. He held her chin and kissed her apple red lips.

‘Young master... I can’t breathe,’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s tongue, and he nibbled her numb lips.

‘Young master... we can’t do this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My mummy told me,

only two people who love each other can kiss on the lips.'

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun's rosy cheeks, and he let go of her.

'Do you think I want to kiss you?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'It's because I don't want to lose. You took advantage of me by kissing me. I kissed you back so I won't lose to you. In the future, you're not allowed to take advantage of me again.'

'Oh... I understand,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She picked up her small friends. 'Goodnight young master.'

'Wait,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Take them outside to the garden. In the future they are not allowed inside.'

'Young master, are you saying I can raise them here?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Young master, you're a good person.'

Yuan Gun Gun stood on her toes to kiss Hao Yan Che's cheek. But he looked coldly at her. She took a step back and smiled at him.

'Young master, don't worry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I won't take advantage of you.'

'Go to sleep,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes young master,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Goodnight.'

Yuan Gun Gun carried her small friends outside.

Hao Yan Che rubbed his cheek. He asked himself if he felt disappointed Yuan Gun Gun didn't kiss him again.

At half past eight in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up Hao Yan Che.

'Young master, wake up!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che opened his big violet eyes and looked at Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'Good morning young master,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and Yuan Gun Gun followed him to the bathroom.

'Young master, what do you want to eat for breakfast?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che brushed his teeth.

'Did you take them to the garden?' Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Not yet... don’t be angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She fiddled her fingers. ‘It was cold last night. I was scared they would catch a cold.’

Hao Yan Che silently walked to Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom. After he opened the door, her small friends woke up on the pink bed.

Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Che’s wrists.

‘Young master, don’t hurt them,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The animals sat on the pink bed except Xiao Yuan. Xiao Yuan jumped off the bed, looked up at Hao Yan Che and barked at Hao Yan Che like Xiao Yuan was greeting Hao Yan Che.

Yuan Gun Gun hunched over Xiao Yuan to pick up Xiao Yuan.

‘You’re not allowed to hold it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun listened to Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che turned around and her small friends followed him like he was their young master.

End of Chapters Thirty-Nine to Forty

Related

Chapter Forty-One



Yuan Gun Gun followed Hao Yan Che to the garden. It looked like paradise to her. There were luscious tall trees, a pond, sculptures and a small playground that included a slide.

‘Young master, I want to go on the slide,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Can your bottom fit on the slide?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her bottom.

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun lifted Xiao Yuan onto the slide, and she watched Xiao Yuan slide down.

‘Xiao Yuan, you’re so cute,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Everyone come here and slide too.’

‘Let’s go inside,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, I want to play... I mean young master is hungry and we should go inside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Che’s hand, and they walked inside together.

‘Young master, when did you build the playground?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘My small friends are happy to have somewhere to play, sleep and eat.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t answer.

‘Young master, don’t you think I’m getting smarter by the day?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t answer because he only wanted to hold Yuan Gun Gun’s soft hand forever.

After breakfast, Hao Yan Che stood in front of the study room window and watched Yuan Gun Gun play with her small friends. He didn't know why he let her keep them in his home and built a playground for her small friends. Was it because he didn't want to disappoint her? He only knew he was becoming stranger by the day.

Hao Yan Che felt relaxed whenever he saw Yuan Gun Gun smile. What scared him was he dreamt of her at night. Before he met her, he didn't dream. Why was his first dream, a dream about a rice ball like her? His rice ball was still playing happily with her small friends in the garden. She fell on the ground, her dress rode up her thighs and he could see her cartoon underwear.

Hao Yan Che frowned when Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen helped Yuan Gun Gun stand up and pinched Yuan Gun Gun's face. He sat back at his desk, and stared at the reports. He thought about how everyone in his home loved Yuan Gun Gun including Mrs Chen and Jia Tu. He reminded himself that in three years, Yuan Gun Gun would leave and he would gain freedom. Did he want to take care of Yuan Gun Gun for three years? He shook his head, Yuan Gun Gun was only his maid.

The next morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up Hao Yan Che.

'Young master, wake up!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che opened his eyes, he didn't look at her and silently walked to the bathroom.

'Young master, do you want to eat fried dumplings and drink soy bean milk this morning?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said and washed his face.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Hao Yan Che and she went to tidy his bedroom.

When Hao Yan Che walked into his bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was making his bed.

'Yuan Gun Gun, did you bring them to your room last night?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Because you told me not to.'

‘Are you sure?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If I’m lying then I’m a little worm.’

Hao Yan Che smiled, but Yuan Gun Gun felt that he was angry.

At a quarter past one in the morning, Hao Yan Che snuck into the pink bedroom. His night vision allowed him to see in the dark. There was no one sleeping on the pink bed. His rice ball dared to sleep in the garden with her small friends.

Hao Yan Che walked to the garden. In a corner of the garden was a small tent and a lit torch.

Inside the small tent, Yuan Gun Gun hugged Xiao Yuan. She couldn’t sleep because Yi Tu told her a ghost story.

End of Chapter Forty-One

Related

Chapter Forty-Two



Yuan Gun Gun heard footsteps approaching the tent and she shivered. Yi Tu told her a ghost story about a hungry dead ghost looking for people to eat at night, and asking them to come out of their bedrooms.

‘Come out,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun held Xiao Yuan and cried because she was scared of being eaten.

Hao Yan Che didn’t hear Yuan Gun Gun respond so he unzipped the tent.

‘No!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re not allowed to come in here.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to hear Yuan Gun Gun crying.

‘Don’t come here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t eat me. I’m an only child, I have elderly parents to take care of. I have a young master I need to serve, and my small friends need me. I have meat on my body, but I hate showering. People say it’s not good to eat fatty meat. You shouldn’t eat a fatty meat body like mine. You should go find my young master. He has a lean masculine body, no fat. He’s a beautiful man. He exercises every day, and he’s a clean freak. The meat on his body would taste delicious. I’m not lying. Go and find him to eat.’

‘You certainly think highly of me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled out of the sleeping bag, and clung onto Hao Yan Che’s body.

‘Young master, it’s you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You scared me to death.’

Hao Yan Che’s body disobeyed him. His body sat down, held her on his lap and let her cry on his shirt.

‘I thought I was going to be eaten,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said. He patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back. ‘You’re so noisy’

Yuan Gun Gun’s small friends looked at their pitiful young mistress. Only Xiao Yuan licked Yuan Gun Gun’s feet.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up Xiao Yuan. She hugged Xiao Yuan, and Hao Yan Che hugged her.

‘Have you cried enough?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her face on Hao Yan Che’s shoulder.

‘Put it down,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun put Xiao Yuan on the ground.

‘Young master, it’s late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Why did you come out here to scare me?’

‘What did you say?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che threw his rice ball onto the sleeping bag.

‘What are you doing here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Sleeping,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Isn’t there a room for you to sleep in my home?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Why are you sleeping in the garden?’

Yuan Gun Gun hugged a pillow.

‘You said my small friends are not allowed to sleep inside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘So I pitched a tent in the garden to sleep with them.’

‘Who owns this tent?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Big brother Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Who does the torch belong to?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Big sister Jia Wen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good!’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are you angry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You look angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Ow... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She rubbed her sore head. ‘Why did you hit my head?’

Yuan Gun Gun laid on top of Hao Yan Che’s body to stop him from leaving the tent. He didn’t know what the strange feeling in his heart was.

‘Young master, don’t leave,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why shouldn’t I leave?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Don’t leave,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m scared. Stay here and sleep with me. I’ll be your pillow.’

‘I don’t need you to be my pillow,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. She pinched her cheeks. ‘Look at the meat on my body. I’ll be a comfortable soft pillow for you.’

End of Chapter Forty-Two

Related

Chapter Forty-Three



‘You hate showering,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Who said?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che silently looked at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Oh... I was lying before because I didn’t want to be eaten,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I love showering. If you don’t believe me, you can smell my fresh body.’

Hao Yan Che opened his mouth and bit Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s mouth released Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘I didn’t lie,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I love showering.’

‘Did your mum teach you to find a man to sleep with you?’ Hao Yan Che asked coldly.

‘Of course not,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. ‘But I’m scared of sleeping alone. Big brother Du isn’t here. Young master, I’m begging you to sleep with me this one time.’

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Since he’s not here, you want me to sleep with you? Are you saying you usually sleep with him?’

Yuan Gun Gun looked sadly at Hao Yan Che.

‘Get off me!’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat up. How could she forget she was only Hao Yan Che’s maid? Why would he care if she was scared? She shouldn’t have forgotten he was her young master, not her friend.

Yuan Gun Gun sat in a corner with her small friends. Hao Yan Che didn’t want

to see her cry.

‘Young master... I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

For a while it was tensed in the tent, only Yuan Gun Gun’s soft cry was heard.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun moved to Hao Yan Che’s side. He pushed her onto the sleeping bag, laid on top of her and kissed her lips. He didn’t hate her sweet taste. She moaned in his mouth. His hands slid under her nightgown and caressed her soft breasts.

‘Um... young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun called softly.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun like she burnt his body. He looked at her messy hair and her nightgown that he wrinkled. He was captivated by her big round eyes.

Hao Yan Che took deep breaths to calm the other pitched tent in the garden. He didn’t know why he wanted to eat the rice ball. The rice ball’s adorable face was beckoning him to bully her.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s dress down, pulled her to lie on his chest and he held her tightly.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun called softly.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Letting me kiss you is a fair exchange.’

‘Oh... are you saying you’ll stay here with me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che silently looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s innocent eyes.

‘Young master, thank you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun played with Hao Yan Che’s shirt.

‘Young master, I want to ask you something,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘How did you find out I hid my small friends in your room.’

‘Their odor,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What odor?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che closed his eyes and ignored Yuan Gun Gun.

‘But my parents’ servants told me that I take good care of my small friends and they don’t have an odor on them.’

Yuan Gun Gun poked Hao Yan Che’s chest.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che opened his eyes, and Yuan Gun Gun laughed awkwardly.

‘Young master, does your nose have a strong sense of smell?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t answer Yuan Gun Gun’s question.

‘Young master, if it’s true then you’re really pitiful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Forty-Three

Related

Chapter Forty-Four



‘Why?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘My Xiao Chi has a strong sense of smell like young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘One day, my parents’ maid ate expired food. She vomited, and Xiao Chi fainted from the vomit odor. Don’t you think it’s pitiful?’

Hao Yan Che didn’t hesitate to knock Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Don’t tell me, Xiao Chi is Da Chi’s child,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head that was often sore since she met Hao Yan Che. He closed his eyes again, and she thought he was asleep.

‘I’ll kill you if you dare eat expired food and vomit,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun giggled.

‘Young master, don’t worry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I won’t eat expired food and make you faint.’

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head again.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The following day, the servants speculated Yuan Gun Gun was their future young mistress because their young master slept in the garden with Yuan Gun Gun last night.

In the study room, Yuan Gun Gun smiled innocently at Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and smiled sweetly.

‘Your tail is showing,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her bottom.

‘No tail,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Your apron,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked down at her apron.

‘Oh, it’s not Xiao Bi’s tail,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her ears.

‘I’m here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Do you think I’ll do nothing to you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I don’t want to hear your explanation. Go wash up and get rid of that repulsive perfume on you.’

‘Young master, my mummy told me this perfume is a subtle smell,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s not repulsive.’

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Go take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head, she walked outside and cursed the scary monster.

Hao Yan Che grabbed a cold bottle of water from the fridge, he drank it in one gulp and cursed the oblivious rice ball.

After a bath, Yuan Gun Gun massaged Hao Yan Che’s back to sooth him.

‘Next time if you let me see them, I’ll...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’ll hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I remember. You say that to me all the time.’

‘Yuan Gun Gun, this is my final warning,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t think I wouldn’t do anything to you.’

‘Yes young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go get my watch I left at the swimming pool,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che’s shoulders and she walked toward the

swimming pool.

Hao Yan Che put the reports on the desk, and he grabbed a bottle of red wine from the bar.

At the swimming pool, Yuan Gun Gun found Hao Yan Che's watch on a table.

'Gun Gun,' Qiang Jia Tao called.

'Big sister Jia Tao,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

'What are you doing here?' Qiang Jia Tao asked.

'Getting young master's watch,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Let's go,' Qiang Jia Tao said.

Qiang Jia Tao linked arms with Yuan Gun Gun and made Yuan Gun Gun walked close to the edge of the swimming pool.

'Gun Gun, I'm sorry about last time,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'I shouldn't have suggested you hide your small friends in young master's room.'

'Big sister Jia Tao, it's not your fault,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'It wouldn't matter where I hide my small friends. Young master would still find them, because he has a strong sense of smell.'

'I'm sorry,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'I didn't know.'

End of Chapter Forty-Four

Related

Chapter Forty-Five



‘Everything is good now,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Young master let me raise my small friends here.’

‘Yes... young master is good to you,’ Qian Jia Tao said.

‘Good?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘How is hitting me being good to me...’

Qian Jia Tao tripped, and pushed Yuan Gun Gun into the swimming pool.

‘Big sister... I don’t know... how to swim... help...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qian Jia Tao calmly watched Yuan Gun Gun slowly drown.

Yuan Gun Gun felt water in her ears, nose and mouth. She couldn’t keep her head above the water surface. The water slowly drowned her.

‘Help!’ Qian Jia Tao said. ‘Someone save Gun Gun! Gun Gun fell into the pool.’

A long time later, Yuan Gun Gun felt someone pulled her out of the swimming pool.

‘Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu called.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Yi Tu calling her name, but she couldn’t open her mouth.

Yi Tu ripped Yuan Gun Gun’s dress. He pressed down on her chest and resuscitated her by mouth to mouth. She coughed out water from her mouth. She opened her eyes, and was relieved to be alive.

‘Big brother... Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yi Tu hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Yi Tu said. ‘You’re OK.’

Yuan Gun Gun gripped Yi Tu’s shirt. She was scared of drowning.

‘Gun Gun, are you OK?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked. She cried crocodile tears. ‘You scared me to death. I’m sorry, it was an accident. You can hit me.’

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed Qiang Jia Tao’s face.

‘Big sister Jia Tao, it’s not your fault,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What happened?’ Hao Yan Che asked coldly.

Hao Yan Che glared at Yi Tu who dared to hold Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun looked up. She saw Hao Yan Che and Jia Tu standing in front of her. She stretched her arms toward Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want everyone to see Yuan Gun Gun’s white bra and cleavage. He took off his jacket, wrapped it around Yuan Gun Gun’s ripped dress and he lifted her into his arms.

Yuan Gun Gun wrapped her arms around Hao Yan Che’s neck and cried on his shoulder.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back. He glared at Yi Tu and Qiang Jia Tao before he carried Yuan Gun Gun to the living room.

Jia Tu tossed a towel on Yi Tu’s wet head. Jia Tu glanced at Qiang Jia Tao’s insincere concerned face, and he helped Yi Tu stand.

‘Let’s go,’ Jia Tu said.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu left Qiang Jia Tao to sit alone at the swimming pool.

Qiang Jia Tao dug her fingernails into her palms. She resented the swimming pool didn’t drown Yuan Gun Gun fast enough.

In the living room, Hao Yan Che looked around for Mrs Chen.

‘Auntie Chen!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Mrs Chen ran to Hao Yan Che. She was worried to see Yuan Gun Gun’s wet body and pale complexion.

‘Help Yuan Gun Gun take a bath and change clothes,’ Hao Yan Che instructed.

Hao Yan Che wanted to put Yuan Gun Gun down on a chair, but she clung onto his neck.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want to take a bath.’

‘Let go of my neck,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to hurt Yuan Gun Gun by forcibly pulling her arms away from his neck.

‘I’m not letting go,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want to take a bath.’

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s shaky body. He carried her to the bedroom instead of letting go of her, and Mrs Chen quietly followed them.

End of Chapter Forty-Five

Related

Chapter Forty-Six



In the bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun refused to let go of Hao Yan Che.

‘Let go of me and take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen gently patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Gun Gun, listen to aunty Chen,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Let me help you take a bath.’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘If you don’t let go of me then I’ll help you take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun finally let go of Hao Yan Che’s neck, and he helped her stand on the floor.

‘Gun Gun, you’re all wet,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Come with me to the bathroom.’

Yuan Gun Gun held onto Hao Yan Che’s shirt. He pulled her hands off his shirt and walked outside.

‘Mrs Chen...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Mrs Chen rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s wet head.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘You’re OK.’

Outside the pink bedroom, Hao Yan Che changed into dry clothes, and he interrogated Yi Tu and Jia Tu in the study room.

‘How did this happen?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, I don’t know,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Jia Tu and I came back from Hao Yan’s company, we walked past the swimming pool, we heard Qiang Jia Tao calling for help and we saw Gun Gun’s head bobbing up and down in the pool. I told Jia Tu to go get young master, and I jumped into the pool to save Gun Gun

from drowning.'

'Did you rip her dress?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yi Tu said.

'Did you give her mouth to mouth?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che stood, he kicked down the door and left.

'Jia Tu, young master knows how to be destructive,' Yi Tu said. 'Since Gun Gun arrived here, this is the second door young master destroyed.'

'Go replace the door,' Jia Tu said.

'Alright,' Yi Tu said and laughed. 'It's hard to be a good person in this world.'

In the pink bedroom, Mrs Chen helped Yuan Gun Gun take a bath and dried Yuan Gun Gun's until she looked like a clean fluffy little rabbit. Yuan Gun Gun wore a cartoon night shirt and she crawled onto the pink bed.

Hao Yan Che walked into the pink bedroom, and looked at Yuan Gun Gun's pitiful face.

'Aunty Chen, go outside,' Hao Yan Che instructed.

Mrs Chen bowed and left the pink bedroom.

Hao Yan Che sat on the pink bed next to Yuan Gun Gun.

'You're a capable person,' Hao Yan Che said sarcastically. 'I asked you to get my watch. But you fell into the pool and nearly drowned.'

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips, and looked down.

'I heard fat people can float on water so they wouldn't drown easily...' Hao Yan Che said.

'But I'm an exception,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's good you understand,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che smiled and he looked at the warm glass of milk on the bedside table.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her tears. Hao Yan Che held her face, but she didn't say anything.

'Do you think crying can solve anything?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che reached for the glass of milk and he put it in Yuan Gun Gun's hands.

'Drink it all,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun drank the glass of milk, and she gave the empty glass to Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che put the empty glass on the bedside table, and he smiled at Yuan Gun Gun's milk moustache.

'Why aren't you licking your lips?' Hao Yan Che teased.

Hao Yan Che used a tissue to roughly wipe milk off Yuan Gun Gun's mouth, and he tossed the dirty tissue into the small Hello Kitty bin.

'Tell me how you fell into the pool,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I went to get your watch at the pool,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Big sister Jia Tao saw me. We walked together and chatted. Big sister Jia Tao tripped, and she accidentally pushed me into the pool. Then big brother Yi Tu saved me.'

'Stop crying,' Hao Yan Che said. 'There is nothing to cry about.'

'You're right,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm useless... your watch fell into the pool... it was an accident. Let me go home. I'll ask my daddy to replace your watch.'

Hao Yan Che wiped tears off Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'You're really ugly,' Hao Yan Che said. He hugged Yuan Gun Gun. 'And you're really noisy.'

End of Chapter Forty-Six

Related

Chapter Forty-Seven



‘Young master, the water was really cold,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘The water went into my ears, nose and mouth. I couldn’t keep my head above the water. Young master, I was really scared I was going to die. I didn’t want to die before having children. There are more delicious food I haven’t tasted yet. I can’t die without meeting the baby white fox and baby panda my daddy promised he’ll get me when I return home.’

Hao Yan Che silently hugged Yuan Gun Gun and let her talk.

A long time later, Yuan Gun Gun cried herself to sleep. Hao Yan Che helped her lie back down on the bed, he pulled the bedsheet over her body and watched her sleep.

Yuan Gun Gun occasionally sniffed her nose in her sleep. Hao Yan Che caressed her soft face.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed her lips.

‘Young master is scary...’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che considered knocking Yuan Gun Gun’s head. But he didn’t want her to wake up and make a racket.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun sleep until the middle of the night. He carefully got out of bed, and walked to his bedroom.

The next day the servants gossiped about their future young mistress’ near death experience. They were certain their young master loved Yuan Gun Gun, because he was more worried about her health than his damaged watch that was more expensive than the swimming pool. Yuan Gun Gun quickly recovered from the swimming pool incident, but she didn’t play with water again out of

fear of drowning.

Xiao Yuan resembled its young mistress. Xiao Yuan loved to follow beautiful people, especially beautiful cooks. All the kitchen maids loved the adorable Xiao Yuan. Every day Xiao Yuan would stay in the kitchen during the day, and walk out with a bloated stomach at night.

Xiao Bi was a glutton like its young mistress. Every day Xiao Bi would hide in Yuan Gun Gun's apron, and Hao Yan Che would toss Xiao Bi out to the garden but Xiao Bi always remembered to hang onto the nuts in its hands.

Xiao Chen loved to watch TV in its mistress bedroom. Xiao Chen didn't like being outside.

Xiao Gun loved money. Xiao Gun used its spikes to collect money, and stored it under its mistress' pink bed.

Hao Yan Che pretended he couldn't see the animals' strange habits as long as they didn't go into his bedroom or cling onto Yuan Gun Gun's body. If they dared to cling onto Yuan Gun Gun's body, Hao Yan Che would be angry at them. Behind Hao Yan Che's back, Yi Tu would say to Jia Tu that Hao Yan Che was displaying symptoms of jealousy.

One day in the dining room, Hao Yan Che was displaying symptoms of jealousy again.

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Hao Yan Che called. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun's ears. 'Does everything I say to you go in one ear and out the other?'

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her ears.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'It's not my fault Xiao Bi likes to hide in my pockets.'

Hao Yan Che tossed Xiao Bi out the window.

'Xiao Bi!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Xiao Bi closed its eyes, and held onto the nuts. Luckily Chen Jia Wen caught Xiao Bi before Xiao Bai fell onto the ground.

'Young master, don't throw Xiao Bi outside,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You'll scare Xiao Bi.'

‘Next time I won’t throw it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Next time I’ll strangle it to death.’

Hao Yan Che strode to the study room. Yuan Gun Gun looked frustrated at his back.

‘Why aren’t you following me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘See, it’s jealousy,’ Yi Tu whispered to Jia Tu.

The following morning at a quarter past eight, Hao Yan Che heard a piercing scream from Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom. He ran to her bedroom, and saw the look of devastation on her face. Someone slaughtered a chipmunk and left it at her bedroom door.

End of Chapter Forty-Seven

Related

Chapter Forty-Eight



Yuan Gun Gun grieved for Xiao Bi. Only a day ago, Xiao Bi was eating nuts inside the pocket of her apron. But a day later, she was holding Xiao Bi's dead body in her hands.

Hao Yan Che couldn't stand Yuan Gun Gun stroking the chipmunk's bloodied body in her hands.

'Let go of it,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun's bleach white face looked at Hao Yan Che, but she didn't let go of the chipmunk.

'I said let go of it,' Hao Yan Che said.

Mrs Chen was scared Hao Yan Che would hurt Yuan Gun Gun if Yuan Gun Gun refused to let go of the chipmunk.

Yuan Gun Gun put the dead chipmunk on the floor, she stood and glared at Hao Yan Che.

'Did you do this?' Yuan Gun Gun asked in a trembling voice. 'Yes or no?'

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, don't say nonsense,' Mrs Chen said. She held Yuan Gun Gun's arm. 'Come with aunty Chen.'

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Mrs Chen's hand off her arm, and she looked accusingly at Hao Yan Che.

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'You said you would strangle Xiao Bi to death if you saw Xiao Bi on me again. Why are you such a monster to use such a cruel way to kill Xiao Bi?'

Hao Yan Che silently let Yuan Gun Gun pound his chest and cry.

‘You’re a monster,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I hate you. Give me back my Xiao Bi... answer me, you’re a killer. You’ll receive your retribution. Why? Why did you have to kill Xiao Bi?’

‘Yuan Gun Gun, do you want to die?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes slowly changed color.

‘Yes, I want to die,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If you have the guts then kill me. You should strangle me to death like how you strangled Xiao Bi. Killing me is nothing to you. Go ahead and kill me.’

Mrs Chen pulled Yuan Gun Gun away from Hao Yan Che, she slapped Yuan Gun Gun’s face and Yuan Gun Gun fell onto the floor.

‘Don’t forget your status,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘You’re only a maid. How dare you be disrespectful toward young master?’

Yuan Gun Gun was scared of Mrs Chen’s cold eyes looking at her.

‘Aunty Chen...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘He Ruo, He Ni, lock her in her bedroom,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘No one is allowed to let her out without young master’s permission.’

He Ruo and He Ni picked up Yuan Gun Gun off the floor, they took her to the pink bed, walked outside and locked her in the pink bedroom.

Outside the pink bedroom, Mrs Chen bowed in front of Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘I’m a bad trainer.’

Hao Yan Che stared at Mrs Chen for a while then he walked back to the study room.

‘He Ruo, He Ni, go bury the chipmunk in the garden,’ Mrs Chen said.

In the study room, Yi Tu and Jia Tu reported to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, all of Gun Gun’s small friends are playing in the garden but we couldn’t find Xiao Bi,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che flipped through the paper work on the desk.

‘Keep looking for it until you find it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, I heard this morning Xiao Bi’s dead body was left in front of Gun Gun’s bedroom door...’ Yi Tu said.

‘It’s not the one that died,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, pardon me,’ Yi Tu said. ‘How do you know it isn’t Xiao Bi?’

‘Yi Tu, can you and Jia Tu die?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yi Tu said softly.

‘It won’t die either,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, are you saying...’ Jia Tu said.

‘Humans aren’t the only species that can be turned into vampires,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Hao Yan Que let them drink his blood. They’ll stay young forever.’

‘No wonder why Gun Gun’s small friends behave strangely... young master, does that mean master gave them to Gun Gun?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Go ask him yourself,’ Hao Yan Che said and left the study room.

‘Jia Tu, young master looks like he’s in a bad mood,’ Yi Tu said.

‘You’re right,’ Jia Tu said.

‘Do you know why the security cameras didn’t capture who cruelly killed a chipmunk?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Why?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Because I erased the footage,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Why?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘I don’t want young master to know the culprit’s identity because that person is still useful,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Useful in what way?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Like bringing young master and Gun Gun closer together,’ Yi Tu said.

‘What do you mean?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Young master needs to go through storms to realise he loves Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Even when he realise he loves Gun Gun, he won’t admit it. So he needs a

helping hand to push him until he accepts he loves Gun Gun.'

'Young master is going to kill you,' Jia Tu said.

'I'm not scared,' Yi Tu said. 'When that stormy day comes, I'll go hide behind master's back.'

Chapter Forty-Eight

Related

Chapter Forty-Nine



‘Is Qiang Jia Tao the culprit?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘No,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Tu Tuan the gardener.’

‘Why?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Tu Tuan has been secretly in love with Qiang Jia Tao for years,’ Yi Tu said.

Jia Tu looked out the window with Yi Tu at the busy gardener.

In the pink bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her swollen face. She didn’t understand why Hao Yan Che killed Xiao Bi in such a cruel way.

Two minutes to nine in the morning, Mrs Chen quietly walked into Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom. Mrs Chen sat on the bed, and her heart ached while she gently rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s swollen face.

Xiao Bi jumped onto the bed, and pulled its mistress hair. Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes, and thought she saw Xiao Bi on her bed holding nuts.

‘Xiao Bi?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Xiao Bi rubbed its head against Yuan Gun Gun’s neck. Yuan Gun Gun sat up on the bed and hugged Xiao Bi.

‘Gun Gun, this is your Xiao Bi,’ Mrs Chen said.

Mrs Chen smiled and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Aunty Chen...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Gun Gun, forgive me for hitting you,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘It’s the only thing I could think of to protect you. No one knows what Hao Yan Che is capable of when someone pushes his patience limit.’

‘Aunty Chen, I understand,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘This morning Xiao Bi followed Lam Ling to buy food,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘The chipmunk you saw isn’t Xiao Bi.’

Mrs Chen rubbed the gluttonous Xiao Bi’s head.

‘Gun Gun, young master gave permission for you to leave your room,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Remember young master is the king in his home. No one dares to raise their finger or raise their voice at young master in his home. Here, young master controls everyone’s fate including whether they live or die.’

Mrs Chen gave Yuan Gun Gun a red apple. For the first time in Yuan Gun Gun’s life, Yuan Gun Gun only held an apple instead of eating it.

‘Gun Gun, I know someone wants to cause discord between you and young master,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘I don’t know their motive. All I know is that today you misunderstood young master.’

Xiao Bi looked left and right then Xiao Bi bit the red apple in its mistress hands. Mrs Chen picked up Xiao Bi and put Xiao Bi in her apron.

‘Gun Gun, I’ll take Xiao Bi outside and let you rest,’ Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on her bed in shock. Xiao Bi didn’t die, she falsely accused Hao Yan Che.

A while later, Yuan Gun Gun jumped out of bed and she ran bare feet to Hao Yan Che’s bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun stared at the violet door. She sat on the floor and deliberated for the whole day whether to knock on the violet door. She thought Hao Yan Che wouldn’t want to see, because she said hurtful words to him.

At half past eight the next morning, Hao Yan Che woke up in a bad mood because he didn’t see Yuan Gun Gun. He got out of bed, brushed and washed in the bathroom. Then he opened the violet door and saw his rice ball sleeping in front of the violet door.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t wake up.

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun's eyes were firmly closed.

'Wake up and eat,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Eat where...' Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes, and saw a long pair of legs. She looked up, the long pair of legs belonged to Hao Yan Che.

'Young master...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che didn't want to look at Yuan Gun Gun. He didn't want to see her swollen face, blood stains on her hands and her bare feet. He walked away from her.

'Young master...' Yuan Gun Gun called and followed Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun, and he kept walking.

'Young master!' Yuan Gun Gun called.

End of Chapter Forty-Nine

Related

Chapter Fifty



Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried on her knees. Hao Yan Che turned around, hunched over and knocked Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Who are you calling?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'You won't pay attention to me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Who do you think you are?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che kicked Yuan Gun Gun's bottom.

'Stand up,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked pitifully at Hao Yan Che.

'Stand up,' Hao Yan Che said.

'My legs are numb,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn't want to knock Yuan Gun Gun's head again. He pulled her up, and helped her walk back to the pink bedroom.

'Go wash up,' Hao Yan Che said. He held Yuan Gun Gun's chin. 'Can't you hear me?'

Yuan Gun Gun mumbled under her breath.

'What did you say?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I said if you don't leave, I'll go to the bathroom,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun saw Hao Yan Che's raised arm, she protected her head and ran to the bathroom. He took out the first aid kit from a drawer and waited for her on the pink bed.

Yuan Gun Gun brushed, showered and changed clothes. She ran out of the bathroom before drying her hair to see if Hao Yan Che was still in her bedroom.

She was relieved to see he didn't leave.

'Go dry your hair,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun quickly dried her hair in front of the vanity table, and sat next to Hao Yan Che on the pink bed. He pushed her on the bed, grabbed the first aid kit and gently rubbed cream on her swollen left cheek.

'Ow...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che packed the first aid kit, put it back in the drawer and stood to leave. Yuan Gun Gun held onto his shirt.

'Young master, where are you going?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che turned around and he looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

'Young master, I'm sorry... I shouldn't have falsely accused you,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I misunderstood you, because of what you said...'

'Let go of my shirt,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say or do.

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun's hand off his shirt.

'In the future, you're only responsible for cooking three meals a day,' Hao Yan Che said. 'The rest of the time is your free time.'

'Are you saying in the future I don't need to be with you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked softly.

'Don't misunderstand,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You'll always be just a maid. You don't have the right to be with me.'

Yuan Gun Gun's hand pressed against her chest, and she watched Hao Yan Che leave. She should be happy she didn't have to follow Hao Yan Che around all day and endure his mood swings. Her heart wouldn't listen, it felt like someone stabbed a needle through her heart.

Hao Yan Che walked to the study room, and poured a glass of red wine. He drank the red wine, and it past down his hollow heart. He didn't want to have a weakness. He couldn't keep letting Yuan Gun Gun make him worry about her if he didn't see her, keep treating her like she was someone special and keep

wanting to be with her.

Hao Yan Che smashed the glass of wine onto the floor, and covered his eyes. Why did he feel frustrated whenever he didn't see her?

'Little Chub, why are you hateful?' Hao Yan Che asked himself.

Outside, Yuan Gun Gun sat in the garden and absent-mindedly stroked her small friends' little bodies.

'Gun Gun,' Qiang Jia Tao called. She shook Yuan Gun Gun's shoulders. 'Gun Gun.'

'Oh, big sister Jia Tao,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Fifty

Related

Chapter Fifty-One



Qiang Jia Tao sat next to Yuan Gun Gun on the grass.

‘What’s wrong?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked. ‘Are you disappointed to see me?’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Dummy, I’m only joking,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

Qiang Jia Tao rubbed Xiao Yuan’s head.

‘Why are you here?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked. ‘Did young master give you free time?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I only need to cook three meals a day. The rest of the time is my free time.’

‘Gun Gun, do you like young master?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiang Jia Tao didn’t expect Yuan Gun Gun to be so honest.

‘What do you like about young master?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked.

‘He’s temperamental but I don’t hate him,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If I’m unhappy, I want to see him. I like his body scent, I like his fingers and I like the warm way he holds me. I don’t have enough fingers to list all the things I like about him.’

‘If you like him, it’s a problem,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because it’s a pity young master hates you,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

Yuan Gun Gun felt numb, Hao Yan Che hated her.

‘Gun Gun, you’re the young mistress of the Yuan Household,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Do you know why you’re here?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My daddy wants me to learn how to take care of myself and take care of other people.’

‘Do you know why you’re here and not at another home?’ Qiang Jia Tao asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qiang Jia Tao plucked grass from the ground.

‘Because your dad and young master’s father made a promise with each other,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Young master doesn’t want you here, his father forced him to let you stay here. Since young master was a boy, he hates being forced to do things. In young master’s eyes, you’re an eyesore.’

Yuan Gun Gun was given another shock, she was an eyesore at the Hao Mansion.

‘Gun Gun, don’t feel hurt by the truth,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘Now that you know the truth, it’s best for you and young master if you keep your distance from young master.’

Yuan Gun Gun blinked back tears, Hao Yan Che hated her and saw her as an eyesore.

‘Don’t cry,’ Qiang Jia Tao said. ‘I know you like young master. But he hates you. I’m worried you’ll be hurt if you follow young master around all day...’

‘Big sister Jia Tao, don’t worry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I won’t follow him around all day. Thank you for telling me the truth.’

‘Of course I would worry about a little sister like you,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

‘Big sister Jia Tao, I want to go back to my room,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um, go inside,’ Qiang Jia Tao said.

‘Bye,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s small friends followed Yuan Gun Gun inside, and Qiang Jia Tao plucked more grass from the ground.

In the evening, Yuan Gun Gun cooked dinner and brought it to the dining table

like usual. Except she didn't call Hao Yan Che to eat dinner, and walked straight to her room.

A moment later, Hao Yan Che walked to the dining table and gracefully ate dinner. Mrs Chen and the other servants felt the atmosphere was strained like the old days before Yuan Gun Gun arrived at the Hao Mansion.

Seven days past, Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun avoided seeing each other for seven days.

The morning after the seventh day, Yuan Gun Gun knocked on the study room door and bowed in front of Hao Yan Che.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said without looking up from the work papers on the desk.

'Young master, I wanted to inform you that tomorrow is the start of my new school term,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I won't be back in time to cook lunch. Young master, is this acceptable?'

'I know,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Thank you young master,' Yuan Gun Gun said, bowed and left.

Hao Yan Che pushed the work papers off the desk, stood, kicked down the door and walked to the garage.

'You need to replace another door,' Jia Tu said.

'I just replaced the last door yesterday,' Yi Tu said. 'How many doors need to be sacrificed before they reconcile?'

End of Chapter Fifty-One

Related

Chapter Fifty-Two



At seven in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up, dressed and prepared to wake up Hao Yan Che. Then she remembered she didn't need to wake up Hao Yan Che anymore. She changed out of her uniform into a pink dress, and cooked breakfast.

At half past seven in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun walked outside to go to school. She was happily surprised to see Na Liu Ting Du waiting for her in front of a Lincoln.

'Big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted and kissed Na Liu Ting Du's cheek.

Na Liu Ting Du lifted Yuan Gun Gun into his arms, and kissed her cheek too.

'My Gun Gun is a lot lighter,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Big brother Du, you're only saying that to make me feel better,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's the truth,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Big brother Du is the best,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du opened the passenger door, Yuan Gun Gun sat in the back seat and he sat next to her.

'Hello uncle Zheng,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

'Hello young mistress,' Mr Zheng said. 'You're prettier by the day.'

'Uncle Zheng is more handsome by the day,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Uncle Zheng, you can drive now,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du hugged Yuan Gun Gun and Mr Zheng drove to her school.

No one in the Lincoln noticed Hao Yan Che standing in front of his bedroom

window or how his violet eyes changed color.

In the Lincoln, Na Liu Ting Du opened a meal box.

‘Gun Gun, what’s wrong?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Big brother Du, do you hate me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Um, you’re hateful,’ Na Liu Ting Du teased.

Yuan Gun Gun looked down and didn’t say anything.

Na Liu Ting Du held Yuan Gun Gun’s soft face and smiled at her.

‘Of course my Gun Gun is loveable,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I can look at your face forever.’

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘What’s wrong?’

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du put the meal box to the side, and he patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Don’t cry,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Did someone bully you?’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, when did you learn to lie to me?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Big brother Du, if I’m not daddy and mummy’s daughter, would you still love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Why are you asking this out of the blue?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘Did someone say something hurtful to you?’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, don’t you need me anymore?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Of course I need big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then answer my question,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I don’t know how to explain it,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘There is someone who hates me and thinks I’m an eyesore.’

‘Hao Yan Che?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you sad because he hates you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Big brother Du, wouldn’t you be sad if someone hates you and thinks you’re an eyesore?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Dummy,’ Na Liu Ting Du said affectionately. ‘Don’t cry. Eat your breakfast.’

‘Rice balls?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s nose.

‘Mum made it especially for you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Are you happy?’

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, smiled and two dimples appeared on her cheeks.

Na Liu Ting Du put gloves on Yuan Gun Gun and his hands.

‘You’ll spoil the rice balls if you cry on them,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Hurry and eat them.’

Watching Yuan Gun Gun heartily eat the rice balls put Na Liu Ting Du in a good mood.

‘Gun Gun, it doesn’t matter what other people say,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Dad, mum and I will always love you. In our hearts you’re our little princess.’

Yuan Gun Gun choked on the rice balls from happiness. Na Liu Ting Du took off his gloves and rubbed her head.

End of Chapter Fifty-Two

Related

Chapter Fifty-Three



For a month, Yuan Gun Gun lived like her old days in the Yuan Mansion. In the mornings she woke up, cooked breakfast and Na Liu Ting Du took her to school. In the evenings she returned to the Hao Mansion, cooked dinner, set the dining table and walked straight to her bedroom.

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun avoided seeing each other that whole month.

Yuan Gun Gun was in her final year of high school at a prestigious private high school. Only the students from the richest families and the smartest poor students were admitted into the school. All students were guaranteed to be accepted into college. There were three social groups at the school. The first were poor students, the second were students from average households and the third were rich students.

Yuan Gun Gun was a rich student. But she had a handicap, her handsome adopted brother, Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Gun Gun, are you sure you gave your big brother the love letters?’ the tall girl asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She packed her books into her bag. ‘I gave all our classmates’ love letters to big brother Du.’

‘Good,’ the tall girl said. ‘Do you have to go now?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I need to go home after school.’

A group of beautiful female students surrounded Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Let’s go to the bathroom first then we can all go home together,’ the group leader said.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and followed the leader.

Five girls walked behind Yuan Gun Gun to the bathroom.

In the bathroom the leader pushed Yuan Gun Gun's head against a wall.

'Ah...' Yuan Gun Gun cried out and felt dizzy.

'Gun Gun, tell the truth,' the short hair girl said. 'Did you give the love letters to your big brother or not?'

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

The leader slapped Yuan Gun Gun's face hard. Yuan Gun Gun held her swollen face.

'You're lying,' a half-cast girl said. 'If you gave your big brother the love letters, why hasn't he replied to us?'

'I don't know,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't understand how such beautiful girls could be so vicious.

'Of course you know,' the leader said. 'You love your big brother so you hid the love letters from him. We've seen you kiss your big brother.'

'Big brother Du is my big brother,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Of course I love my big brother. I only kiss big brother Du's face.'

'Stop acting innocent,' the leader said. 'Look at your face and your body. Stop dreaming. You should go kill yourself.'

The group of girls threw buckets of water onto Yuan Gun Gun's body. Then they hit and scratched Yuan Gun Gun's face. Yuan Gun Gun wasn't smart but she respected herself. She didn't let herself cry in front of the vicious girls.

In that moment, a doll like girl walked into the bathroom.

'You hateful bitches, if you're going to gang up on a defenceless person then at least remember to lock the door,' Qiu Li Li said sarcastically. 'Indeed all the bad deeds happen in the bathroom after school.'

An attractive sassy girl walked into the bathroom after Qiu Li Li.

'Is there a problem here?' Luo Qing Qing asked.

End of Chapter Fifty-Three

Related

Chapter Fifty-Four



‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said to Luo Qing Qing.

‘Luo Qing Qing, mind your own business,’ the leader said.

‘My darling Li Li, does it look like these bitches are insulting our intelligence?’ Luo Qing asked.

‘Yes my darling Luo Qing,’ Qiu Li Li said and smiled coldly at the group of girls surrounding Yuan Gun Gun.

Luo Qing Qing looked at the leader up and down.

‘Li Li, I heard makeup enhances a person’s looks,’ Luo Qing Qing said. ‘But why does makeup on this girl works the opposite way?’

‘You!’ the leader said.

‘Your face is falling,’ Qiu Li Li said. ‘Your family can save money on flour.’

‘Qiu Li Li, watch your mouth,’ the leader said.

‘Don’t you like people praising you?’ Qiu Li Li asked sarcastically.

‘Don’t think just because you two are famous, you can insult other people,’ the leader said.

‘Insult people?’ Luo Qing Qing asked. ‘Which one of your ears heard us insult people?’

‘F’k you,’ the half cast girl said. She flipped a bird at Luo Qing Qing and Qiu Li Li. ‘Don’t think we’re scared of you two. We can take you two down in a fight.’

Luo Qing Qing laughed coldly and clapped her hands.

Another female student, Su Chuan Chuan walked into the bathroom and behind her were another group of female students.

Qiu Li Li ran to Su Chuan Chuan's side and acted scared.

'Chuan Chuan, these girls want to hit me and Qing Qing,' Qiu Li Li said.

Su Chuan Chuan held Qiu Li Li back, and Luo Qing Qing helped Yuan Gun Gun walk to Su Chuan Chuan's side.

The girls behind Su Chuan took out their weapons to defend against vicious girls.

'What do you girls want?' the half-cast girl asked. 'To attack your own classmates?'

'Unlike you girls, we're honorable fighters,' Luo Qing Qing said. 'We fight one on one. Who wants to fight first?'

The half-cast girl closed her mouth.

'No one?' Luo Qing Qing asked. 'I'll be generous, I'll only counteract your attacks.'

Luo Qing Qing didn't wait for a reply. For ten minutes, pitiful cries of pain from the vicious girls' mouths echoed in the bathroom. Luo Qing Qing ended the fight by throwing buckets of cold water over the vicious girls.

'I hope getting a taste of your own medicine will wake up your brains up,' Luo Qing Qing said.

Luo Qing Qing turned around and smiled at her friends.

'My darling friends, let's go eat ice-cream,' Luo Qing Qing said.

'Luo Qing Qing, we'll report you,' the leader said.

'Go ahead if you girls don't want to move your arms and legs again and want to offend the captain,' Luo Qing Qing said.

Luo Qing Qing supported Yuan Gun Gun outside the bathroom, and Su Chuan Chuan followed the captain Qiu Li Li.

Outside the bathroom, Yuan Gun Gun smiled weakly at the girls who saved her.

'Thank you for saving me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you Yuan Gun Gun?’ Luo Qing Qing asked. ‘Look at how weak you are. Of course we need to protect people who are weaker than us. Where do you live? We’ll take you home.’

‘Thank you...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Luo Qing Qing, and cried the tears she held back in the bathroom.

Luo Qing Qing patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Luo Qing Qing said. ‘You’re safe now.’

‘It hurts everywhere,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Na Liu Ting Du wanted to kill the person who hit Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Na Liu Ting Du ran to Yuan Gun Gun, and pulled her out of Luo Qing Qing’s arms.

‘Who did this to you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘A group of girls hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Qing Qing and her friends saved me.’

‘Who hit you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

End of Chapter Fifty-Four

Related

Chapter Fifty-Six



Na Liu Ting Du squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's waist.

'There is nothing wrong with having meat on your body,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You're not allowed to diet.'

'It hurts...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Where does it hurt?' Na Liu Ting Du asked and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's waist.

Yuan Gun Gun ate another chocolate.

'Gun Gun, do you like big brother Du?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you like Hao Yan Che?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't answer. Na Liu Ting Du turned her face around and looked into her eyes. He was sad to see the truth.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun denied. 'Big brother Du it's nine. I have to go home.'

'Home?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'Do you see the Hao Mansion as your home?'

Na Liu Ting Du rubbed cream onto the bruises on Yuan Gun Gun's face.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say. She followed Na Liu Ting Du to the bathroom and watched him wash his hands. She didn't know how provocative she looked in his shirt, and how her exposed legs affected him.

'Big brother Du, I'm hungry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What do you want to eat?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'I'll ask someone to deliver food for you.'

'Big brother Du, can I cook for you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du showed Yuan Gun Gun the kitchen.

‘Gun Gun, be careful,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Don’t hurt yourself. I’m going to shower.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

At midnight, Na Liu Ting Du drove Yuan Gun Gun back to the Hao Mansion.

‘Gun Gun, remember to rub cream on your bruises every day,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I’ll remember,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Du, don’t forget to call my school and ask permission for me to take sick leave.’

‘I will,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘I’m going inside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and kissed Na Liu Ting Du’s cheek.

‘Go inside,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek.

Na Liu Ting Du held the cheek Yuan Gun Gun kissed and smiled while he watched her walk into the Hao Mansion.

When Yuan Gun Gun walked into the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen and a group of servants were waiting anxiously for her.

‘Gun Gun’s home!’ Chen Jia Wen said happily.

‘Gun Gun, what happened?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Who injured you?’

Yuan Gun Gun smiled awkwardly and covered her face.

‘How can you smile at a time like this?’ Mrs Chen asked. She held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and her heart ached to see the bruises on Yuan Gun Gun’s face. ‘Young master is really angry.’

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Is he angry at me?’

‘Who else can make young master angry?’ Chen Jia Wen asked.

‘Gun Gun, change your clothes before you see young master,’ Mrs Chen advised.

Mrs Chen was worried what Hao Yan Che would do if he saw Yuan Gun Gun wear another man’s shirt.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Mrs Chen and Yuan Gun Gun turned around. It was too late, Hao Yan Che was standing upstairs.

‘Hello young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted and bowed.

Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color the moment he saw the bruises and another man’s shirt on Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

Yuan Gun Gun took steps back. She knew if Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color, it meant he was seriously angry.

‘Young master... I didn’t mean to come home this late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What time is it?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Past midnight,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Come upstairs,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun followed Hao Yan Che to the study room, and the servants prayed for Yuan Gun Gun’s life.

Minutes later, in the study room, Yuan Gun Gun fiddled her fingers anxiously.

‘Do you know about the curfew here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. He sipped a glass of red wine. ‘Then you know about the consequence of breaking curfew.’

End of Chapter Fifty-Six

Related

Chapter Fifty-Six



Na Liu Ting Du squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's waist.

'There is nothing wrong with having meat on your body,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You're not allowed to diet.'

'It hurts...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Where does it hurt?' Na Liu Ting Du asked and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's waist.

Yuan Gun Gun ate another chocolate.

'Gun Gun, do you like big brother Du?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you like Hao Yan Che?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't answer. Na Liu Ting Du turned her face around and looked into her eyes. He was sad to see the truth.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun denied. 'Big brother Du it's nine. I have to go home.'

'Home?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'Do you see the Hao Mansion as your home?'

Na Liu Ting Du rubbed cream onto the bruises on Yuan Gun Gun's face.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say. She followed Na Liu Ting Du to the bathroom and watched him wash his hands. She didn't know how provocative she looked in his shirt, and how her exposed legs affected him.

'Big brother Du, I'm hungry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What do you want to eat?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'I'll ask someone to deliver food for you.'

'Big brother Du, can I cook for you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du showed Yuan Gun Gun the kitchen.

‘Gun Gun, be careful,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Don’t hurt yourself. I’m going to shower.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

At midnight, Na Liu Ting Du drove Yuan Gun Gun back to the Hao Mansion.

‘Gun Gun, remember to rub cream on your bruises every day,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I’ll remember,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Du, don’t forget to call my school and ask permission for me to take sick leave.’

‘I will,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘I’m going inside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and kissed Na Liu Ting Du’s cheek.

‘Go inside,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek.

Na Liu Ting Du held the cheek Yuan Gun Gun kissed and smiled while he watched her walk into the Hao Mansion.

When Yuan Gun Gun walked into the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen and a group of servants were waiting anxiously for her.

‘Gun Gun’s home!’ Chen Jia Wen said happily.

‘Gun Gun, what happened?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Who injured you?’

Yuan Gun Gun smiled awkwardly and covered her face.

‘How can you smile at a time like this?’ Mrs Chen asked. She held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and her heart ached to see the bruises on Yuan Gun Gun’s face. ‘Young master is really angry.’

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Is he angry at me?’

‘Who else can make young master angry?’ Chen Jia Wen asked.

‘Gun Gun, change your clothes before you see young master,’ Mrs Chen advised.

Mrs Chen was worried what Hao Yan Che would do if he saw Yuan Gun Gun wear another man’s shirt.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Mrs Chen and Yuan Gun Gun turned around. It was too late, Hao Yan Che was standing upstairs.

‘Hello young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted and bowed.

Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color the moment he saw the bruises and another man’s shirt on Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

Yuan Gun Gun took steps back. She knew if Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color, it meant he was seriously angry.

‘Young master... I didn’t mean to come home this late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What time is it?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Past midnight,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Come upstairs,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun followed Hao Yan Che to the study room, and the servants prayed for Yuan Gun Gun’s life.

Minutes later, in the study room, Yuan Gun Gun fiddled her fingers anxiously.

‘Do you know about the curfew here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. He sipped a glass of red wine. ‘Then you know about the consequence of breaking curfew.’

End of Chapter Fifty-Six

Related

Chapter Fifty-Seven



‘Are you going to hit me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Are you different to other people who break the rules here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m sorry I’m home late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But something happened, which is why I’m home late.’

‘What happened to you is your business,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You breaking the rules is my business.’

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re young master. You don’t need to listen to reason before punishing someone.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s chin.

‘You don’t agree with the rules?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I didn’t mean to come home late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s chin. He held back his anger because home came out of her mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her sore chin. Suddenly Hao Yan Che pulled her to the bedroom, and pushed her onto the bed.

‘What... are you doing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che ripped Na Liu Ting Du’s shirt to pieces. Yuan Gun Gun sat in a fetal position to cover her body.

‘Who hit you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che threw a bedsheet at Yuan Gun Gun’s feet, and she quickly wrapped it around her body.

‘Tell me who hit you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘My classmates,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You deserve it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun regretted she couldn’t walk through walls.

‘In the future if you wear another man’s clothes home then I’ll kill you in an ugly way,’ Hao Yan Che warned.

Hao Yan Che kicked the door down, and he walked out of the bedroom. Yuan Gun Gun looked at the shirt pieces on the floor, wiped sweat off her forehead and felt grateful he didn’t hit her.

Hao Yan Che exercised, took a bath and laid in his bed. He thought about Yuan Gun Gun’s sweet smile, her scared face, her sleepy face, the bruises on her body and her wearing another man’s shirt. He punched a wall. Didn’t she know how to take the initiative to makeup with him? Why didn’t she come wake him up? Why didn’t she look for him?

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and he stared at his phone for a long time. He thought about breaking the phone, but in the end he picked it up and called Jia Tu.

‘Young master?’ Jia Tu asked.

‘Um, find out who hit Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu said.

Hao Yan Che hung up and threw the phone on the floor. Then he quietly walked to the pink bedroom to check that his rice ball was sleeping on the pink bed.

The next day, the servants gossiped about how their young master punished their future young mistress. The maids who helped clean Yuan Gun Gun’s bedroom saw the sacrificed shirt on the floor, and Yuan Gun Gun naked on the pink bed. The maids were shocked their young master would punish Yuan Gun Gun in that way when Yuan Gun Gun was injured. So most of the servants cooked nutritious food to nourish Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

During the period Yuan Gun Gun took leave from school, she was responsible

for cooking three meals a day again. The servants advised Yuan Gun Gun not to bow to Hao Yan Che, and to watch Hao Yan Che eat instead of running to her bedroom. But Yuan Gun Gun refused.

One early morning, a person snuck into the kitchen, turned on the gas stove, walked outside the kitchen and closed the kitchen door.

At eight in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun fed her small friends and Xiao Yuan followed her to the kitchen.

End of Chapter Fifty-Seven

Related

Chapter Fifty-Eight



Yuan Gun Gun thought it was strange the kitchen door was closed.

Xiao Yuan sniffed the closed kitchen door then Xiao Yuan bit its mistress dress and pulled its mistress dress away from the door.

Yuan Gun Gun squatted and she rubbed Xiao Yuan's head.

'Xiao Yuan, be good and tonight I'll cook a delicious dinner for you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Suddenly a loud explosion was heard from the kitchen, and everyone in the Hao Mansion woke up.

Mrs Chen was the first to run to the kitchen. The kitchen was on fire. She panicked when she saw two bodies lying outside the kitchen door. A little boy was protecting Yuan Gun Gun's body, but she didn't recognise the little boy.

Hao Yan Che ran to the kitchen, and he felt like the blood in his body was drained out the moment he saw Yuan Gun Gun lying in front of the burning kitchen. He pushed the little boy off Yuan Gun Gun's body, and he hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Che called. 'Gun Gun, talk to me.'

'Young master, take Gun Gun to the hospital,' Mrs Chen said. 'I'll take care of the fire.'

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun, and Jia Tu carried the little boy to the car.

Yi Tu noticed Qiang Jia Tao crying in a corner. He slapped her face and blood dripped out the corner of her mouth.

'You're going to die a painful death,' Yi Tu said.

Qiang Jia Tao silently wiped blood off her mouth.

At the hospital, Hao Yan Che sat outside the operating room. It was the first time in his life he felt like his body was cut into pieces. He knew his body would break down if he lost Yuan Gun Gun.

The operating room door opened, a doctor pushed Yuan Gun Gun's stretcher outside. Hao Yan Che leapt to Yuan Gun Gun's side, and he held her hand. Hao Yan Che looked at the doctor to say if anything happened to Yuan Gun Gun, he would bury the doctor with Yuan Gun Gun.

'The patient is stable... but unconscious,' the doctor stammered.

'When will she wake up?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Perhaps tonight or tomorrow morning, the doctor said.

'If she doesn't wake up tomorrow morning, I'll kill you,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to a VIP hospital room.

Yuan Gun Gun wasn't injured, another person was injured. In another VIP room, the little boy woke up with fifteen stitches on his head.

'I knew my head would be shaved,' the little boy said.

'How else are the doctors going to stitch up your head?' Yi Tu asked.

'Where's my Gun Gun?' the little boy asked. 'Is she OK?'

'Your Gun Gun?' Yi Tu asked. 'Don't let a certain someone hear you say that.'

'She's OK and she's staying in the room next to your room,' Jia Tu said. 'Young master is taking care of her.'

'Can I visit big sister?' the little boy asked.

'Um, after you change back,' Jia Tu said.

Seconds later, Yi Tu, Jia Tu and a dog with a shaved head walked toward Yuan Gun Gun's hospital room.

In Yuan Gun Gun's hospital room, Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair. He laughed at his foolish self. She had his heart yet he didn't want to admit it.

'Gun Gun, you belong with me,' Hao Yan Che whispered. 'Three years later, I'll give up my freedom to be with you.'

Hao Yan Che heard a knock on the door, but he didn't take his eyes off Yuan Gun Gun.

'Come in,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu, Jia Tu and Xiao Yuan walked into the room. Xiao Yuan wanted to jump onto the bed, Hao Yan Che's deadly gaze made Xiao Yuan obediently sit on the floor. Xiao Yuan barked softly like Xiao Yuan was begging Hao Yan Che to let Xiao Yuan lie next to Yuan Gun Gun on the bed.

Hao Yan Che ignored Xiao Yuan, and kept stroking Yuan Gun Gun's hair.

'Young master, I deserve to be punished,' Yi Tu said. 'This time I'm partly responsible for endangering Gun Gun's life.'

Hao Yan Che silently looked at Yi Tu.

'Also, I hid something from young master about the swimming pool incident,' Yi Tu confessed. 'I knew who the culprit was. But I wanted that person to help bring young master and Gun Gun together. I didn't think this would happen...'

A second later, Hao Yan Che kicked Yi Tu onto the floor. Even Xiao Yuan didn't anticipate Hao Yan Che's movements.

Yi Tu stayed on the floor and wiped blood off his face.

'Young master...' Jia Tu said.

'Yi Tu, you're still alive but it doesn't mean you won't suffer,' Hao Yan Che said coldly. 'When did you start thinking you can scheme against me?'

End of Chapter Fifty-Eight

Related

Chapter Fifty-Nine



‘I only hope that young master will be happy like master,’ Yi Tu said.

‘If you knew, why didn’t you protect her life?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, it’s my fault,’ Yi Tu said. He closed his eyes. ‘I deserve to be punished.’

Luckily for Yi Tu, Yuan Gun Gun chose that moment to wake up. Hao Yan Che ran to the bed, and stroked her face.

‘Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

‘Don’t be noisy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Usually Hao Yan Che would knock Yuan Gun Gun’s head, but he resisted. He turned around and glared at Yi Tu.

‘Yi Tu, you know what you should do,’ Hao Yan Che said coldly. ‘There won’t be a next time.’

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Jia Tu pulled Yi Tu up from the floor, and he helped Yi Tu walk outside the room.

Xiao Yuan looked at its mistress lying on the bed then Xiao Yuan looked outside the door. Xiao Yuan debated whether to go or not to go. Hao Yan Che’s glare helped Xiao Yuan’s brain decide, to go was the right answer and Xiao Yuan ran after Jia Tu and Yi Tu.

Hao Yan Che closed the door, and he laid in bed face to face with Yuan Gun Gun. She hugged his waist to sleep and he stroked her hair. When he heard her sleeping, he kissed her lips.

At eleven at night, Yuan Gun Gun woke up again. She felt like someone had beaten up her whole body.

‘You’re awake,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought she was dreaming. She poked Hao Yan Che’s hard chest.

‘Are you taking advantage of me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun retrieved her hand, and Hao Yan Che frowned.

‘Young master, is it you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Who did you want to see?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face. She didn’t want Hao Yan Che to hate seeing her, and she wanted to move away from him. But he held her waist tightly.

‘Where do you want to go?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun avoided looking at Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘Are you deaf?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Did I do something wrong?’

Hao Yan Che tucked Yuan Gun Gun’s hair behind her ears.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I remembered I heard a loud explosion...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um, the gas stove exploded,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun vaguely remembered the fire.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun tighter.

‘You’re safe,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s teary eyes.

‘Let me go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I know your father is forcing you to let me stay in your home. I’ll talk to my daddy, and I’ll ask my daddy to let me learn how to take care of myself at another person’s home. It’s the best solution for everyone.’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, her back faced Hao Yan Che and she cried softly. He turned her around to face him again.

‘Crying is useless,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why won’t you let me go home if you hate me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Does it make you happy to bully me?’

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face. Hao Yan Che pulled her hands away from her face. He rolled her over, laid on top of her and kissed her lips. He slipped his tongue into her mouth before she decided whether to push him away or hold onto him. He held her hands above her head, and he didn’t let her escape his kiss.

Later, Hao Yan Che released Yuan Gun Gun’s lips to let her breathe. He stroked her rosy cheeks, and licked her lips.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, you’re mine,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Fifty-Nine

Related

Chapter Sixty



Hao Yan Che poked Yuan Gun Gun's embarrassed face.

'Do you know why I want to kiss you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Because I took advantage of you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Wrong,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Because you're mine. I can kiss you whenever I want to.'

Hao Yan Che slowly kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips.

'I don't hate you,' Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun's ear.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che's usual cold face, she didn't believe him.

'Why are you looking at me like that?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

'Tell me,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Why are you lying?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Why do you curse me and hit me if you don't hate me?'

'I'm lying?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't answer, and Hao Yan Che took a deep breath.

'You're smart and right,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I hate you. It's not an ordinary hate. What can you do if I curse you, hit you and bully you?'

Yuan Gun Gun's eyes reddened. Hao Yan Che bit her ear hard.

'Ow...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun's angry eyes.

'Do you want to say something?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

‘Do you have nothing to say?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s other ear. He was in a good mood to see her resisting to curse him.

‘Whether you have an opinion or not, it doesn’t matter,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Because you’re mine. You can only accept me bullying you. Your body is mine.’ He put his hand over Yuan Gun Gun’s heart. ‘And this place is mine too. Understand?’

Yuan Gun Gun’s big eyes looked at Hao Yan Che like she didn’t believe him.

‘Don’t you understand?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che bit the left side of Yuan Gun Gun’s face, and left teeth marks.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face and cried.

‘Do you understand or don’t understand?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘I understand,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che smiled, and he bit Yuan Gun Gun’s right cheek so that she would have two matching teeth marks on her right cheek and left cheek.

Yuan Gun Gun held her bitten cheeks.

‘Don’t be noisy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her mouth, and cried softer. Hao Yan Che looked at his two teeth marks on her loveable cheeks and laughed. While she thought he truly hated her, and couldn’t stop crying. He rubbed her cheeks.

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips so she wouldn’t make a noise. Hao Yan Che laughed after he heard her make another noise, her stomach rumbled.

‘Are you hungry?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head. Hao Yan Che sat up, and held her on his lap.

‘If you want to eat, speak,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s face, kissed her breathless and made her stomach rumbled again.

‘It looks like saliva can’t make you full,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Hao Yan Che ordered food to be delivered to the hospital room. Yuan Gun Gun laid on his chest and waited for food delivery. She believed one thing he said, saliva didn’t make her full.

End of Chapter Sixty

Related

Chapter Sixty-One



‘Where does it hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun stole a glance at Hao Yan Che.

‘It hurts everywhere like someone hit my whole body,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did you look at me like I was the person who hit you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun denied.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s rosy face.

‘Young master, where are we?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che tickled Yuan Gun Gun’s soft stomach and waist.

‘Hospital,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It tickles... hehe...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wiggled her bottom to avoid being tickled. She didn’t know it made Hao Yan Che’s body tickle in a different way. Hao Yan Che patted her provocative bottom.

‘Don’t move,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che noticed how Yuan Gun Gun’s body tensed when his hands touched her bottom. He smiled at her blushing face. She sat rigid while he caressed her bottom. When her ears turned red, he pinched her bottom and she gasped.

‘Young master, you shouldn’t...’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Why can’t I?’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun was embarrassed to say why. Hao Yan Che thought her shyness was adorable. He kissed her lips, because he loved seeing her rosy complexion

turn red.

Yuan Gun Gun's bottom jumped after she heard a knock on the door. She wanted to get off Hao Yan Che's lap. He felt her bottom move, and gripped her waist.

'Come in,' Hao Yan Che said coldly.

Hao Yan Che was displeased his private time with Yuan Gun Gun was interrupted.

Jia Tu pushed a trolley of food into the hospital room.

'Young master,' Jia Tu greeted.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Big brother Jia Tu,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted and waved her hand.

Jia Tu smiled at Yuan Gun Gun, and pushed the trolley to the dining table.

'Go outside,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Yes young master,' Jia Tu said.

Jia Tu walked outside the room, and closed the door. Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the dining table, he sat on a chair and she sat on his lap. Hao Yan Che set the food on the dining table, and he regretted wasting time not having her by his side.

Yuan Gun Gun felt Hao Yan Che was looking at her strangely. The moment he held a spoonful of food to her mouth, she forgot about the strange way he looked at her and happily ate.

'Tastes delicious,' Yuan Gun Gun praised.

Hao Yan Che silently fed Yuan Gun Gun. He was happy she liked eating the food he ordered.

'Young master, why aren't you eating?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'It's really delicious.'

'I'm waiting for you to taste every dish before I eat,' Hao Yan Che said and stuffed another spoonful of food into Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I want to see if there is poison in the food,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun stopped chewing. She was scared she was poisoned.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Are you poisoned?’

Yuan Gun Gun swallowed the food in her mouth, and licked her lips. Hao Yan Che smiled at her, and tasted the food.

‘It tastes better than your cooking,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held another spoonful of food in front of Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth, she hesitated and ate.

‘Young master, I’m full,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach, and passed her the spoon.

‘Feed me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun fed Hao Yan Che, and watched him eat.

‘Young master, did I cause the gas explosion?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Was anyone injured?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Young master do you feel sick?’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che felt happy to see Yuan Gun Gun worried about him.

‘If you’re not sick, why are you at the hospital?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You don’t need to worry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was right, Yuan Gun Gun was a dummy. Why would he be at the hospital if she wasn’t staying at the hospital?

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun ate in a comfortable silence until she remembered who followed her to the kitchen.

‘Xiao Yuan!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Where’s Xiao Yuan?’

End of Chapter Sixty-One

Related

Chapter Sixty-Two



‘Dead,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun dropped the spoon on the ground.

‘Dead...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’ll be strange if it is dead,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che picked up a clean spoon and fed himself.

‘How can you joke like this?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun cried and was too angry to sit on Hao Yan Che’s lap.

‘Sit still,’ Hao Yan Che said. He slammed the spoon on the table. ‘Be quiet.’

Hao Yan Che hated Yuan Gun Gun crying because of another person. He was the only person in the world who was allowed to make her cry.

‘You’re in the wrong... you shouldn’t raise your voice,’ Yuan Gun Gun protested.

‘What are you going to do?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t pinch.’

‘Kiss me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips, and kissed Hao Yan Che’s cheek. He wasn’t satisfied, and pointed at his lips. She shook her head.

‘Kiss me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

The closer Yuan Gun Gun’s lips inched toward Hao Yan Che’s lips, the louder her heart pounded. When their lips were about to touch, she thought his violet

eyes extraordinarily beautiful.

‘Young master... you’re really beautiful,’ Yuan Gun Gun whispered.

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che dropped Yuan Gun Gun on the bed, and he walked to the bathroom.

After Hao Yan Che showered, he got into bed and hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

‘You won’t be going to school anymore,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and protected her head.

‘No reason,’ Hao Yan Che said and played with Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘Will my daddy agree?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You don’t need to worry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Big brother Due... ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘You’re not allowed to mention him,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She held onto Hao Yan Che’s shirt. ‘Don’t pull.’

Hao Yan Che scoffed, and Yuan Gun Gun let him play with her hair to appease him.

‘Thank you young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You don’t need to thank me for bullying you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘That is not why I’m thankful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She rubbed the scratches on her arms. ‘After the bathroom incident at school, I don’t want to go to school anymore.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun close to his chest, and he pulled the bedsheet over their bodies.

‘Young master, are you sleeping with me tonight?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Be quiet and sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun slept soundly on Hao Yan Che's chest. She didn't see him smiling while watching her sleep.

Early in the morning, Hao Yan Che drove Yuan Gun Gun back to the Hao Mansion and carried her to the bedroom.

When Yuan Gun Gun woke up, she didn't see Hao Yan Che lying next to her. She looked at the pink walls and wondered how she got home. She looked at the clock on the wall, it was time for her to cook breakfast. She got out of bed, washed, dressed and opened the door. Her small friends were waiting outside the door for her.

'Xiao Yuan, why is your head shaved?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Xiao Yuan barked pitifully. Yuan Gun Gun picked up Xiao Yuan and carried Xiao Yuan to the study room.

End of Chapter Sixty-Two

Related

Chapter Sixty-Three



In the study room, Jia Tu reported to Hao Yan Che.

‘Where’s the person who harmed Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘She’s gone,’ Jia Tu said.

‘Gone?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Jia Tu said. ‘Young master, I deserve to be punished.’

‘Jia Tu, you and Yi Tu don’t age but you two are becoming useless,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Jia Tu was saved by Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun barged into the room, and ran to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, look at Xiao Yuan,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Xiao Yuan is molting. Do you think Xiao Yuan is sick?’

‘Don’t you need to knock?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and carried Xiao Yuan back to the door.

‘Stop,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Where are you going?’

‘To knock on the door,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che took a deep breath.

‘Let go of it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun put Xiao Yuan on the floor, and fiddled her fingers anxiously.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun protected her head, and walked to Hao Yan Che.

‘Don’t hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap, and he pinched her bottom.

‘You shouldn’t... big brother Jia Tu is here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. She looked at Jia Tu, but she didn’t see Yi Tu standing next to Jia Tu. ‘Where’s big brother Yi Tu?’

‘None of your business,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Can’t I even ask one question?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked softly.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Ow... be gentle,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Jia Tu was grateful Yuan Gun Gun was in the room to diffuse Hao Yan Che’s anger.

‘Young master, Xiao Yuan...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Won’t die,’ Hao Yan Che said. He played with Yuan Gun Gun’s wet hair. ‘Why is your hair wet?’

‘I just showered,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She nuzzled Hao Yan Che’s neck. ‘Don’t I smell lovely?’

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

‘Go dry your hair,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was embarrassed Jia Tu saw Hao Yan Che nibbled her neck.

‘I need to go and cook,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You don’t need to cook,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Your cooking isn’t edible,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the floor. She didn’t know why she felt hurt to hear Hao Yan Che reject her cooking. Cooking was her only talent.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s chin.

‘In the future you’re not allowed to go into the kitchen,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to see Yuan Gun Gun look sad. He pulled her up, held

her hand and they walked to the door together.

‘Jia Tu, make sure you find it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu said.

Hao Yan Che dismissed Jia Tu, and took Yuan Gun Gun back to the bedroom. Hao Yan Che blowed dried her hair, and she looked dreamily at his long slender fingers. Hao Yan Che turned off the hair dryer, and knocked her head.

‘Brush your hair,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the hair brush and brushed her long hair.

‘Starting from tomorrow, someone will come here to home school you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Study what?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Learning to be a secretary,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Be a secretary?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No reason,’ Hao Yan Che said and played with Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘What happens after I finish my studies?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You work as a secretary,’ Hao Yan Che said exasperatedly.

Hao Yan Che’s suspicion was right, Yuan Gun Gun’s IQ was from the bottom spectrum.

‘Work as a secretary for who?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and pouted her lips, because Hao Yan Che looked down on her.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to answer another one Yuan Gun Gun’s endless dummy questions.

‘Your secretary?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If you ask another nonsense question, I’ll bite you and you can bleed to death,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What happens if I don’t pass my studies?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun protected her face and neck.

End of Chapter Sixty-Three

Related

Chapter Sixty-Four



‘Don’t let me hear your teacher report you’re a bad student,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If I do hear a bad report about your studies, you’ll suffer.’

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom, and she sat rigid on his lap.

‘Understand?’ Hao Yan Che asked and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

Yuan Gun Gun gulped and nodded her head. Hao Yan Che held her face, and kissed her irresistible lips. He let go of her when she stopped breathing.

‘What do you use your nose for?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Breathing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then why aren’t you using your nose to breathe?’ Hao Yan Che teased.

‘I forgot...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought it was impossible for her to remember to breathe whenever Hao Yan Che kissed her.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s face. She wasn’t an eloquent speaker, but he loved her being herself. Was it a symptom of love? He contemplated whether he would be charmed by another woman like her, and felt repulsed. The only woman he wanted to be intimate with was Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Young master... we shouldn’t do this together,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My mum told me...’

‘Who do you belong to?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Have you forgotten?’

Yuan Gun Gun remembered what happened at the hospital. She covered her face and ears.

‘I’m yours,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Between me and your mum, who can make decisions for you?’

‘Me... I mean young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che scoffed and looked around the pink bedroom.

‘Your room is messy,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Pack up your belongings.’

‘Are you saying I can go home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Do you want to see what happens if you mention going home again?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Then why do I need to pack?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You’re moving rooms,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘To where?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was attached to the pink bedroom, she didn’t want to move bedrooms.

‘Master bedroom,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Huh?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Master bedroom? But the master bedroom belongs to you.’

Hao Yan Che silently looked at the dummy in the pink bedroom.

‘Are you saying you want to swap rooms with me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che’s patience was running out.

‘Am I wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘We’re sharing a room together,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You and me... sharing a room together?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I don’t mind sharing a room with a dummy,’ Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Hurry up and pack,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Seconds later, Hao Yan Che got a headache watching Yuan Gun Gun make the pink bedroom messier.

‘Now I know why a dummy shouldn’t pack,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll ask someone to pack for you.’

Chen Jia Ting knocked on the door.

‘Come in,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, the meals are cooked,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Help Yuan Gun Gun pack her belongings. Then ask someone to help you move her belongings to the master bedroom.’

‘Yes young master,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

Chen Jia Ting bowed and smiled at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Let me pack,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘You’ll only make the room messier,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Let’s go.’

Chen Jia Ting happily watched Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che walk outside together. Unlike Yuan Gun Gun, Chen Jia Ting understood why Hao Yan Che wanted Yuan Gun Gun to move to the master bedroom.

In the dining room, Yuan Gun Gun looked sadly at the food on the dining table. She was going to be used as guinea pig to test if there was poison in the food again.

‘Everyone go outside,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap. She didn’t know why he liked to hug her to eat. But she loved his body scent, and his warm embrace. Most importantly when he hugged her, she didn’t feel he hated her.

End of Chapter Sixty-Four

Related

Chapter Sixty-Five



Hao Yan Che didn't want Yuan Gun Gun to think about anyone except him when they were together. He picked up a bowl of soup to feed Yuan Gun Gun.

'Open your mouth,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Too hot,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che blew on the spoon then he fed Yuan Gun Gun.

A while later, Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her satisfied stomach. Hao Yan Che put down another half empty plate, and picked up another plate of food to feed her.

'Young master, I'm full,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's stomach.

'Why didn't you say it sooner?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Didn't you say you wanted me to test the food for poison?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I did my best to taste most of the dishes.'

Hao Yan Che didn't want to respond to Yuan Gun Gun's way of thinking.

'Do you want me to feed you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che gave the spoon to Yuan Gun Gun. Then he silently watched his dummy rice ball focus her attention on remembering what dishes she tasted to feed him.

Later in the study room, Yuan Gun Gun fell asleep on Hao Yan Che's lap while he worked. He poked her loveable face, and realised how she trained her body to turn into a rice ball.

At midday Yuan Gun Gun woke up from her nap.

'Young master...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘You know how to live a good life,’ Hao Yan Che said and kept his eyes on the laptop.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go find aunty Chen to teach you how to tidy a room properly,’ Hao Yan Che said and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

In Yuan Gun Gun’s drowsy state she walked toward the bathroom instead of the door.

‘Come back,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked back to Hao Yan Che, and he pinched her adorable bottom.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘The door is that way,’ Hao Yan Che said and smiled.

At eleven at night, Yuan Gun Gun followed Hao Yan Che from the exercise room to the master bedroom. She felt awkward sharing the master bedroom with Hao Yan Che for the first time.

‘I want to take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I said I want to take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Go take a bath,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I promise I won’t peep on you while you’re taking a bath.’

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Go prepare the water in the bathtub,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head, and ran to the bathroom. She knelt on the bathroom floor, turned on the tap and waited for the bathtub to fill. Then she tested the water, and was satisfied it was warm enough. She stood and turned around to call the scary beautiful monster to come inside.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun screamed.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and covered her eyes.

‘Why aren’t you wearing clothes?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Do you take a bath with clothes on?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Ten seconds later, Hao Yan Che got into the bathtub and his rice ball was still frozen in the same spot.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Hao Yan Che got into the bathtub, and snapped out of her shock. She ran toward the door.

‘Come back here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked back to the bathtub, and she looked everywhere except at Hao Yan Che.

‘Massage me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Five

Related

Chapter Sixty-Six



Note: Chapter sixty-six contains mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter sixty-six.

Chapter Sixty-Six

Yuan Gun Gun knelt on the bathroom floor, and diligently massaged Hao Yan Che's body from his neck to his lower back.

A long time later, Hao Yan Che's body felt relaxed.

'Enough,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che's back, and she remembered to breathe before she suffocated.

Hao Yan Che got out of the bathtub, grabbed a towel, dried his body and put on a nightshirt. Then he knelt in front of Yuan Gun Gun and caressed her hot face.

'Do you want me to help you take a bath?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you sure?' Hao Yan Che teased.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said and pressed her hand against her chest to calm her racing heart.

Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun off the hook. He stood and walked outside to the bed. If he turned around, he would have saw her collapsed because of her stiff muscles, especially her tightened heart.

In the bedroom, Hao Yan Che sat on the bed and he turned on the TV. Remembering Yuan Gun Gun's rosy shy face in the bathroom made him smile.

Seconds later, Yuan Gun Gun ran to the bedroom to blindly grab her

underwear and nightshirt from a drawer. Then she ran back to the bathroom and hit her head on a wall.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Hao Yan Che got out of bed, she suppressed her pain and ran back to the bathroom.

On the bed Hao Yan Che smiled, because he felt his rice ball was amusing.

One hour later, the rice ball didn’t come out of the bathroom.

Two hours later, the rice ball still didn’t come out of the bathroom.

Three hours later, Hao Yan Che walked to the bathroom.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know what Yuan Gun Gun was thinking sitting on the bathroom floor. He pulled her up.

‘Do you intend to sleep here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bedroom and tossed her onto the bed.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pounced onto Yuan Gun Gun’s body, and kissed her lips.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s soft body under her nightshirt, and his whole body lit on fire. His lips trailed kissed down to her neck.

Yuan Gun Gun’s body tensed when she felt Hao Yan Che’s hand moved below her stomach, and she gripped his shoulders.

‘Um... young master... you can’t...’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

Hao Yan Che continued to nibble Yuan Gun Gun’s neck, and his fingers caressed the honeypot between her legs.

‘Um... young master... can’t...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips and shook her head. She couldn’t stop the tingling sensation in her body.

‘Um... you don’t need to...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Tears of pleasure and pain flowed slowly out of Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes.

Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes looked unsatisfied at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che unbuttoned Yuan Gun Gun’s nightshirt, and tossed it on the floor. Her hands covered her breasts, he pulled her hands up and pinned her hands above her head. He breathed heavily, it was the first time he experienced a painful erection.

‘Um... can’t...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s soft breasts and suckled her nipples.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why her body felt strange.

‘Young master... I don’t want to... not like this...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun cried. She didn’t want to give herself to Hao Yan Che, because he didn’t love her.

Hao Yan Che’s heart tightened to see fear in Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes. He endured his painful desire and let go of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Be quiet and sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che jumped out of bed, strode stiffly to the bathroom and slammed the bathroom door closed.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her tears and stared at the closed bathroom door, Hao Yan Che was angry. She put her nightshirt back on, and buttoned her nightshirt. She remembered her mummy told her that two people could only be intimate with each other if they loved each other. There was no reason for Hao Yan Che to be angry, because he didn’t love her.

Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed, and walked back to the pink bedroom. She laid on the comfortable pink bed, and thought about the way Hao Yan Che touched and kissed her body. When she rubbed his kiss marks on her neck, she felt her body turn hot.

In the master bedroom, Hao Yan Che's body was still stiff after coming out of the bathroom. He didn't see his rice ball on the bed and stiffly strode to the pink bedroom.

End of Chapter Sixty-Six

Related

Chapter Sixty-Seven



‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che’s roar brought Yuan Gun Gun’s soul back to her body. She sat up on the pink bed, and looked at the murderous look on his face.

‘I’m here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Who let you leave?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che sat on the pink bed and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Ow... don’t pinch,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘There are purple bruises there.’

‘Then I’ll help you color the places that aren’t purple,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom left and right.

‘Ow... young master... I was wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun back to the master bedroom. She didn’t think she did anything wrong. If she could protect her bottom, she would have stayed in the pink bedroom.

‘Why aren’t you on the bed?’ Han Yan Che asked. ‘Are you waiting for me to serve you?’

Yuan Gun Gun got into the bed, and laid close to the edge.

‘Come closer,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun inched a little away from the edge of the bed. Hao Yan Che lost his patience, he pulled her to his chest.

‘If you lie close to the edge again, I’ll kick you out of bed,’ Hao Yan Che warned. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom again. ‘Sleep.’

‘It’s my bottom,’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It’s yours,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was satisfied, and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Young master, I can’t sleep,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun nuzzled her face on Hao Yan Che’s chest.

‘Young master, can we talk for a bit?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun tighter.

‘I like having someone to sleep with,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Young master, what about you?’

‘Sleeping alone,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why do you want me to move here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che looked at his rice ball’s innocent eyes.

‘When I was a little girl, I loved sleeping with my mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But when my daddy found mummy and me, daddy took us back home. Daddy didn’t let me sleep with mummy anymore. So I climbed onto big brother Du’s bed to sleep. Big brother Du used to pat my back and tell me bedtime stories. When I turned fifteen, big brother Du didn’t let me sleep with him anymore. If I snuck into big brother Du’s bed at night, he would carry me back to my room... young master, what’s wrong?’

Yuan Gun Gun protected her head.

‘Roll over to the floor,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why Hao Yan Che was suddenly angry.

‘Roll over,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun got out off bed, and Hao Yan Che turned off the lights. She stood in the dark until her legs were numb then she laid on the floor.

Hao Yan Che’s night vision let him see clearly in the dark. He saw his dummy rice ball’s confused expression. He was still angry from the moment Na Liu Ting

Du's name came out of Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

In the middle of the night, Hao Yan Che laid sleepless on the bed while Yuan Gun Gun slept peacefully on the floor. He looked at his rice ball curled up against the bed, and didn't know if she was good at adapting to any environment or if her naivety was a blessing. If she had bribed him, he would have let her sleep on the bed immediately. But she didn't bribe him so he let her sleep on the floor.

Early morning, Yuan Gun Gun felt someone kicked her bottom and she woke up.

'Young master, good morning,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Yuan Gun Gun stretched her body, and got up from the floor. Hao Yan Che ignored her and walked to the bathroom. She rubbed her eyes, and made his bed.

A while later, Yuan Gun Gun brushed her teeth in the bathroom, and secretly glanced at Hao Yan Che shaving his chin stubble.

End of Chapter Sixty-Seven

Related

Chapter Sixty-Eight



Yuan Gun Gun pulled Hao Yan Che's shirt sleeve.

'Young master, are you still angry?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't answer.

'Don't be angry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I was wrong.'

'How?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Wrong...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun honestly didn't know what she did wrong.

Hao Yan Che scoffed and pushed Yuan Gun Gun's hand off his shirt.

'I shouldn't have been noisy and disturbed your sleep,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che waited for Yuan Gun Gun's light bulb to turn on.

'No?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Then I shouldn't have slept close to the bottom of the bed without your permission.'

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'You're not allowed to eat breakfast as your punishment,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Go to room fifteen right now.'

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head and ran outside.

At eleven in the morning in the study room, a conservatively dressed woman with glasses reported to Hao Yan Che.

'My only request is that you're not allowed to curse or hit her,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes Mr Hao,' Tan Tan said. 'I promise I'll be gentle with her.'

‘Jia Tu, take her teacher to room fifteen,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Room fifteen is converted into her classroom.’

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu said and turned to Tan Tan. ‘Miss Tan, follow me to room fifteen.’

In room fifteen, Yuan Gun Gun sat on the sofa and watched TV. She still couldn’t think of why Hao Yan Che was angry at her.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the sofa after she heard the knock on the door.

‘Gun Gun,’ Jia Tu greeted.

‘Big brother Jia Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun, this is your teacher Miss Tan,’ Jia Tu said. ‘Miss Tan, this is your student, Gun Gun. Young master converted this room into a classroom for your teacher to educate you.’

‘Hello big sister Tan,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Tan Tan thought Yuan Gun Gun was an adorable young woman.

‘Hello Gun Gun,’ Tan Tan greeted.

‘Gun Gun, do your best,’ Jia Tu encouraged.

‘Thank you big brother Jia Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and waved bye to Jia Tu.

‘Let’s begin your first lesson,’ Tan Tan said.

‘Big sister Tan, I’m a slow learner,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t be angry if I don’t understand some lessons.’

Tan Tan rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Don’t worry,’ Tan Tan said. ‘I’ll teach you slowly, and you’ll eventually understand all the lessons I planned for you.’

Yuan Gun Gun thought Tan Tan was a better teacher than she pictured Hao Yan Che would find for her.

At five in the afternoon, Tan Tan packed the textbooks.

‘Gun Gun, we’ll end your first lesson here,’ Tan Tan said.

‘Thank you big sister Tan,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, what’s wrong?’ Tan Tan asked. ‘Do you feel sick?’

Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach rumbled, and she smiled awkwardly.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m hungry.’

Tan Tan smiled, took out a wrapped chocolate and gave it to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘For you,’ Tan Tan said.

‘Thank you big sister Tan,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun unwrapped the chocolate and ate it.

‘I’ll see you tomorrow,’ Tan Tan said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked Tan Tan to the car, and went to see Hao Yan Che in the study room.

‘Young master, are you still angry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Young master if you stay angry then I’ll starve to death,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach rumbled and proved she was telling the truth.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to Hao Yan Che, and sat on his lap. He rubbed her sunken stomach and frowned.

‘Why didn’t you eat if you’re hungry?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You said I’m not allowed to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘When did I say you’re not allowed to eat?’ Hao Yan Che asked and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s left ear.

‘This morning you said I’m not allowed to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Sixty-Eight

Related

Chapter Sixty-Nine



‘I only said you’re not allowed to eat breakfast,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I didn’t say you’re not allowed to eat lunch. If you’re all meat and no brain then you deserve to starve to death.’

‘Ow... my ear is falling off,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun protected her ears.

‘Don’t be angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll wait for you to eat dinner.’

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun off his lap.

‘I don’t need you to wait for me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Go eat.’

Yuan Gun Gun walked dejectedly out of the study room.

At eleven at night, Hao Yan Che was reviewing at work papers in bed.

‘Young master, I’m going to get something,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll come back soon.’

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun. She went to the pink bedroom and returned to the master bedroom with a bedcover, a bedsheet and a pillow. He immediately put the work papers on the bedside table. Then he watched her spread the bedcover on the floor near the bed, pulled the bedsheet over her body and laid her head on the pillow.

‘Goodnight young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and closed her eyes.

Hao Yan Che was frustrated Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t figure out why he was angry with her.

‘Did I say you can sleep?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes, and stood to look at Hao Yan Che.

‘Aren’t you scared I’ll kill you by stepping on you in the middle of the night?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the distance between the bedsheet and the bed. She moved her night belongings far away from the bed, and smiled at Hao Yan Che.

‘Thank you for reminding me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Young master is a smart person.’

Hao Yan Che felt like his head was going to explode from anger.

‘Come here!’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun froze on the spot. Hao Yan Che got out of bed, carried her to the bed and tossed her onto the bed.

‘You’re the dumbest girl I’ve met,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and rubbed her dizzy head.

Hao Yan Che laid on top of Yuan Gun Gun’s body, and kissed her lips until her lips swell.

‘Dummy, use your nose to breathe,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun breathed through her nose again. Hao Yan Che let go of her, he closed his eyes, turned over and his back faced her. Seconds later, she pulled the back of his shirt.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun called. ‘Tell me what I did wrong. I promise I won’t do it again.’

Hao Yan Che turned around, and looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Don’t let me hear Na Liu Ting Du coming out of your mouth again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Big brother Du?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Why?’

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘You’re not allowed to say his name,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It hurts...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Remember not to say his name,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head. Hao Yan Che wasn’t satisfied and he pinched her bottom. She rubbed her face and her bottom while looking pitifully at Hao Yan Che.

‘What are you looking at?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and closed her mouth. Hao Yan Che turned her around, and was angry to see her cry.

‘What is there to cry about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t wipe her tears fast enough.

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her eyes.

‘You’re always bullying me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Even if it’s true, you’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It hurts when you pinch me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You deserve it,’ Hao Yan Che said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

Yuan Gun Gun was used to Hao Yan Che’s mood swings.

‘You’re not allowed to mention him again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Who?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Na Liu Ting Du,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘All you need to know is you’re not allowed to mention his name,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Did you hear me?’

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head even though she disagreed with Hao Yan Che.

End of Chapter Sixty-Nine

Related

Chapter Seventy



Hao Yan Che was satisfied Yuan Gun Gun agreed not to mention Na Liu Ting Du's name again.

'Do you like your new teacher?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She sniffed her nose and smiled at Hao Yan Che. 'She gave me chocolate.'

'Will you like her if she doesn't give you chocolate?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che stroked his dummy rice ball's long hair.

'Young master, can I sleep now?' Yuan Gun Gun asked and yawned.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. He turned off the light and caressed Yuan Gun Gun's face. 'Go to sleep.'

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's waist and quickly fell asleep. He kissed her forehead and looked lovingly at her sleeping face.

Several days past, the servants were used to seeing their young master being affectionate toward their future young mistress outside of her home school hours. Occasionally, the servants heard Yuan Gun Gun cry out in pain and Hao Yan Che raising his voice. The servants were happy their young master and future young mistress reconciled.

One day at five in the afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun walked into the study room as usual. She pulled Hao Yan Che's shirt sleeve and smiled at him.

'Young master, it's time to eat dessert,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'What's the rush?' Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I want to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s face and kissed her lips.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Yuan Gun Gun was embarrassed Hao Yan Che kissed her deeply in front of Jia Tu.

The only dessert Hao Yan Che wanted to eat was Yuan Gun Gun’s sweet lips. He licked her swollen lips and she moaned on his tongue.

‘I let you eat dessert already,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to eat your saliva,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to eat dessert.’

Hao Yan Che frowned and held Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘You’re not allowed to eat dessert,’ Hao Yan Che said.

It was Yuan Gun Gun’s turn to frown. She quietly opened a drawer from the desk, and took out a chocolate from the chocolate box. Hao Yan Che slapped her hand.

‘Ow... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and rubbed her red hand.

‘You have guts if you dare to steal,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘This box of chocolates belongs to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Aunty Chen gave it to me.’

‘From the top of your head to the bottom of your feet, what doesn’t belong to me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m yours,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘The box of chocolates is mine.’

‘You don’t have the right to negotiate with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Aunty Chen gave it to me.’

Yuan Gun Gun was too scared to take the box of chocolates.

‘You’re not allowed to eat it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che closed the drawer, and disappointed Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I want to eat dessert,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You broke your promise,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You said after class, I can eat dessert.’

‘You dare raise your voice at me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face, and Hao Yan Che ignored her. Suddenly her stomach ached, she hunched over and held her stomach.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Are you experiencing withdrawal symptoms because you can’t eat dessert?’

‘No... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was startled to see Yuan Gun Gun’s complexion paled.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked sincerely.

Yuan Gun Gun felt something drip onto her underwear.

‘Tell me what’s wrong,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what to say.

‘Jia Tu, go call the doctor!’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Jia Tu ran outside to call a doctor.

‘You don’t have to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t say anything,’ Hao Yan Che said and carried Yuan Gun Gun to their bedroom.

In the master bedroom, Hao Yan Che began taking off Yuan Gun Gun’s clothes because he wanted to find out why there was fresh blood on her body.

‘Young master... what are you doing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and curled herself into a ball.

‘Where are you injured?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m not injured,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and blushed.

End of Chapter Seventy

Related

Chapter Seventy-One



‘How can you say you’re not injured?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘I can smell fresh blood on your body.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what to say. Hao Yan Che slammed the bed.

‘Tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I... I have my period,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

It was Hao Yan Che’s turn to be speechless. Yuan Gun Gun curled into a ball of pain on the bed.

‘What happens now?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Call aunty Chen to come here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

A second later, Hao Yan Che disappeared and came back with Mrs Chen.

‘Gun Gun, take two of these pills,’ Mrs Chen instructed.

Yuan Gun Gun swallowed the pills and drank the glass of water Mrs Chen gave her.

‘Aunty Chen...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead and lower back were sweaty.

‘Gun Gun, I’ll take you to have a bath,’ Mrs Chen said.

Hao Yan Che paced back on forth in the bedroom worrying about Yuan Gun Gun.

Later Mrs Chen and Yuan Gun Gun came out of the bathroom, and Hao Yan Che helped Yuan Gun Gun lie in bed.

‘Little Chub, how do you feel?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

'It hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Aunt Chen, she's in pain,' Hao Yan Che said.

'She's OK,' Mrs Chen said. 'I'll get her a hot water bottle.'

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's stomach. He didn't know women's periods were painful.

'Wait a bit,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It won't hurt later.'

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's waist.

'Young master, put this hot water bottle on her lower stomach,' Mrs Chen said.

Hao Yan Che listened to Mrs Chen, and put the hot water bottle on Yuan Gun Gun's lower stomach.

'Gun Gun, drink this ginger chicken broth,' Mrs Chen said.

'I'll feed her,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che blew on the hot bowl of ginger chicken broth, and slowly fed Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun's wasn't as pale after she drank the broth.

'Aunt Chen, what happens next?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Keep her warm and let her sleep,' Mrs Chen said.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Aunt Chen, you can go.'

'Young master... your uncle and aunt are here,' Mrs Chen said. 'Do you want me to escort them here?'

'No,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Tell them to leave.'

'Yes young master,' Mrs Chen said.

Mrs Chen left and closed the door. Hao Yan Che turned off the light, and hugged Yuan Gun Gun on the bed.

'Young master... it hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said weakly.

In the past Mrs Chen stayed with Yuan Gun Gun when she had period pain at the Hao Mansion. But Yuan Gun Gun preferred being comforted by Hao Yan Che. When Hao Yan Che doted on Yuan Gun Gun, she felt he cared about her.

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's sweaty lower back.

'In a bit, it won't hurt,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun felt comforted in Hao Yan Che's chest, and she slowly drifted to sleep.

Hao Yan Che was relieved when he heard Yuan Gun Gun sleeping. He hated seeing her in pain.

Hao Yan Che's violet eyes turned color after he saw Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo standing in the dark master bedroom.

'Why are you two here?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Gun Gun,' Qiu Li Luo called. 'Aunty's Xiao Gun Gun.'

Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep like she heard a familiar voice.

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun's back.

'Don't wake her up,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Go outside first.'

'Gun Gun is mummy's...' Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo wanted to wake Yuan Gun Gun up, but Hao Yan Que pulled her outside the master bedroom.

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun's back, and waited for her to sleep deeply. Then he walked outside to talk to his parents.

In the study room, Qiu Li Luo protested.

'Gun Gun is mine,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'I want to go inside.'

'Xiao Luo, Gun Gun isn't yours,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Gun Gun is mine,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'She's my daughter-in-law.'

Hao Yan Che walked into the study room, and looked coldly at his parents.

'Why do you two want to see me?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Xiao Che, is mummy's daughter-in-law loveable?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't respond to Qiu Li Luo's proud tone of voice that showed Qiu Li Luo was proud of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘You sleep together with her in your room?’ Hao Yao Que teased.

‘Aren’t I allowed to?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Qiu Li Luo had a revelation.

‘How come Gun Gun can touch you freely?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Mum, keep your voice down,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Qiu Li Luo pouted her lips.

‘Now that you have a wife, you don’t need mummy,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘When did I ever need mum in the past?’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Hao Yan Che ran a hand through his white hair that was exactly like Qiu Li Luo’s white hair if he didn’t dye his hair for work.

Hao Yan Que hugged Qiu Li Luo, comforted her and he looked triumphantly at Hao Yan Che.

‘You lose,’ Hao Yan Que said.

End of Chapter Seventy-One

Related

Chapter Seventy-Two



Hao Yan Che slitted his violet eyes at Hao Yan Que.

‘Xiao Che, mummy wants a baby,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘When will you give mummy a baby?’

‘Mum if you want a baby, dad can give you a baby,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Qiu Li Luo blushed.

‘Xiao Luo, we should go,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Someone’s tail got stepped on.’

‘I want to spend time with Gun Gun,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Che guarded the door.

‘Mum, she’s sick,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t disturb her sleep.’

‘Is Gun Gun OK?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Xiao Che, your daddy and I heard about Jia Tao,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘We came here to ask you to spare Jia Tao. She made a wrong judgement.’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Xiao Che, mummy watched Jia Tao grow up,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Can you spare Jia Tao because of me?’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then can you spare Jia Tao because mummy brought Gun Gun into your life?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘It can’t happen a second time,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Mummy promise it won’t happen a second time,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘Xiao Luo, let’s go,’ Han Yan Que said.

Qiu Li Luo looked back and forth at Hao Yan Que and Hao Yan Che.

‘Xiao Che, can mummy hug you?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Qiu Li Luo hugged Hao Yan Che and smiled at him.

‘Xiao Che, be good to Gun Gun and you’ll be happy like mummy,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Out of consideration Qiu Li Luo was Hao Yan Che’s mum, Hao Yan Che suppressed his displeasure being hugged by Qiu Li Luo.

Hao Yan Que couldn’t stand seeing another person hug Qiu Li Luo, including his sons. He pulled Qiu Li Luo away from Hao Yan Che and disappeared with her.

Hao Yan Che returned to the master bedroom. He laid on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun, held her to his chest and kissed her forehead.

‘Gun Gun, I gave up my freedom for you,’ Hao Yan Che whispered. ‘You’ll always be mine. I won’t let you escape me.’

Early morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up. She was used to waking up having Hao Yan Che’s hardness rubbing between her thighs.

‘Young master, your little brother is rubbing on my body again,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che opened his dissatisfied eyes.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck and her face nuzzled his chest.

‘Your little brother is really hard,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che endured his frustrations.

‘Does it still hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It hurts a little,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If you give me chocolate, it won’t hurt anymore.’

Hao Yan Che hit Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Do you want to eat chocolate?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and rubbed her bottom.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed and used the bathroom first. Yuan Gun Gun lazily stayed in bed. After he brushed and washed, he carried her to the bathroom for her to brush and wash.

‘Young master, do I have to study today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said and carried Yuan Gun Gun back to the bed.

‘Can I stay in bed today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said and turned on the TV for Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Can I eat junk food today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Congratulations,’ Hao Yan Che said sarcastically. He got out of bed and walked the door. ‘You can close your eyes and keep dreaming.’

‘Young master, where are you going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Stay in bed,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you take a step away from your bed, I’ll strangle you to death.’

Yuan Gun Gun stayed in bed and looked sadly at Hao Yan Che leaving the master bedroom.

Seconds later, Hao Yan Che returned with a tray of a hot bowl of broth and a warm glass of milk.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun called happily.

Hao Yan Che put the tray on the bedside table, sat on the bed and passed Yuan Gun Gun the glass of milk. She drank all the milk, and he blew on the hot bowl of broth.

‘Young master, what’s inside the bowl?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Pigs’ fodder,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun looked blankly at Hao Yan Che.

‘Open your mouth,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Seventy-Two

Related

Chapter Seventy-Three



Yuan Gun Gun kept her mouth firmly shut. Han Yan Che gave her a warning look, and she opened her mouth. He fed her the broth, and her eyes lit up.

‘Young master, it tastes delicious,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che silently fed Yuan Gun Gun the whole bowl of broth, spoon by spoon. Afterward he wiped her mouth, took the tray away and returned with a box of chocolates.

Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes turned into love hearts at the sight of chocolates.

Hao Yan Che put the box of chocolates in Yuan Gun Gun’s hands.

‘You’re only allowed to eat three chocolates,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged the box of chocolates. Hao Yan Che’s brows creased and he walked to the door.

‘Young master, where are you going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘To the study room,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you need anything, call aunty Chen.’

After Hao Yan Che left, Yuan Gun Gun opened the box of chocolates. She unwrapped a chocolate, put it in her mouth and it melted deliciously in her mouth. She couldn’t resist unwrapping another chocolate... moments later, she felt like she was struck by lightning. An image of Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes looking at the empty box of chocolates in her hands made her whole body shiver.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her hands to get rid of the evidence. Then she carefully rewrapped the wrappers and put them inside the empty box. She was thankful her mummy taught her what to do if she accidentally ate too many chocolates.

Suddenly the phone rang, and startled Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Hello... big brother Due!’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Yes it’s me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Have you been well?’

‘Not bad,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘What about everyone?’

‘Everyone is healthy,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Are you sure you don’t want to go to school? Is it because of what happened? Do you want me to change schools for you?’

‘Young master won’t let me go to school,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du was unhappy to hear Yuan Gun Gun mention Hao Yan Che.

‘Big brother Du, are you there?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’m here,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘What do you do now?’

‘Young master hired a teacher to home school me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My teacher is training me how to be a secretary.’

‘Really?’ Na Li Ting Du asked. He gripped the phone. ‘How are you studies?’

‘Good,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My teacher praises me. She said I’m a good student.’

‘Of course my Gun Gun is a good student,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, if you’re free come here to see me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I get to escort my teacher to her car at five every afternoon. I really miss big brother Du.’

‘Alright,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘In two days I’ll come and see you.’

‘Big brother Du, do you have to go now?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He pictured Yuan Gun Gun’s sad puppy eyes and smiled. ‘I have work to do.’

‘Remember to come to see me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I will,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, hang up first,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du chuckled and hung up the phone.

Yuan Gun Gun was excited she would get to see Na Liu Ting Du soon. She laid on the bed and watched TV.

Hao Yan Che returned to the master bedroom at ten at night. His brows creased at the sight of Yuan Gun Gun's teary eyes staring at the TV.

'Why are you crying?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, you're back,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Stop crying,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun stretched her arms toward Hao Yan Che. Yuan Gun Gun wanting him to hug her made his anger disappear. He laid on the bed and hugged her.

'Why are you crying?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Do you have a stomach ache?'

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm watching a movie called ten rules between dog and me. It's a really moving sad story.'

Hao Yan Che inwardly sighed. His rice ball cried over a movie.

'The dog and the owner have ten rules with each other,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'It's really sad when the dog died.'

'What rules?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun recited the ten rules to Hao Yan Che:

1. Be patient with me.
2. Trust me like I trust you.
3. Don't forget I have a heart.
4. There is a reason why when I don't listen to you.
5. Talk to me a lot even if I can't sit properly, I can understand you.
6. Don't hit me, because my legs can run away fast.
7. If I grow old, take care of me.
8. I can only live for ten years, take good care of me while I'm alive.
9. You can go to school and be with your friends, but I only have you.
10. After I die, miss me like I miss you and remember I'll always love you.

End of Chapter Seventy-Three

Related

Chapter Seventy-Four



‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It makes you really ugly.’

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck.

‘Young master, animals are all like that,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If you treat them well, they’ll protect you, listen to you and they’ll be with you whether you’re happy or sad. But their lives are short. I’m scared of losing Xiao Yuan when Xiao Yuan dies. If all my small friends die in front of me like in the movie, I’ll be heartbroken.’

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘What will happen if my family dies before me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know how Yuan Gun Gun’s brain jumped from animals to humans.

‘You must have a lot of free time to sit here and think about hypothetical situations,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was lost in her sad thoughts.

‘If I die, will you be sad?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Of course I’ll be sad,’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Why? Are you dying? You can’t die. Why are you dying?’

Hao Yan Che heard Yuan Gun Gun cry like he died in front of her.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are you sick?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Is that why you’re dying and asked me if I’ll be sad if you die? You can’t die. If you die, I’ll be heartbroken like the dog’s owner on TV.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to cry. He knocked her head, opened

the drawer and took out a chocolate from the chocolate box... Yuan Gun Gun immediately stopped crying, and jumped out of the bed.

‘I... I’m going to prepare your bath,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Stop,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Where are the chocolates?’

‘In here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and rubbed her stomach.

‘All the chocolates?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun took steps back.

‘Looks like it,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said sarcastically and clapped his hands.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and ran. Hao Yan Che caught her and carried her back to the bed. That night she knew she couldn’t escape punishment.

A couple of days later Yuan Gun Gun’s period left, and scheduled another visit for the following month.

On a sunny day Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand and they walked to the dining room. She let go of her hand after she saw Yi Tu. She ran to Yi Tu, shook Yi Tu’s arms and Hao Yan Che’s good mood soured.

‘Big brother Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu greeted.

‘Where have you been?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Did you go on a trip?’

‘Yes,’ Yi Tu lied.

‘Was it fun?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun’s waist and pulled her to his side.

‘Young master, my waist hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che scoffed and Yuan Gun Gun sat on Hao Yan Che’s lap at the dining table. She tasted the dishes before feeding Hao Yan Che.

The servants believed miracles existed after they witnessed their icy young

master being tamed by their warm future young mistress.

‘Young master, what happened to big sister Jia Tao?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I haven’t seen her for a long time.’

‘Gun Gun, the truth is she...’ Yi Tu interrupted.

‘Resigned,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why did big sister Jia Tao resign?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yun Gun Gun bit half a spring roll, and fed Hao Yan Che the other half.

‘You don’t need to know,’ Hao Yan Che said and chewed the spring roll Yuan Gun Gun fed him.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered Qiang Jia Tao told her that Qiang Jia Tao used to be Hao Yan Che’s maid. Yuan Gun Gun wondered if in three years times Hao Yan Che would be as nonchalant after she returned to her family. She looked at Hao Yan Che’s cold eyes, and it made her sad thinking he wouldn’t care if she was gone.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun put half a random dish in her mouth, fed the other half to Hao Yan Che and he didn’t ask her about why she looked sad again.

After the meal, Yuan Gun Gun waved bye to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, I’m going to class,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu waited until Yuan Gun Gun left before opening his mouth again.

‘Young master, do you want to hide the truth about Qiang Jia Tao from Gun Gun?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Qiang Jia Tao is in hiding,’ Yi Tu said. ‘What happens if she comes back here and harms Gun Gun? Young master, you should tell Gun Gun the truth so Gun Gun will keep her guard up against Qiang Jia Tao.’

‘It looks like you care too much about Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Seventy-Four

Related

Chapter Seventy-Five



‘Young master... everyone wants to protect Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu said.

‘I’ll protect Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You don’t need to worry.’

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu was satisfied he provoked Hao Yan Che to show Hao Yan Che’s true feelings.

At five in the afternoon, Tan Tan packed the textbooks in room fifteen.

‘Gun Gun, you’re a bright student,’ Tan Tan praised.

‘Big sister Yan, it’s because you’re a gentle and a patient teacher,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I love having you as my teacher.’

‘Why wouldn’t I be gentle with a loveable student like you?’ Tan Tan asked.

Tan Tan was usually indifferent to her colleagues and students, Yuan Gun Gun was the exception.

Yuan Gun Gun escorted Tan Tan to the car, and in the distance she saw Na Liu Ting Du’s car.

‘See you tomorrow big sister Tan,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘See you tomorrow Gun Gun,’ Tan Tan said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

After Tan Tan’s car disappeared, Yuan Gun Gun ran to Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Big brother Du!’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Na Liu Ting Du’s arms lifted Yuan Gun Gun, and spun her around.

‘Big brother Du... you’re making me dizzy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du held Yuan Gun Gun still in his arms. She kissed his cheek and he

gave her an Eskimo kiss.

‘Did you miss me?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I missed you too,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Then why didn’t big brother Du come visit me sooner?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Dad wants to spend more time with mum,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘It means I’m busier at work.’

When Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek, he didn’t notice Hao Yan Che’s reflection disappeared from the study room window.

‘Big brother Du must be tired,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let me massage you.’

Na Liu Ting Du put Yuan Gun Gun on the ground.

‘My little princess Gun Gun knows how to care about others,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du opened the driver’s door, picked up the box of chocolates and gave it to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Same rule,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You can’t eat too many chocolates in one go.’

Yuan Gun Gun hugged the box of chocolates and smiled at Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Big brother Du is the best,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You give me everything I want.’

‘How are you going to thank me?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Na Liu Ting Du’s cheek again. She didn’t see Hao Yan Che standing behind her, he looked like he wanted to kill Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Gun Gun, what about the other cheek?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked and looked directly at Hao Yan Che’s murderous eyes.

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Na Liu Ting Du’s other cheek, Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color and Na Liu Ting Du thought he was seeing things.

‘Yuan Gun Gun!’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and Hao Yan Che’s cold glare made her body

shiver.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you having a good time?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was too scared to open her mouth.

Na Liu Ting Du exchanged another death glare with Hao Yan Che.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun took a step back, and Hao Yan Che smiled coldly.

‘Do you want me to come over there?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to Hao Yan Che’s side. He knocked her head, but not softly like usual.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out in pain.

‘Gun Gun!’ Na Liu Ting Du called.

‘Do you know what you did wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che held up Yuan Gun Gun’s chin and her teary eyes were levelled with his cold eyes.

Na Liu Ting Du wanted to kill Hao Yan Che for hurting Yuan Gun Gun. Na Liu Ting Du walked to Hao Yan Che, but Hao Yan Che kicked Na Liu Ting Du to the ground. Even though Na Liu Tin Du had his guard up, he didn’t expect Hao Yan Che’s fighting instincts too be that fast.

End of Chapter Seventy-Five

Related

Chapter Seventy-Six



‘Big brother Du!’ Yuan Gun Gun called. She couldn’t escape Hao Yan Che’s death grip. ‘Let go of me. How can you hit someone? You’re hurting me.’

Na Liu Ting Du wiped blood off his lips.

‘Let go of Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Why should I?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Na Liu Ting Du got off the ground, held Yuan Gun Gun’s arm and Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s other arm.

‘I don’t mind pulling off her arm,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun stared in disbelief at Hao Yan Che.

Na Liu Ting Du aimed a punch at Hao Yan Che’s face, Hao Yan Che dodged the punch and pushed Yuan Gun Gun out of the way.

Yuan Gun Gun stumbled back, fell down and scraped her arms and legs. She looked up and saw Hao Yan Che and Na Liu Ting Du’s fierce fight.

‘Don’t fight!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun stood up. She couldn’t watch Hao Yan Che use full force to attack Na Liu Ting Du. She ran to them and stood in front of Na Liu Ting Du to protect Na Liu Ting Du’s face from Hao Yan Che’s punch.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out and spat out blood.

‘Gun Gun!’ Na Liu Ting Du called and braced Yuan Gun Gun’s fall.

Hao Yan Che saw Yuan Gun Gun’s spat out blood, and fisted his hands. She chose to risk her life to protect Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Gun Gun, can you hear me?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘Gun Gun, open your eyes.’

Na Liu Ting Du looked at Hao Yan Che's cold eyes.

'If anything happens to Gun Gun, I'll bury you with her,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'I'll be waiting,' Hao Yan Che said.

'You!' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du let Yuan Gun Gun lie on the ground to punch Hao Yan Che's hateful face. In that moment Yuan Gun Gun's eyes were closed, but her hand reached for Na Liu Ting Du's arm.

'Big brother Du... don't hit him,' Yuan Gun Gun said weakly.

Yuan Gun Gun's words made Hao Yan Che freeze.

'Gun Gun,' Na Liu Ting Du called.

'Big brother Du... it's painful... take me home,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du carried Yuan Gun Gun to the car.

'Gun Gun, don't be scared,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I'll take you home.'

'Yuan Gun Gun, do you want to see what happens if you leave?' Hao Yan Che threatened.

Na Liu Ting Du kept walking to the car.

'Big brother Du... put me down,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du's eyes darkened, and he carefully put Yuan Gun Gun back on the ground.

Hao Yan Che stepped toward Yuan Gun Gun.

'Give me your hand,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun forced herself to open her eyes, and stretched out her arm. Hao Yan Che held her hand, pulled her to his chest and carried her in his arms.

'Gun Gun, do you want to go with him?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Big brother Du... he's my young master,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, what if he's not your young master?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'But he is,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du lost a part of Yuan Gun Gun's heart. He couldn't turn back time, Yuan Gun Gun gave a part of her heart to Hao Yan Che.

'Big brother Du...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't say anything else to Na Liu Ting Du because Hao Yan Che carried her to the Hao Mansion faster than the wind.

Na Liu Ting Du sat in the car. He had wanted to ask Yuan Gun Gun if his place in her heart gave him a chance to be with her.

'Gun Gun, why didn't you wait for me?' Na Liu Ting Du asked himself. 'Why did you let someone else in your heart when I finally accepted I love you? Gun Gun, am I too late? Will I always be your big brother in your heart?'

In the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen was frightened to see Yuan Gun Gun's injured face.

'Young master... Gun Gun's face,' Mrs Chen said.

'She brought it upon herself,' Hao Yan Che said.

Mrs Chen was startled by Hao Yan Che's iciness.

Yuan Gun Gun's body tensed, she was hurt by Hao Yan Che's words.

'Auntie Chen, bring an ice pack and a towel to my room,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun straight to the master bedroom, and laid her on the bed. Seconds later, Mrs Chen brought an ice pack wrapped in a towel to the master bedroom and gave it to Hao Yan Che. Yuan Gun Gun moved her head side to side, but she couldn't stop Hao Yan Che applying the ice pack on Yuan Gun Gun's swollen cheek.

'No... no... ah... it hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'I dare you to move your head again,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun laid still on the bed, and the tears she held back flowed down her cheeks.

'Hold it yourself,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun held the ice pack on her swollen cheek. Hao Yan Che opened the first aid kit, and began disinfecting the scratches on her arms and legs.

‘No... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun’s plea, and applied iodine on her arms and legs.

End of Chapter Seventy-Six

Related

Chapter Seventy-Seven



‘What is there to cry about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Aren’t I allowed to cry if I’m in pain?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked bravely.

‘What did you say?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I said I’m in pain,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, you have guts,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s neck. He didn’t use force, but his coldness made her suffocate.

‘You dare to see him,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Have you forgotten your status?’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m your maid, but it has nothing to do with me seeing my family. Why do you have to be this angry?’

Yuan Gun Gun put down the ice pack. Hao Yan Che let go of her neck, he picked up the ice pack and pressed it hard against her swollen cheek.

‘Ah... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Next time if you protect him again, I’ll hammer your mouth to pieces,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pressed the ice pack harder on Yuan Gun Gun’s swollen cheek.

‘If you know what’s good for you then remember you’re mine,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You can’t see him if you don’t have my permission.’

‘Don’t you know how to say sorry for hitting my big brother Du?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Even if you’re my young master, you can’t hit my big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun

Gun said.

‘What are you going to do if I hit him?’ Hao Yan Che asked. He threw the ice pack on the floor. ‘Do you want to take revenge for him?’

‘Young master is a dummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. ‘You don’t know right from wrong.’

Yuan Gun Gun sensed the cold tension between her and Hao Yan Che.

A moment later, Yuan Gun Gun heard Hao Yan Che kicked down another door.

At the Yuan Mansion, Feng Du Du was frightened to see her adoptive son’s bloodied face.

‘Ting Du, what happened?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘Did you get into a fight?’

‘Mum, I’m OK,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Tell mummy what happened,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Come here, mummy will clean your wound.’

‘Ting Du, come with dad,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Ting Du, let mummy clean your wound before you talk with your daddy,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘I’m hungry,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Cook a meal for me, and bring it to the study room.’

‘Do I look like I’m your maid?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘I’m hungry,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu kissed Feng Du Du’s forehead, and she walked to the kitchen.

Na Liu Ting Du followed Yuan Ting Liu to the study room, and Yuan Ting Liu poured two glasses of red wine.

‘If I’m not mistaken, today you went to see Gun Gun,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Yes dad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘How were you injured?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Yuan Ting Liu passed a glass of wine to Na Liu Ting Du, and carried the other glass of wine to the sofa.

‘Hao Yan Che,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and sat opposite Yuan Ting Liu.

‘Because of Gun Gun?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Ting Du, do you know who you are in my eyes?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘A friend’s son,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘No,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘In my eyes, you’re my son.’

Na Liu Ting Du drank a sip of wine.

‘Ting Du, with your intelligence, you know what I hoped would happen in the future,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘If Gun Gun wasn’t saved by Hao Yan Che’s mum, I wanted you to become my son-in-law. In the past I knew you loved Gun Gun more than a brother loves a sister. I wanted to wait for you to find out yourself. But now it’s too late, Hao Yan Che is in the picture.’

‘Dad, I can’t get past the fact that if I strip away everything you gave me, I only have two empty hands,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I didn’t feel I was worthy to give Yuan Gun Gun a future she deserves.’

Yuan Ting Liu listened to Na Liu Ting Du’s firm voice.

‘Dad, let me return your company to you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I want to build my own company, and be worthy to fight for Gun Gun.’

End of Chapter Seventy-Seven

Related

Chapter Seventy-Eight



‘Alright,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘I’m sorry dad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I have one condition,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘No matter what happens, Yuan’s company will belong to you. Ting Du, you’re someone who has good foresight.’

‘Thank you dad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Dad, is Hao Yan Che an ordinary person?’

‘What makes you think he isn’t an ordinary person?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Na Liu Ting Du took another sip of wine.

‘Um,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘If he’s an ordinary person then you wouldn’t be injured.’

‘I thought it was an evenly matched fight,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and rubbed his mouth wound.

Feng Du Du carried a tray of food to the study room, and she was displeased with Yuan Ting Liu and Na Liu Ting Du.

‘If you’re injured, you need to take care of your wound,’ Feng Du Du chastised. ‘You two don’t know how to take care of yourselves.’

Feng Du Du dragged Na Liu Ting Du to the living room to clean Na Liu Ting Du’s wound. Yuan Ting Liu stayed in the study room, and ate Feng Du Du’s cooked meal even though he wasn’t hungry. Yuan Ting Liu thought Yuan Gun Gun was like Feng Du Du, they were happy simpletons.

In the master bedroom at the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen visited Yuan Gun Gun who stared blankly at the ceiling.

‘Gun Gun,’ Mrs Chen called.

‘Auntie Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Mrs Chen sat on the bed, and inspected Yuan Gun Gun's swollen cheek.

'Tell me what happened,' Mrs Chen said.

'Today big brother Du came to visit me,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I don't know why young master came out or why he was angry. He hit my head. Big brother Du wanted to take me away from him. He kicked big brother Du to the ground. Then they fought. I protected big brother Du, and my face became like this.'

'Gun Gun, how is Na Liu Ting Du related to you?' Mrs Chen asked.

'Why does everyone ask me the same question?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'He's my big brother.'

'Is he adopted by your parents?' Mrs Chen asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, you're eighteen,' Mrs Chen said. 'You need to be aware of keeping a respectable distance between you and men. Even if he's your big brother, you shouldn't kiss and hug each other so freely. If you take away his big brother title, he's a man and you're a woman. If you two aren't together then you should keep your distance from him. You're not a five or a ten-year-old girl anymore.'

'What about young master?' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He kisses my lips.'

'It's not the same,' Mrs Chen said. 'Because you'll be young master's wife, and the future young mistress of the Hao Household.'

'Who... who said?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'How come I didn't know?'

'Gun Gun, tell me if you like young master,' Mrs Chen asked. 'Yes or no?'

Yuan Gun Gun puffed her cheeks.

'If he says sorry then I'll like him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'If he doesn't then I won't like him.'

If Yuan Gun Gun's face wasn't like a balloon, Mrs Chen wanted to pinch her cheeks.

'Gun Gun, why do you want young master to say sorry?' Mrs Chen asked.

'He hit my big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Have you forgotten?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Young master’s body doesn’t let people touch him. His body automatically attacked your big brother, because your big brother touched him.’

‘I thought that was a joke,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If it’s true, how come young master hasn’t kicked me out the window for touching him?’

‘Can’t you see young master gives you special treatment?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Sometimes too special. But can’t you feel young master likes you?’

Mrs Chen thought the answer was clear on Yuan Gun Gun’s face, Yuan Gun Gun looked happy to hear Hao Yan Che liked Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I’m here to put soothing cream on your face,’ Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun was too happy to hear or feel Mrs Chen applying cream on her face. By the time Mrs Chen left, Yuan Gun Gun forgot what else she wanted to ask Mrs Chen.

End of Chapter Seventy-Eight

Related

Chapter Seventy-Nine



At night, Hao Yan Che opened the new master bedroom door. His rice ball was lying on the bed. She had kicked the bedsheet below her feet, and looked like she was in a good mood.

Yuan Gun Gun heard the door open, she sat up on the bed and anticipated Hao Yan Che coming to bed. But he ignored her and walked to the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed, and went to stand in front of the closed bathroom door. She didn't know what she wanted to say.

Hao Yan Che sensed Yuan Gun Gun was standing behind the bathroom door, he opened it and looked coldly at her.

'Do you want to be a peeping tom?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. She was disappointed Hao Yan Che looked at her coldly. Her shoulders slumped, she turned around and walked back to the bed.

'Go ask someone to boil eggs,' Hao Yan Che said and closed the bathroom door.

Yuan Gun Gun walked back to the bathroom door.

'Do you want to eat boiled eggs or fried eggs?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'How many eggs do you want to eat?'

Hao Yan Che opened the bathroom door again.

'Boil eggs!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was startled, and she ran outside to find someone to boil eggs. After she left, he slammed the bathroom door closed.

When Yuan Gun Gun returned to the master bedroom, Hao Yan Che was

drying his hair with a towel on the bed.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun held a bowl of boiled eggs and walked to the bed. Hao Yan Che pulled her onto the bed, he put the bowl of boiled eggs on the bedside table and rolled a boiled egg on her swollen cheek.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s beautiful face, and thought about Mrs Chen’s words. Did the beautiful man in front of her truly liked her? Was she someone special to him? She smiled like a fool at him.

‘What are you smiling about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, am I someone special to you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You’re the most special person in the world,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’re a special dummy. Other dummies can’t compare to your low intelligence.’

Yuan Gun Gun became a deflated balloon. Hao Yan Che rolled the egg on her cheek until it turned cold. Then he put another egg in her hands.

‘Your reward,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun absentmindedly put the egg in her mouth. Hao Yan Che reached for the soothing cream, and applied it on her face.

Yuan Gun Gun bit half the egg, and gave the other half to Hao Yan Che.

‘Tastes bad,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked at her like he was asking her if he looked like a rubbish bin. She quickly put the other half of the egg in her mouth.

Hao Yan Che put the cream away and went to the bathroom to wash his hands. Yuan Gun Gun took out the egg in her mouth, put it in the bin and used a tissue to hide the egg.

Hao Yan Che returned to the bed, turned off the light and laid next to Yuan Gun Gun.

Seconds later, Yuan Gun Gun poked Hao Yan Che's waist.

'Young master, why aren't you hugging me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che ignored Yuan Gun Gun.

'Hug me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'No,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Are you going to hug me or not?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'No,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Then I'll hug you,' Yuan Gun Gun said and hugged Hao Yan Che.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't see Hao Yan Che smile in the dark.

'Don't you want to take revenge for him?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Auntie Chen explained your body doesn't let other people touch you,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Now I know you didn't mean to hit big brother Du.'

Hao Yan Che scoffed.

'Young master, I'm special to you because I can touch you,' Yuan Gun Gun said proudly.

'Do you know who else can touch me besides you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Animals,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Do you know what this implies?'

'What?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'You're no different from an animal,' Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Seventy-Nine

Related

Chapter Eighty



Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips. Was she an animal?

‘Do you know what animal you are?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Pig,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to be a pig!’ Yuan Gun Gun protested.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You can be a dog.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘A pug,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che’s waist, and turned away from him. What like her? She was a rice ball to him, he didn’t like her.

Hao Yan Che turned around, and hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

‘You’re not allowed to see Na Liu Ting Du,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘He’s my big brother,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Of course I want to see my big brother. How would you feel if someone told you, you couldn’t see your family?’

‘I don’t mind,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I mind,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My family and small friends are everything to me. In this world only they love me, and treat me good.’

Hao Yan Che frowned.

‘And young master too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Even though you’re

temperamental and like to bully me, I'll be sad when that day comes and I can't see you anymore.'

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her teary eyes on Hao Yan Che's chest. The thought of leaving him in three years made her sad.

Yuan Gun Gun waited a long time for Hao Yan Che to say something. But sleep won over her before he said anything.

Hao Yan Che sniffed Yuan Gun Gun's neck. He loved her body scent, it soothed him and helped him sleep.

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes and immediately looked for Hao Yan Che. She was disappointed he wasn't lying next to her.

At five that day Yuan Gun Gun only walked Tan Tan to the front door, because Mrs Chen guarded the front door and told Yuan Gun Gun that Hao Yan Che didn't let her go outside.

Mrs Chen led Yuan Gun Gun to the dining room, and served Yuan Gun Gun a meal.

'Aunt Chen, this French cheesecake tastes delicious,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Young master hired a French chef just to make French desserts for you,' Mrs Chen said.

'Where's young master?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'How come I didn't see him today?'

'Young master is at Hao Yan's company,' Mrs Chen said. 'Why? Do you miss him?'

'Aunt Chen, your smile is scary,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen looked stern again. Yuan Gun Gun finished eating the small slice of French cheesecake, looked at her surroundings and smiled at Mrs Chen.

'Aunt Chen, I want to eat more desserts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'No,' Mrs Chen said. 'Young master said you're only allowed to eat this much.'

'Aunt Chen, young master isn't here,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He won't know if you let me eat more desserts. I want to eat pudding.'

Mrs Chen felt like she was under Yuan Gun Gun's spell. When Mrs Chen was about to cave, Hao Yan Che walked into the dining room.

'Do you want to eat pudding?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted sweetly.

Hao Yan Che walked past Mrs Che, sat down on a chair and held Yuan Gun Gun on his lap.

'Young master,' Mrs Che said and bowed.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che like there was something different about him that day while he looked at her cheeks that weren't swollen anymore.

'Ah!' Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

'What's wrong?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, your hair,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She pulled Hao Yan Che's hair. 'Why did you dye your hair? I love your white hair.'

Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun pull his hair, and he carried her to the spa room.

'Where are we going?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'To wash hair,' Hao Yan Che said.

In the spa room, Yuan Gun Gun washed the dye out of Hao Yan Che's hair.

'Young master, why did you dye your hair black?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che closed his eyes, and enjoyed the relaxing sensation of Yuan Gun Gun massaging his head.

'Young master, it looks like you stopped having headaches,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Eighty

Related

Chapter Eighty-One



Hao Yan Che opened his eyes. Yuan Gun Gun smiled sweetly at him, and massaged his head for half an hour before rinsing his hair. Afterward she blow dried his hair.

Suddenly Hao Yan Che pulled her onto the massage bed.

‘Young master, how can I reach your hair?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun’s chin.

‘Starting tomorrow you’ll come with me to Hao Yan’s company and be my secretary,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, can’t I stay at home and keep learning how to do housework?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Are you sure there is work you can do at home?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My mummy said that in the ancient times, tasting food for poison was a job.’

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun holding a hand over her heart.

‘It’s true,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy said that eunuchs were paid to taste food for the emperor.’

‘Are you a eunuch?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But eunuchs and I don’t have little brothers.’

A vein popped up on Hao Yan Che’s forehead.

‘I can cook too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But you won’t let me into the kitchen.’

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s puffy cheeks, and he resisted knocking her head.

‘Talk less nonsense,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But big sister Tan hasn’t finish teaching me everything about being a secretary yet,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Someone will give you on the job training at work,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Does that mean I won’t be home schooled anymore?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What about dessert?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Will you let me eat dessert after work like after school?’

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun looked like she had droopy puppy dog ears while she begged him to let her eat dessert.

‘Depends on your performance,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che wasn’t a eunuch. He promptly sat up, and let Yuan Gun Gun stand on the floor before he wouldn’t let her leave the massage bed.

‘Young master is the best,’ Yuan Gun Gun praised and continued to dry Hao Yan Che’s hair.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun moved her apple red lips. He thought the heavens punished him by giving his heart to the dummy woman in front of him.

The following morning, Hao Yan Che deposited Yuan Gun Gun in the bathroom.

‘You have ten minutes to prepare for work,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you take longer than ten minutes to get ready, you won’t get to eat dessert.’

Yuan Gun Gun was motivated to brush, wash and change clothes in nine minutes.

‘Did I take longer than ten minutes?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Hehe... my dessert is safe,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and rubbed her stomach.

Hao Yan Che had a hallucination, he pictured Yuan Gun Gun was protecting their baby instead of her dessert.

Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Che's hand and pulled him toward the dining room.

'Wait,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You haven't brushed your hair.'

'I don't need to,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She ran a hand through her smooth long black hair, and smiled proudly at Hao Yan Che. 'My hair isn't knotty.'

Hao Yan Che chose not to say anything, and let Yuan Gun Gun take him to the dining room.

After breakfast Hao Yan Che drove a satisfied Yuan Gun Gun to Hao Yan's company. The moment Yuan Gun Gun stepped out of the car, her thoughts were visible on her face.

'Let's go inside,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Young master, how many floors does your company have?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'One hundred floors,' Hao Yan Che said.

'What happens if the building collapse?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Wouldn't it kill a lot of people?'

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the employees around her, she was worried for their lives.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu were walking behind Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun. Jia Tu and Yi Tu couldn't help but laugh at Yuan Gun Gun's backward way of thinking.

Hao Yan Che scoffed, held Yuan Gun Gun's hand and led her to the elevator.

Unlike Yuan Gun Gun, the employees were worried about their boss' life because it was the first time they witnessed their boss holding a person's hand.

The elevator doors opened to the one hundredth floor. Hao Yan Che walked together with Yuan Gun Gun to his office. She thought his employees looked like beautiful immortals.

'CEO Hao,' the secretaries greeted.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said.

Inside Hao Yan Che's office, Hao Yan Che took off his jacket, hung it on his

chair and sat.

‘Young master, are the people outside your secretaries?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

End of Chapter Eighty-One

Related

Chapter Eighty-Two



Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun on his lap.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Aren’t you supposed to only have one secretary?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Is that what you decided?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s what I’ve seen on TV.’

Hao Yan Che gently touched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks.

‘Does it hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You deserve it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re being mean to me again,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Get off my lap,’ Hao Yan Che said and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s waist. He raised an eyebrow, and she slid off his lap.

‘Answer the phone calls,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Make appointments, file work papers and give out reports. Your teacher said you know how to do all that. If you perform well, I’ll let you eat dessert.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Your desk is over there,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pointed to the desk in front of his desk. Yuan Gun Gun sat at her desk and applied what Tan Tan taught her. He was happy she did her best.

At five in the afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun looked excitedly at Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, dessert,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘In the fridge,’ Hao Yan Che said without looking away from the work papers.

Yuan Gun Gun walked around Hao Yan Che’s office looking for the fridge. Yi Tu pointed at the pig fridge, and smiled at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Thank you big brother Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun opened the pig fridge and her eyes lit up.

‘Pudding!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun took out four pudding serves, she turned around and met Hao Yan Che’s disapproving violet eyes.

‘One,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun put three precious pudding serves back in the fridge, and walked back to her desk with one lonely pudding serve.

Days later, Yuan Gun Gun became a popular topic of conversation at Hao Yan’s company. The employees knew she loved eating sweets, and if she greeted them, they would secretly give her a chocolate. Most of the male employees were infatuated with Yuan Gun Gun, but they knew she was off limits because she was Hao Yan Che’s woman.

In every crowd there was always a Lancelot type in the crowd. Ning San Yuan was the Lancelot of Hao Yan’s company.

‘Big brother San Yuan, this is yours,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and gave a report to Ning San Yuan.

‘Thank you Gun Gun,’ Ning San Yuan said. ‘You’re a diligent worker.’

‘Big brother San Yuan is too kind,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around to walk to Hao Yan Che’s office.

‘Wait,’ Ning San Yuan said. ‘This is for you.’

Ning San Yuan took out a bouquet of orchids, and gave it to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘For me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Ning San Yuan said. ‘Do you like them?’

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed the orchids.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘They smell lovely.’

‘Don’t breathe the pollen in deeply,’ Ning San Yuan said. ‘It’s not good for the body.’

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I didn’t know.’

‘Gun Gun, what do you know?’ Ning San Yuan asked.

‘Everything about food,’ Yuan Gun Gun said proudly.

‘Gun Gun, you’re loveable,’ Ning San Yuan said.

‘Thank you big brother San Yuan for the orchids,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I need to go back to my desk.’

‘Bye Gun Gun,’ Ning San Yuan said.

‘Bye,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun carried the orchids to the one hundredth floor, and she ran to look for Hao Yan Che in his office.

‘Young master, don’t you think they smell lovely?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and showed Hao Yan Che the orchids.

‘Where did you find them?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Big brother San Yuan gave them to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked around Hao Yan Che’s office to look for a vase.

‘Did you take a long time to give out reports because of these orchids?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Lu was carrying a stack of files. I helped big brother Lu to carry them to his desk before I gave the reports out.’

‘Throw the orchids away,’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

End of Chapter Eighty-Two

Related

Chapter Eighty-Three



‘Don’t make me say it a second time,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But... it’s a waste...’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

Hao Yan Che stood and walked to Yuan Gun Gun. She gave him the orchids, and he tossed them in the bin.

‘Today you’re not allowed to eat dessert,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che sat back in his chair.

‘You’re being unreasonable,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Tomorrow you’re not allowed to eat dessert either,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun stomped a foot, and sat at her desk.

At the Hao Mansion study room at ten that night, Yi Tu gave Ning San Yuan’s file to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, here is Ning San Yuan’s file,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che opened the file, and read Ning San Yuan’s work duties.

‘Tomorrow transfer him to Canberra (Australia’s ACT, midway between Sydney and Melbourne),’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Promote him and give him a five thousand dollar bonus.’

Hao Yan Che threw the file on the desk, stood and walked to the master bedroom.

‘Young master knows how to give out punishments and rewards,’ Yi Tu said to Jia Tu. ‘Young master is jealous, but he got rid of a love rival under a guise of a promotion.’

Jia Tu silently agreed.

In the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was too upset to watch TV. The door opened, she turned her back to Hao Yan Che and pulled the bedsheet over her head. He ignored her childish antics, and walked to the bathroom.

Later Yuan Gun Gun felt Hao Yan Che got into bed, and she moved close to the edge of the bed.

‘Do you want me to kick you out of bed?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun moved away from the edge of the bed. Hao Yan Che hugged her.

‘You dare act like a mistress in front of me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t open her mouth.

‘Are you mute?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che nibbled and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips.

‘You’re not allowed to receive flowers from another man,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

‘Did you hear me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s neck, and left his teeth mark on her neck.

‘What about my dessert?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You want to eat dessert?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che unbuttoned Yuan Gun Gun’s night shirt and he cupped Yuan Gun Gun’s breasts.

‘If you bend your head you’ll get to eat sweet buns,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun blushed.

‘Look at the appetizing pink peaks on the sweet buns,’ Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun’s ear.

Hao Yan Che massaged Yuan Gun Gun’s breasts until her nipples hardened.

‘I... don’t want to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You don’t want to eat dessert?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s rosy face in the dark.

‘Little Chub, I’m hungry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun wiggled her body under Hao Yan Che’s body, but she couldn’t escape.

‘You can bend your head and eat sausage,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was surprised to hear dirty talk from Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth. He let go of her breasts and pinched her bottom.

‘Who taught you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I don’t need someone to teach me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m not smart. But at least I know the difference between a man’s body and a woman’s body. I know two people should only kiss on the lips if they love each other. I know in the mornings how hard and excited your little brother is when your little brother is rubbing against my body.’

Hao Yan Che laughed and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek.

‘You’re not a total dummy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che was in a good mood. She held his face and smiled at him in the dark.

‘Young master, tomorrow I want to eat dessert,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s nose.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No reason,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What about the day after tomorrow?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’ll think about it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun found a comfortable spot on Hao Yan Che’s chest and closed her eyes. If she could see in the dark, she would see his violet eyes looking at her face lovingly.

End of Chapter Eighty-Three

Related

Chapter Eighty-Four



At midday in Hao Yan Che's office, Yuan Gun Gun ran to his chair and he lifted her onto his lap. She held his hands to rub her stomach.

'Young master, it's lunch time,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Feel how flat my stomach is.'

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It's round.'

'What do you mean?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'It's round,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che's hands, slid off his lap and walked to her desk.

Hao Yan Che walked to the pig fridge. He took out a platter of food and put it on Yuan Gun Gun's desk.

'Go reheat it and you can eat,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun's sadness disappeared after she saw the delicious food on the platter.

'Young master you're the best,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Wait here. I'll go reheat it.'

'Today you're eating on your own,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che walked back to his chair, picked up his jacket and wore it. He walked to Yuan Gun Gun's desk and pinched her sad face.

'Where are you going?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'To sign a contract,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Don't eat dessert behind my back. You know what happens if you do.'

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Come back soon.’

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead.

Yuan Gun Gun heard the door closed, looked down at the platter of food and lost her appetite.

At twenty past midday, Yuan Gun Gun slowly ate and occasionally glancing at the door. She wondered why Hao Yan Che wasn’t back yet.

Yuan Gun Gun’s phone rang, and she was happy to see who called her.

‘Big brother Du!’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun, it’s always good to hear your voice,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, how come you’re free to call me today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Aren’t you busy at work?’

‘Do you miss me?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then come downstairs,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’m waiting for you downstairs.’

‘Wait for me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She ran to the elevators. ‘I’ll be right there.’

‘I’ll be waiting for you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

A minute later, Yuan Gun Gun ran outside Hao Yan’s company and jumped into Na Liu Ting Du’s arms.

‘Big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘I’m taking you to eat,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I have something to tell you too.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But I need to get back to work soon. Let’s eat at the cafe near here. The egg tarts there are delicious.’

Yuan Gun Gun held Na Liu Ting Du’s hand and took him to Ting’s Cafe.

Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Ting Du sat at a table for two inside Ting’s Cafe.

‘Big brother Du, I’m sorry about what happened last time,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Young master has a fear of people touching him. He’ll kick anyone who touches him. Big brother Du, does your body still hurt?’

‘Gun Gun, who is he to you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘Why are you saying sorry on behalf of him?’

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Na Liu Ting Du’s cup of coffee on the table.

‘If he doesn’t let anyone touch him, why can you touch him?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Hehe... because I’m special,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, in my eyes you’re special too,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips while she was distracted by his confession. She was stunned frozen. His tongue parted her lips and he lightly bit her tongue. She could taste the coffee he drank.

‘Really sweet,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked blankly at Na Liu Ting Du like he was a different person.

‘The egg... egg tart here is sweet,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Eighty-Four

Related

Chapter Eighty-Five



‘Gun Gun, I’m building a castle for you using my own hands,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Will you be my queen?’

‘Queen?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Are you willing to be my wife?’

‘Wife?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You’ll be my wife and I’ll be your husband. That way we’ll always be together.’

‘Impossible,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s not practical if we’re always together. What happens when you want to eat, but I want to go to the bathroom?’

Na Liu Ting Du laughed. Yuan Gun Gun’s backward way of thinking dispelled the romantic atmosphere he weaved.

‘Gun Gun, you’re amazing,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘What should I do with you?’

‘What are you saying?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, forget I’m your big brother,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’m Na Liu Ting Du, and you’re Yuan Gun Gun. I’m a man, and you’re a woman. In your heart, I don’t want to be your big brother. I want to be your husband.’

‘Are you saying you want to take me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I want to marry you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Not take you.’

‘I understand,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Like how if you take mummy away from daddy, daddy will kill you.’

Na Liu Ting Du was lost for words.

‘But big brother Du, you can’t marry me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re my big

brother.'

'Starting from today, don't think of me as your big brother,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'But...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, you don't need to give me an answer today,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I'll wait three years to hear your answer.'

Yuan Gun Gun sat in silence. She didn't know what to say or think.

At half past one, Hao Yan Che returned to his office but he didn't see his rice ball. He immediately called her phone.

'Hello,' Na Liu Ting Du greeted. 'Are you looking for Gun Gun?'

'Where is she?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Does she need your permission to see me?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Don't provoke me,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you do, you'll only make her suffer.'

'You dare?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Why don't you ask her if I dare or not?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Don't be delusional,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You only have three years with her.'

'I get to decide whether I'm with her for three years, thirty years or three hundred years,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You're the delusional one.'

Na Liu Ting Du saw Yuan Gun Gun coming back from the bathroom. He hung up and put the phone in its original spot.

On the other end, Hao Yan Che smashed the phone against a wall.

'Yi Tu, Jia Tu, go find her and bring her back here,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu didn't want to end up like the broken phone. They quickly left Hao Yan Che's office to look for Yuan Gun Gun.

At Ting's cafe, Yuan Gun Gun looked at the clock above the counter and panicked.

'Big brother Du, I need to get back to work,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Eat your meal first,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘But I need to go,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I said eat your meal,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun was shocked. She didn’t know when Na Liu Ting Du turned temperamental like Hao Yan Che.

‘You shouldn’t waste food,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Na Liu Ting Du’s usual gentle tone, and felt like she was seeing things before.

Yuan Gun Gun ate her meal and occasionally looked at Na Liu Ting Du’s face to be certain it was Na Liu Ting Du.

Na Liu Ting Du broke the pair of glasses in his hands, and vowed to be himself.

At ten to two in the afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun ate a plate of egg tarts, a sundae and drank milk tea.

‘Big brother Du, I’m done eating,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let’s go.’

‘Alright,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’ll take you back to work.’

End of Chapter Eighty-Five

Related



Chapter Eighty-Six

Note: Chapter eighty-six has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter eight-six.

Chapter Eighty-Six

Na Liu Ting Du escorted Yuan Gun Gun back to Hao Yan's company. Yuan Gun Gun's habit was to kiss Na Liu Ting Du's cheek bye. But she remembered how he suddenly kissed her in Ting's Cafe, and decided to only wave bye to him.

'Bye big brother Du,' Yuan Ting Ting said. 'Don't overwork yourself.'

Na Liu Ting Du pecked Yuan Gun Gun's lips while she waved to him.

'Gun Gun, don't forget what I said,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I wasn't joking.'

Yuan Gun Gun covered her lips, and nodded her head.

'You should go,' Na Liu Ting Du said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Bye big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du watched Yuan Gun Gun walk into the building. He thought about Hao Yan Che's words, wanting to be with someone for three hundred years was a long time. If Hao Yan Che loved Yuan Gun Gun and she loved Hao Yan Che... did it mean everything he was doing for Yuan Gun Gun was meaningless?

On the one hundredth floor, Yuan Gun Gun ran out of the elevator and ran into Hao Yan Che's office. She prayed to the heavens that Hao Yan Che wasn't inside his office. Unfortunately, her prayer wasn't answered.

Hao Yan Che opened his office door, and saw his rice ball gasping for air.

'Young master... you're back,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You're dead,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun took one step back, and Hao Yan Che pulled her into his office.

The employees who saw the pitiful Yuan Gun Gun being captured by their icy boss had wanted to save her but didn't dare. They silently said a prayer for her life.

Behind closed doors, Yuan Gun Gun protected her head and begged for mercy.

'Young master... I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I was wrong. Don't hit me.'

'Where did you go?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I... I,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to say she went to eat desserts, but she remembered Hao Yan Che made her promise not to eat desserts behind his back.

'Where?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I... I went for a walk,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I didn't eat anything.'

'A walk?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She raised her left hand. 'I didn't eat anything.'

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's hair and pulled her to the connecting bedroom. He pushed her onto the bed, laid on top of her and bit her lower lip until he tasted her blood.

'Ah...' Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

Hao Yan Che ripped Yuan Gun Gun's dress.

'Young master... you can't,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared Hao Yan Che would rip her underwear too. He held her wrists in one hand and unhooked her bra with his other hand.

'No...' Yuan Gun Gun said and her face turned red.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun's breasts.

'Young master, it hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che ripped Yuan Gun Gun's underwear off.

'Young master!' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm sorry. I was wrong. I didn't go for a walk. I went to eat desserts.'

Hao Yan Che saw the fear in Yuan Gun Gun's teary eyes and he stopped moving on top of her body.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Big brother Du came to ask me to eat a meal. I didn't want to come back to work late so I took big brother Du to Ting's Cafe nearby. All the desserts at Ting's Cafe are delicious. I'm sorry I ate desserts behind young master's back.'

Hao Yan Che didn't know what to think, Yuan Gun Gun lied to him because she was scared he would find out she ate desserts.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her chest and cried.

'Be quiet,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I told you that you're not allowed to see Na Liu Ting Du.'

'But... I didn't agree,' Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

Cold steam came out of Hao Yan Che's nose and mouth.

'I shouldn't have eaten desserts behind your back,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But you shouldn't bully me. If you bully me again... I'll tell my daddy.'

End of Chapter Eighty-Six

Related

Chapter Eighty-Seven



‘If you want to tell your dad, I’ll take you to see him,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and pulled Yuan Gun Gun up.

‘I... I’m not wearing clothes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You don’t need to wear clothes,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘This can be your evidence.’

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s hand away, and covered her chest.

‘Young master is a hateful monster,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I hate you. Why do you have to bully me like this? Even if I’m your maid, I have self-respect too. I hate you.’

Although Yuan Gun Gun covered her chest, her ripped underwear barely covered her honeypot. Hao Yan Che thought if someone saw them together in that moment then that person would misunderstand he forced himself on Yuan Gun Gun.

The bedroom door opened, Hao Yan Che immediately hugged his rice ball to shield her body.

‘Yi Tu, get out!’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yi Tu closed the door, and prayed for his life.

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out. ‘It’s all your fault! They saw everything. Hao Yan Che, I hate you!’

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the bathroom.

‘You monster, I hate you!’ Yuan Gun Gun said and slammed the bathroom door close.

Hao Yan Che punched a bedroom wall.

One hour later, Hao Yan Che sat at his desk, held a report in his hand but couldn't read a single word.

Two hours later, Hao Yan Che held a pen, but he couldn't write a single word.

Three hours later, Hao Yan Che picked up the bedroom key and walked to the bedroom.

'Yuan Gun Gun open the door,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't answer.

'Yuan Gun Gun, don't test my patience,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was worried something happened to Yuan Gun Gun. He unlocked the door and stood in front of the sleeping Yuan Gun Gun. She was huddled on the bed, she sucked a finger in her mouth, she was still crying in her sleep and a bedsheet covered below her waist. He thought she looked like an angel that fell from heaven.

Hao Yan Che laughed at himself. How could he think his rice ball looked like an angel? At the most, Yuan Gun Gun was a rice ball angel. He pictured his rice ball angel attempting to fly and fail because of gravity. It made him smile. If his rice ball angel fell, she would beg him for dessert.

'Little Chub,' Hao Yan Che called. He patted Yuan Gun Gun's forehead. 'Wake up.'

Hao Yan Che shook Yuan Gun Gun's shoulders.

'Little Chub, wake up and go to work,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun mumbled something against the pillow, but she didn't wake up.

'Yuan Gun Gun, wake up,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che laid on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun. It was like she could sense his presence in her sleep. She hugged his waist and moved around to find a comfortable spot on his chest.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun sleep. He finally understood why Hao Yan Que hated anyone hugging Qiu Li Luo, even their sons.

'Yuan Gun Gun, my rice ball angel,' Hao Yan Che whispered. 'Accept your fate,

you'll always be with me.'

At twenty-eight past six in the evening, Yuan Gun Gun woke up and pushed Hao Yan Che away from her.

'Stay away!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to see Hao Yan Che. She turned around, and her back faced him.

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun around, and his brows creased.

'If you cry, I'll take you outside right now,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face, but her trembling shoulders betrayed her.

'Crying isn't going to change anything,' Hao Yan Che said.

'It's your fault!' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'How am I going to look at everyone in the face?'

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun's back.

'Don't cry,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I'll fire all of them.'

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'How about I poke their eyes out?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'You're crazy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Eighty-Seven

Related

Chapter Eighty-Eight



‘What did you say?’ Hao Yan Che asked and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘It’s your fault,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun. He went to the pig fridge to get pudding and returned to the bed.

‘Don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Put on clothes and eat pudding.’

‘What clothes?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘You ripped my clothes.’

Hao Yan Che opened the wardrobe, and chose one of his black shirts for Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I can’t see my...’ Yuan Gun Gun said and covered her chest.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun off the hook. He looked all over the bed. Finally he found Yuan Gun Gun’s black bra under her bottom.

‘It’s flattened,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You flattened it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun frowned. Hao Yan Che took a deep breath to stay calm.

‘If you put it on, it won’t be flat anymore,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun blushed.

‘Hurry and put on clothes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

After Hao Yan Che turned around, Yuan Gun Gun put on her black bra and his black shirt.

‘It’s too big,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che turned around. Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her pink nose and her small hands were flapping his black shirt sleeves at him. It was like she was tempting him to come tease her.

‘Young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed, and held Yuan Gun Gun on his lap. He caressed her bottom, and felt she was wearing the bottom half of the dress he ripped under his black shirt. He pulled the ripped dress down her milky smooth legs.

Yuan Gun Gun wiggled her bottom on Hao Yan Che’s lap.

‘My bottom is cold,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to wear underwear.’

Hao Yan Che grabbed the pudding and put it in Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

With pudding in Yuan Gun Gun’s hands, she forgot about her cold bare bottom. She slowly ate the pudding bite by bite.

Hao Yan Che thought the hearty way Yuan Gun Gun ate the pudding made him suspect she would betray him for dessert. But he didn’t mind keeping her by his side, he considered it as doing a good deed.

‘I want more,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun licked her lips, and gave the empty box to Hao Yan Che. He didn’t say anything, and she pouted her lips.

‘Tell me how am I going to face everyone again?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘It’s your fault.’

Hao Yan Che rolled Yuan Gun Gun onto the bed.

‘You can stay here and cry all night,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Where are you going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to go home too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want to stay here by myself.’

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the bed, ran to Hao Yan Che and held onto his arm.

‘You can stay here,’ Hao Yan Che said and freed his arm.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You’re too noisy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to go home with you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s waist like he could only choose to take her home or choose to stay with her.

‘If you don’t cry, I’ll take you home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t see Hao Yan Che smile when she said she wanted to go home with him, because she was hugging his waist from behind.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che.

‘But I don’t want to go outside like this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘People will misunderstand.’

‘Then you can stay here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che’s good mood was wiped away by Yuan Gun Gun’s words. Why wasn’t she worried people would misunderstand when she wore Na Liu Ting Du’s shirt home?

Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and quietly got into bed.

Hao Yan Che left the bedroom, and slammed the door closed.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled under the bedsheet, because she remembered the horror movies she watched about victims staying in an office building alone. In the horror movies there were no one else except the victim, but the victim could hear the sounds of typing.

At nine at night in the Hao Mansion’s study room, Jia Tu and Yi Tu’s weak souls were more scared of Hao Yan Che looking at them coldly than if Hao Yan Che gave them a beating.

‘Don’t you two know how to knock?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, we’re sorry,’ Yi Tu said. ‘We searched everywhere outside, we couldn’t find Gun Gun so we came back to your office to search and forgot to knock.’

‘If you two have problems using your brains, I don’t mind helping you two wake up your brains,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Eighty-Eight

Related

Chapter Eighty-Nine



Note: Chapter eighty-nine has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter eighty-nine.

Chapter Eighty-Nine

Between nine and half past nine at night, there were sounds of broken furniture from the study room. At twenty-nine to ten at night, Hao Yan Che emerged from the study room feeling rejuvenated.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu on the other hand were left lying under a heavy vintage table.

At eleven at night at Hao Yan's company headquarters, Yuan Gun Gun was too scared to sleep. She turned on the TV. It was the middle of the movie where a handsome man was undressing a beautiful woman. Her eyes widened at how big the handsome man's little brother was. The beautiful woman screamed for mercy when the handsome man's little brother entered the beautiful woman. Suddenly when the handsome man and beautiful woman were groaning and moaning, the bedroom door was slammed opened.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped out of bed, she ran to Hao Yan Che and hugged him.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che was relieved the scream he heard didn't come out of Yuan Gun Gun's mouth. He pushed her away for making him worry about her.

'Did you stay here to watch adult movies?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I didn't know there were adult movies on TV until today.'

Hao Yan Che wanted to turn off the TV, but the loud moans turned into a pitiful scream. Yuan Gun Gun pitied the beautiful woman who fell from the pleasure high to death. The beautiful woman's nose was snapped off, and blood

gashed out of the beautiful woman's face. While the handsome man's mouth that was pleasuring the beautiful woman body, began sucking...

Hao Yan Che turned off the TV.

'Do you dare to watch the rest of the movie?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She hugged Hao Yan Che's neck. 'I want to go home. I don't want to stay here by myself.'

Hao Yan Che led Yuan Gun Gun to the door.

'Wait,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Get me the bedsheet to wrap around me.'

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

'I'm not wearing underwear,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'What if someone sees me?'

Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun to the sofa, and he pointed at the black bag.

'You have two minutes,' Hao Yan Che said and turned around.

Yuan Gun Gun opened the black bag, inside were her clothes and underwear. She quickly changed into her clothes and underwear.

'I'm done,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che walked to the elevators. Yuan Gun Gun ran after him and held his arm.

'Wait for me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the car, and drove her home.

Later at the Hao Mansion's master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was glued to Hao Yan Che's back.

'What are you doing?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'm scared,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'So?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'll come with you to the bathroom and massage you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Half an hour later, Yuan Gun Gun walked out of the bathroom blushing.

Yuan Gun Gun got into bed with Hao Yan Che.

‘Go take a bath,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll take a bath tomorrow.’

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bathroom.

‘I don’t want to stay here by myself,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She held onto Hao Yan Che’s arm. ‘Stay here with me.’

‘Stay here with you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why should I?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Because earlier I stayed with you here to help you have a bath,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did I beg you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m begging you to stay with me.’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and clung onto Hao Yan Che’s leg.

‘Young master, stay here with me,’ Yuan Gun Gun begged.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If you don’t stay here with me, I’ll die,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘A female ghost’s arm will pull me under water and drown me. I’m begging you to have mercy on me and stay with me. I’ll be forever be grateful toward you.’

‘You’re the female ghost,’ Hao Yan Che said. He pulled Yuan Gun Gun up, and pinched her bottom. ‘You have fifteen minutes.’

Hao Yan Che turned around, Yuan Gun Gun turned on the tap and took a quick bath.

Ten minutes later, Yuan Gun Gun got out of the bathtub, wrapped a towel around her body and was relieved Hao Yan Che didn’t leave.

‘Young master, I’m done,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che walked back to the bed, and Yuan Gun Gun followed him.

After Yuan Gun Gun changed into a nightshirt, she got into bed and laid on Hao Yan Che's chest.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che kept his eyes closed and ignored Yuan Gun Gun.

'Today big brother Du asked me to marry him,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che opened his eyes.

End of Chapter Eighty-Nine

Related

Chapter Ninety



Hao Yan Che's body stiffened, and he looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

'But he's my big brother,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Since I was a little girl, in my heart he's my ideal big brother even if we're not biological siblings. He's a gentle, caring and loving big brother. He doesn't get angry at me, and he's always good to me. Suddenly today he asked me to marry him. Why would a big brother ask his little sister to marry him?'

Hao Yan Che anticipated Yuan Gun Gun's next words.

'He said he'll wait three years to hear my answer,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Then I thought aren't I going home in three years. Young master, will you miss me when I leave?'

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips. She wrapped her arms around his neck. She couldn't stop herself from liking him even though he bullied her.

Yuan Gun Gun returning Hao Yan Che's kiss made his desire burn greater for her. He rolled over to press his body on top of her body. Their tongues toyed with each other, and her moans echoed the bedroom.

'Um... young master... breathe,' Yuan Gun Gun said softly.

Hao Yan Che's lips parted from Yuan Gun Gun's lips. Her chest was rising and falling in sync with her deep breaths, it was a stimulating sight.

'Call my name,' Hao Yan Che said and stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair.

'Hao Yan Che,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che's rare moment of gentleness evaporated, because Yuan Gun Gun called his full name.

'Did I call your name wrong?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che gave Yuan Gun Gun an icy glare.

‘Isn’t your name Hao Yan Che?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked softly.

‘Call me Che,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun’s sensitive ear.

‘Young master, you didn’t answer my question,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Will you miss me when I leave?’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Of course Hao Yan Che didn’t need to miss Yuan Gun Gun, because he wouldn’t give her an opportunity to leave him.

Yuan Gun Gun’s body tensed.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘In the future call me Che,’ Hao Yan Che said and played with Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was satisfied to hear Yuan Gun Gun call his name.

‘Tomorrow what dessert will I get to eat?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

Hao Yan Che rolled onto his back, and Yuan Gun Gun slept on his chest.

In the morning, Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the dining room because she slept late last night and was still sleepy.

‘Young master,’ Jia Tu and Yi Tu greeted.

Hao Yan Che sat on a chair and Yuan Gun Gun sat on his lap. She heard Jia Tu and Yi Tu’s voices and opened her eyes.

‘Big brother Jia Tu... big brother Yi Tu... your faces,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Morning Gun Gun,’ Jia Tu and Yi Tu greeted.

‘Big brother Jia Tu, big brother Yi Tu, what happened to your faces?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘We fell face first on the floor,’ Yi Tu said.

‘We hit our faces against a wall,’ Jai Tu said.

‘Huh?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘We hit our faces against a wall,’ Yi Tu said.

‘We fell face first on the floor,’ Jai Tu said.

Yuan Gun Gun scratched her head.

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘What did you call me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are they OK?’ Yuan Gun Gun whispered in Hao Yan Che’s ear. ‘What happened to them?’

‘A door jammed their faces,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che sipped a glass of warm milk. He was satisfied it wasn’t hot and put it in Yuan Gun Gun’s hands.

‘How can a door jam cause their faces to turn out that horrific?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked suspiciously and drank the glass of warm milk.

‘You can experience a door jam and see the results for yourself,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Talk less nonsense and eat faster,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun tasted the dishes for poison then she fed Hao Yan Che.

None of the servants in the dining room were gobsmacked, because they were accustomed to their icy young master’s PDA if it involved their future young mistress.

End of Chapter Ninety

Related

Chapter Ninety-One



At midday Yuan Gun Gun handed out reports, and she received a secret delivery, a box of chocolates. On the way back to Hao Yan Che's office, she ate and shared the chocolates with everyone.

Unfortunately, Hao Yan Che opened his office door before Yuan Gun Gun had a chance to hide the evidence.

'Show me what's behind your back,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun slowly gave Hao Yan Che the box of chocolates. He sat back at his desk, read the letter attached to the box of chocolates and fumed.

'Yuan Gun Gun, do my words fly like the wind through your ears?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'I told you, you're not allowed to receive gifts from other men,' Hao Yan Che said and thumped his desk.

Yi Tu secretly glanced at the letter, 'I hope Gun Gun will always be sweet and loveable like this box of chocolates from your big brother San Yuan.'

Yi Tu smiled, because Ning San Yuan didn't forget Yuan Gun Gun even though Ning San Yuan was transferred to Canberra.

'Not right,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You said I'm not allowed to receive flowers from other men.'

Hao Yan Che stood, and Yuan Gun Gun took a step back.

'It's true,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che threw the box of chocolates outside his office. It was good timing, Hao Yan Que caught it at the door.

‘The CEO of Hao Yan’s company is a welcoming man,’ Hao Yan Que said sarcastically.

Hao Yan Che ignored his parents who stood at the door. Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap, and pinched her bottom for playing on words with him.

‘Ow... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and wiggled her bottom on Hao Yan Che’s lap like a fish flapping on land.

‘Xiao Che, stop,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the goddess coming toward her. The goddess had long white hair and familiar violet eyes.

‘What is it?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Xiao Che, how can you bully Gun Gun?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Aunty, do you know me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Of course aunty knows Gun Gun,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Don’t you remember aunty?’

Qiu Li Luo stood beside Yuan Gun Gun, Yuan Gun Gun shook her head and hugged Hao Yan Che.

‘Gun Gun, take a closer look at me,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked closely at the goddess, and remembered a distant memory.

‘Xiao Gun Gun, do you remember now?’ Qiu Li Luo asked and stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘Aunty Li?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘My smart Gun Gun, it’s aunty Li.’

Qiu Li Luo caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s adorable face. Qiu Li Luo thought years past too quickly, her little daughter-in-law had grown into a beautiful young woman.

‘Gun Gun, do you remember what you promised aunty Li?’ Qiu Li Luo asked. ‘You promised to marry aunty Li’s son.’

‘Snow white werewolf,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked suspiciously at Qiu Li Luo.

‘Yes,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Gun Gun remembers aunty Li is the snow white werewolf.’

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off Hao Yan Che’s lap and hugged Qiu Li Luo.

‘Aunty Li, can you turn into the snow white werewolf for me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che was displeased Yuan Gun Gun was hugging Qiu Li Luo.

‘Today aunty Li can’t turn into the snow white werewolf but...’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo looked at Hao Yan Che, and she whispered a secret in Yuan Gun Gun’s ear.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s true,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes turned into love hearts and stared at Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che felt like Qiu Li Luo caused trouble for him.

‘Aunty Li, you have white hair and violet eyes like young master,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Is young master your big brother?’

Qiu Li Luo laughed happily to hear Yuan Gun Gun’s praise at Hao Yan Che’s expense.

Hao Yan Que pulled Qiu Li Luo out of Yuan Gun Gun’s arms. He hugged Qiu Li Luo, and mocked Hao Yan Che.

‘Son, you’ve aged,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun, and pinched her face.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, you need to get your eyes checked,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s chest and rubbed her face.

‘Gun Gun, aunty Li is Xiao Che’s mummy,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Yuan Gun Gun froze in Hao Yan Che's arms, and her widened big round eyes looked blankly at Qiu Li Luo.

Hao Yan Che scoffed, and Yuan Gun Gun smiled at him.

'Dad, mum, why are you two here?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Qiu Li Luo gave Hao Yan Che a werewolf ring.

'It's time,' Qi Li Luo said.

End of Chapter Ninety-One

Related

Chapter Ninety-Two



Hao Yan Che didn't accept the werewolf ring from Qiu Li Luo.

Qiu Li Luo put the werewolf ring on Hao Yan Che's desk.

'It's yours,' Qiu Li Luo said.

'There's never been a time I wanted it,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Xiao Che, this is your fate,' Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Qiu Li Luo. He picked up the werewolf ring, and put it on Yuan Gun Gun's hand. Then he held Yuan Gun Gun's face and kissed her lips. He bit his tongue and Yuan Gun Gun's tongue, she cried out and tasted blood in her mouth.

After Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun's blood mixed in their mouths, he let go of her. Yuan Gun Gun gasped for air and looked confusedly at Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che ran a finger over the mixed blood on his lips, and used the mixed blood to write an ancient inscription on Yuan Gun Gun's forehead.

'Put the ring on my left thumb,' Hao Yan Che said to Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the small werewolf ring on her hand. She doubted the ring would fit on Hao Yan Che's left thumb.

After a moment of hesitation, Yuan Gun Gun put the werewolf ring on Hao Yan Che's left thumb. The blood ancient inscription on Yuan Gun Gun's forehead emitted a bright white light, her body absorbed the white light and the blood ancient inscription became invisible.

'Dad, mum, you two can leave now,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Mummy wants to stay...' Qiu Li Luo said.

'Let's go,' Hao Yan Que said.

‘Hao Yan Que, wait...’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Que held Qiu Li Luo’s hand, and pulled her outside of Hao Yan Che’s office.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu bowed to Hao Yan Che and they left his office too.

After the door closed, Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s body tightly against his body, and he roughly kissed her lips. She wrapped her arms around his neck and kissed him back. A long time later, he licked her lips, and let go of her lips to let her breathe.

‘Why did you bite me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If you dare receive another gift from another man, I’ll bite you to death,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Suddenly Yuan Gun Gun’s head felt dizzy, and she pressed her hand on her forehead.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bedroom.

‘Young master, my head feels dizzy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che laid Yuan Gun Gun on the bed, and pulled the bedsheet over her body.

‘Sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun clutched Hao Yan Che’s arm.

‘I don’t want to stay here by myself,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che got into bed, laid under the bedsheet and hugged Yuan Gun Gun. She closed her eyes and fell into a deep sleep. He caressed her back, and looked at the blood ancient inscription on her forehead that other people couldn’t see.

‘Dummy rice ball,’ Hao Yan Che whispered affectionately. ‘I gave up my freedom for you.’

Three days later, Yuan Gun Gun woke up from the deep sleep. She opened her eyes and was disappointed Hao Yan Che wasn’t lying next to her. She got out of the bed, went to the bathroom and took a bath.

One hour later, Yuan Gun Gun dressed and walked out of the bathroom. She

was happy to see Hao Yan Che sitting on the bed.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to the bed, and Hao Yan Che held her on his lap.

‘Where do you feel pain?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘My head is dizzy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘There are stars spinning around my head, my stomach is hungry and my whole body aches.’

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s wet hair. His heart hurt, because her body was still in pain after receiving his blood three days ago.

‘I’m really hungry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to eat.’

Hao Yan Che called Mrs Chen on the phone.

‘Aunt Chen, cook light meals and bring it here...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to eat the dish from last time,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What dish?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘The dish you called pigs’ fodder,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Aunty Chen, cook the tofu and duck legs broth and apple dates congee,’ Hao Yan Che instructed and hung up the phone.

End of Chapter Ninety-Two

Related

Chapter Ninety-Three



Note: Chapter ninety-three has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter ninety-three.

Chapter Ninety-Three

Hao Yan Che dried Yuan Gun Gun's wet hair.

'Sleep,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I want to eat,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Sleep,' Hao Yan Che said. He patted Yuan Gun Gun's back. 'I'll wake you up when the dishes are cooked.'

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, and drifted off to sleep.

After the dishes were cooked, Hao Yan Che woke up Yuan Gun Gun and he fed her the dishes she wanted to eat.

For a week, Yuan Gun Gun's body drifted in and out of consciousness. Hao Yan Che stayed by her side, and fed her during the times she was awake.

It took Yuan Gun Gun's body a week to recover after receiving Hao Yan Che's blood.

'Why are you giving me that look?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun sat up on the bed.

'Young master,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'What did you call me?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Che,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'Good,' Hao Yan Che said.

‘You and aunty Li can turn into snow white werewolves,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.
‘Are you and aunty Li humans or demons?’

Hao Yan Che looked into Yuan Gun Gun’s curious eyes. She behaved differently to other people. She was curious about his roots instead of being scared of him.

Yuan Gun Gun straddled Hao Yan Che’s thighs, and used a towel to dry his wet hair as an incentive for him to answer her question.

If Hao Yan Che didn’t know Yuan Gun Gun had an innocent mind, he would have thought she was seducing him.

‘Che, why aren’t you saying anything?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun focused on drying Hao Yan Che’s hair that she didn’t realise she dangled her breasts in front of Hao Yan Che’s mouth. But Hao Yan Che noticed. His mouth opened on its own and bit one breast.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s chest, and she fell onto the floor.

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

Hao Yan Che jumped out of bed to help Yuan Gun Gun up. But she got up on her own, and took two steps back.

‘Stay away,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s your fault.’

‘I didn’t ask you to push my chest,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If someone bit your chest, would you do nothing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head and her bottom.

‘If someone dangled their chest in front of your mouth, would you do nothing?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned red from anger and embarrassment.

‘I let your intention to kick me out of bed slide but you dare to raise your voice at me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘How should I punish you?’

Yuan Gun Gun took another step back.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you coming here or not?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You dare disobey me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around to run. But Hao Yan Che caught her, and slung her body over his shoulder.

‘Put me down,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che dropped Yuan Gun Gun on the bed. He straddled her thighs, held her breasts and bit each breast hard.

‘Um... ah... no...’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured and her face turned bright red.

Hao Yan Che stopped biting Yuan Gun Gun’s breasts, stretched his legs and laid on top of her.

‘Does it matter if I’m a human or a demon?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It doesn’t matter,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m just curious.’

‘Are you saying it doesn’t matter what I am, it’s not important to you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It doesn’t matter if you’re human or a demon, because you’ll still be my young master.’

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s sincere eyes.

‘If I guess correctly whether you’re a human or a demon, will you let me rest at home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Dream on,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Ninety-Three

Related

Chapter Ninety-Four



Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun's lips and pinched her bottom.

'Um... young master don't pinch,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you dare to call me by the wrong name again?' Hao Yan Che said.

'There's no reason to be angry,' Yuan Gun Gun mumbled. 'I'm used to calling you young master.'

'What?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Hao Yan Che and played with his long fingers.

'Che, you didn't answer my question,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Are you human or a demon?'

'I don't know,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Oh... you're half human and half demon,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun's bottom and smiled at her.

'Don't pinch,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why shouldn't I?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'If you keep pinching, I can't have babies,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Who said?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'My mummy,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Every time my daddy pinches my mummy's bottom, she says she can't have babies.'

'Kiss me,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Hao Yan Che's cheek. He held her face and kissed her lips. He let her go before he dipped his hardness into her honeypot.

‘Sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to see you turn into a snow white werewolf,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Just once,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you ask again, I’ll lock you in the dark room.’

Yuan Gun Gun closed her mouth, and Hao Yan Che hugged her tighter.

‘Che, when you’re a werewolf, do you like eating pet food?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Like my kitten Meow Meow loves pet food. I had to change different pet food brands for Meow Meow because Meow Meow is constipated after eating pet food.’

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

‘I’m here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’m going to pinch you to death,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hours later, it was the end of another noisy night.

At nine in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun walked out of the master bedroom.

‘Gun Gun, what happened to your face?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Young master pinched my face,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, what happened to your neck?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Young master, bit my neck,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yi Tu laughed at himself for asking foolish questions.

‘Are you standing here because you’re waiting for me to serve you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun took steps away from Hao Yan Che.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’ll pinch me.’

‘I’ll give you one last chance to come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to Hao Yan Che, and he carried her to the dining room.

At the dining table, Yuan Gun Gun covered her head.

‘Don’t hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun on his lap, wiped her teary cheeks and put a glass of warm milk in her hands.

‘Drink,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun drank the milk while Hao Yan Che looked at the faint bruises on her face. He regretted pinching her face last night. He didn’t use force, but it still bruised her face.

Yuan Gun Gun put the empty glass on the dining table, and looked at Hao Yan Che like he bullied her all day and night.

‘I’ll let you eat fondue and ice-cream today,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s gloomy face turned into a sunny face.

‘I want a big serving,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘OK,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun forgot all about her pain from last night, and hugged Hao Yan Che.

‘You’re the best,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu pitied the easily coaxed Yuan Gun Gun. They wondered where on earth she came from.

End of Chapter Ninety-Four

Related

Chapter Ninety-Five



‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Wow,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘There are dumplings, buns, tripe, ribs and prawn rolls. Auntie Chen is the best. She made all my favorite dishes.’

Hao Yan Che smiled at the way Yuan Gun Gun forgot all her grievances at the sight of food. He was happy to have Yuan Gun Gun in his life, and asked himself if it was a symptom of love.

Three blissful months later, Hao Yan Che escorted Yuan Gun Gun to the car after a work day.

‘Che, where are you taking me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Somewhere to torture you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No reason,’ Hao Yan Che said.

During the car trip Yuan Gun Gun was too anxious to talk.

‘We’re here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun refused to get out of the car.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I won’t eat junk food again.’

Hao Yan Che held the gullible Yuan Gun Gun’s hand and led her inside the boutique.

‘Mr Hao,’ the shop assistants greeted.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘She’s all yours.’

‘Yes Mr Hao,’ the shop assistants said.

Yuan Gun Gun clutched onto Hao Yan Che's arm.

'Young master, don't make me suffer,' Yuan Gun Gun pleaded.

'I'll wait for you outside,' Hao Yan Che said.

The three beautiful shop assistants took Yuan Gun Gun to a private room.

Three hours later, a blushing Yuan Gun Gun stepped out of the private room.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun's violet dress that matched his violet eyes. His brows creased, the dress accentuated her body and showed too much cleavage for his liking. At the back of her dress was a butterfly bow. She looked alluring and dainty in the dress. The violet heels elongated her milky smooth legs. On her hands were two thin violet gloves. He looked at her face and frowned, because makeup enhanced her natural beauty.

Yuan Gun Gun fiddled her fingers. She was nervous about Hao Yan Che's reaction.

'Change the dress,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun lowered her head and quietly cried. She was sad she didn't satisfy Hao Yan Che's expectations.

The three shop assistants were surprised. They chose the best dress that suited Yuan Gun Gun's beautiful complexion.

'Mr Hao, why aren't you satisfied with this dress?' the brunette asked.

Hao Yan Che and the brunette shop assistant had a silent standoff.

The blonde shop assistant went to get a violet shawl. Then she draped it over Yuan Gun Gun's shoulders and tied a butterfly knot in front of Yuan Gun Gun's chest.

'Mr Hao, what about now?' the blonde asked.

Hao Yan Che nodded his head at Yi Tu. Then Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's hand and took her outside the boutique.

Yi Tu gave the blonde shop assistant a cheque.

'My young master is satisfied with yours and the other two women's artful skills,' Yi Tu said.

‘Mr Hao is a generous man,’ the blonde said.

Yi Tu smiled and left the boutique.

The brunette shop assistant looked at the signed blank cheque the blonde assistant held and gasped.

‘Mr Hao is a generous man,’ the brunette said.

‘Big sister,’ the raven called the blonde. ‘Didn’t you want to ask Mr Hao if he’ll let his beautiful girlfriend enter the national beauty contest?’

‘Why should I ask when we know Mr Hao wouldn’t give his permission?’ the blonde asked.

‘Big sister,’ the brunette called the blonde. ‘Mr Hao is a strange man. Other men would be proud to have their girlfriend win a beauty contest. But Mr Hao doesn’t want to draw attention to his beautiful girlfriend.’

‘One day you’ll understand,’ the blonde said to the brunette.

End of Chapter Ninety-Five

Related

Chapter Ninety-Six



Hao Yan Che brought Yuan Gun Gun to a classy hotel reception. The formal evening function was organised by Zhao's company.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the elegantly dressed guests and suited waiters and waitresses. Yuan Gun Gun thought everyone at the hotel reception looked dazzling. But the way everyone gawked at Yuan Gun Gun made her scared.

Hao Yan Che wrapped an arm around Yuan Gun Gun's waist, held her close to him and let her hide her face on his chest.

The guests were surprised Hao Yan Che accepted Zhao Rong Fen's invitation. But they were stunned Hao Yan Che not only made an appearance, he brought along his beautiful girlfriend too.

Yuan Gun Gun tilted her head back, and looked at Hao Yan Che's eyes.

'Che, why did you bring me here?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'You never attend formal events like this. I don't like it here.'

Hao Yan Che didn't care about the guests staring at him and Yuan Gun Gun. He kissed Yuan Gun Gun's cheek.

'Later I'll let you eat dessert at home,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che wanted to bite Yuan Gun Gun's adorable face, but he held back because of where they were.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's waist while the guests greeted him and praised Yuan Gun Gun.

'Che, I want to go to the bathroom,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. He stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair. 'Do you know the way?'

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My daddy took me to here before.’

‘You can go,’ Hao Yan Che said and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s waist.

Hao Yan Ming had ebony hair. He greeted Hao Yan Che after he saw Yuan Gun Gun left Hao Yan Che’s side.

‘Why aren’t you dead yet?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You’ll be heartbroken if I die,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

‘Find a place far away from me to die,’ Hao Yan Que said. ‘Don’t contaminate my eyes.’

‘CEO Hao, you’re icy as usual,’ Hao Yan Ming said. ‘If you truly don’t need me anymore, why are you here?’

‘I came to see if you died yet,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It looks like someone with your hateful face won’t die easily.’

‘I’m back in my district,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

Hao Yan Ming raised his wine glass and clinked Hao Yan Che’s wine glass.

Yuan Gun Gun came out of the bathroom, and she was happily surprised to see Luo Qing Qing. She ran toward Luo Qing Qing, but took a step back after she heard someone insulting Luo Qing Qing.

‘Luo Qing Qing, you slut,’ Yu Cheng Su said. ‘Will it kill you if you don’t seduce the men around you? You’re nothing but dirt.’

‘Yu Cheng Su, is an eloquent name,’ Luo Qing Qing said. ‘Too bad it’s wasted on you. No wonder Jian Qi wants to come to me. Don’t you own a mirror at home? Thanks to you, today I realised how exceptional I am after standing next to you.’

Yu Cheng Su didn’t have a combat to win against Luo Qing Qing. Yu Cheng Su raised her arm to slap Luo Qing Qing’s face, but a woman in a violet dress suddenly stood in front of Luo Qing Qing.

‘Stay away from Qing Qing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Luo Qing Qing recognised her adorable little savior was Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Get lost bitch,’ Yu Cheng Su said.

Yu Cheng Su vented her anger on Yuan Gun Gun. She pulled Yuan Gun Gun's hair.

'Ah... it hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Let go of my hair.'

Luo Qing Qing was about to make Yu Cheng Su regret hurting Yuan Gun Gun. But a shadow appeared, pulled Yuan Gun Gun to their chest and kicked Yu Cheng Su onto the floor.

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che and cried on his shoulder. He stroked her hair and glared at Yu Cheng Su.

Luo Qing Qing looked at Yu Cheng Su who was lying on the floor and spitting blood. Luo Qing Qing thought Yuan Gun Gun's man was a merciless man.

'Che, she insulted Qing Qing and attacked me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's OK,' Hao Yan Che said. He wiped Yuan Gun Gun's tears. 'You're safe.'

Whispers of Hao Yan Che defending his beautiful girlfriend spread like fire among the guests. That night Hao Yan Che unintentionally stole Zhao Rong Fen's thunder at the hotel reception.

Yuan Gun Gun looked up at Luo Qing Qing.

'Qing Qing, are you OK?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I'm OK,' Luo Qing Qing said. 'Thanks to Gun Gun.'

The bystanders thought Luo Qing Qing's words were laughable. One glance at Yuan Gun Gun and Luo Qing Qing, and anyone could see who needed protecting.

'Qing Qing, you saved me at school,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But I didn't get a chance to repay you.'

'Tonight you saved me,' Luo Qing Qing said and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

Hao Yan Che didn't care about anyone else. He only wanted to take Yuan Gun Gun home.

'Let's go home,' Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Ninety-Six

Related

Chapter Ninety-Seven



‘Bye Qing Qing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and waved bye to Luo Qing Qing.

‘Bye Gun Gun,’ Luo Qing Qing said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand and they walked together to the front entrance. Luo Qing Qing walked to the buffet table, and happily ate. But none of guests dared to go near Yu Cheng Su, because they were scared to offend Hao Yan Che.

Zhao Rong Fen stopped Han Yan Che at the front entrance.

‘CEO Hao, I’m sorry about what happened tonight,’ Zhao Rong Fen said.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered what her daddy told her, the world was unfair. Hao Yan Che kicked a person, but Zhao Rong Fen had to apologise to Hao Yan Che.

‘CEO Hao, I hope you’ll accept my sincere apologies,’ Zhao Rong Fen said and bowed.

Yuan Gun Gun thought it wasn’t right for an elder like Zhao Rong Fen who looked like a fifty-year-old man to bow to a younger man.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun whispered in Hao Yan Che’s ear.

‘CEO Zhao, you don’t need to be like this,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s not your fault.’

‘CEO Hao is someone who knows right from wrong,’ Zhao Rong Fen said Zhao Rong Fen’s back was sweaty. He was relieved Hao Yan Che wasn’t angry at him.

‘Che, let’s go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che led Yuan Gun Gun to the car. Yi Tu opened the passenger door,

and they sat in the back seat.

Later that night at the Hao Mansion's study room, Yuan Gun Gun sat quietly on a chair.

'Are you mute?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'It's Miss Lu's fault,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Miss Lu couldn't outwit Qing Qing so Miss Lu wanted to hit Qing Qing.'

'You don't need to play a hero every time you see someone in a fight,' Hao Yan Che said.

'But Qing Qing saved me at school,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'She's capable of defending herself and other people,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Do you think you can do the same?'

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then why did you get involved in another person's business?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked down at the floor.

'If you know you're weak then don't play the hero,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Go to bed.'

Yuan Gun Gun left the study room in tears.

'Come out,' Hao Yan Che said to Hao Yan Ming.

Hao Yan Ming stepped out of the shadows.

'Your senses are still sharp,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'I thought someone in love like you would lose all their senses.'

Hao Yan Che scoffed.

'How can you treat your woman like that?' Hao Yan Ming asked. 'She only had good intentions. You made her cry pitifully.'

'Someone who can't defend themselves need to avoid trouble,' Hao Yan Che said.

'She has you, why does she need to know how to defend herself?' Hao Yan

Ming asked.

‘Did you come here to lecture me how I should treat my woman?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m not that free,’ Hao Yan Ming said. ‘I came here to prepare for your funeral.’

Hao Yan Che walked to the door.

‘How hateful,’ Hao Yan Ming mimicked a female’s voice. ‘You don’t know how to be gallant.’

Hao Yan Che walked outside the study room, slammed the door, and Hao Yan Ming smiled at the closed door.

In the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun took a bath and changed into a nightshirt. Then she locked herself in the bathroom and cried. She only wanted to help Luo Qing Qing, because Luo Qing Qing saved her at school. But Hao Yan Che scolded her heartlessly. She felt like she was useless standing next to someone strong like Hao Yan Che.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, come out here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun wiped her tears, and opened the bathroom door.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s pink face from crying.

‘Did you stay in the bathroom to suffocate yourself?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then why did you lock the bathroom door?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter Ninety-Seven

Related

Chapter Ninety-Eight



‘Why do you look like I bullied you tonight?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun escaped Hao Yan Che’s embrace, and took a step back.

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m someone who can’t protect myself so how can I protect other people? Even if I can’t protect myself, I didn’t ask young master to protect me. I’m someone who likes getting involved in another person’s business. I’m someone who can’t judge my own strengths and weaknesses. I’m sorry if I embarrassed young master. Next time you don’t need to save me, and let me face the consequences of my actions.’

Han Yan Che clapped his hands.

‘Congratulations Yuan Gun Gun,’ Han Yan Che said. ‘You have guts. I should reward you.’

Yuan Gun Gun regretted what she said, and took another step back.

‘Why are you stepping away from me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. He slowly stepped toward Yuan Gun Gun. ‘Are you scared of me?’

‘Young master...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s back touched a wall, she had nowhere to escape.

‘How should I reward you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che caged Yuan Gun Gun’s body between his body and the wall.

Hao Yan Che was angry at Yuan Gun Gun’s recklessness. But he didn’t want to take it out on Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I know I’m useless,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t suit being by your side. I know I can’t protect myself and others, and I overestimate my own strengths. But I couldn’t stand by and watch someone insult Qing Qing. You’re right, I’m useless.’

I'm sorry.'

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried on her knees. She looked like a child who was scolded. Hao Yan Che's anger diminished. He thought the way she looked vulnerable made her endearing.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you want me to punish you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bed.

'You're too noisy,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun on the bed, and wiped her tears.

'Ugly,' Hao Yan Che said. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun's bottom. 'Why are you such a dummy by standing still and letting someone hit you? If you want to interfere in another person's business then you need to go find a mountain to lean on. Understand?'

'At first I wanted to go find someone to help,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But I didn't want to see someone hit Qing Qing, and I forgot to get help. Besides, I didn't know anyone there to ask to help me.'

'You don't know anyone there?' Hao Yan Che asked. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun's bottom again. 'Don't you know how to look for me?'

'I know you don't like interfering in another person's business,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'So I was too scared to go find you.'

'Don't you know how to beg me?' Hao Yan Che asked and bit Yuan Gun Gun's ear.

'If I beg you, would you have helped me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Depends on my mood,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Then it'll be useless to beg you,' Yuan Gun Gun mumbled. 'I've lived with you for a long time. I've never seen you in a good mood.'

'What?' Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s lips hovered over Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. She thought his face was always beautiful.

‘Little Chub, your face is all red,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

‘I... I’m not thinking anything weird,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What weird thoughts?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che’s lips lightly touched Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. She gulped. He smiled and caressed her back. His lips touched her lips again, and they kissed each other.

‘Right now I’m not in a bad mood,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter Ninety-Eight

Related

Chapter Ninety-Nine



‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You protected me yet I got mad at you. I’m sorry I embarrassed you. But even if I had to choose again, I would have done the same thing. Because my mummy said if someone saves you, you need to repay them... young master, are you angry?’

‘Next time, you have to come find me first,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you don’t, I’ll break your legs.’

Hao Yan Che got out of bed.

‘Did you hear me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che walked into the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che sounded like he would always be with her to protect her. The thought of them always being together made her happy and smile like a fool.

At nine in the morning, Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Che’s hand to the dining room.

Yuan Gun Gun greeted everyone warmly and they smiled back at her.

‘Why didn’t you say good morning to me?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘You... why aren’t you wearing...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hid her face on Hao Yan Che’s chest. She didn’t dare look at the man who wore a shirt but no pants in the dining room.

‘Yes I have a beautiful body,’ Qi Tu said. ‘But if you react that strongly seeing me, I’ll get a big head.’

Qi Tu sat on a chair. He drank a glass of water, and kept his eyes on Yuan Gun

Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to do. Hao Yan Che held her on his lap, and he put a glass of warm milk in her hands to drink like usual.

Yuan Gun Gun drank the milk, and secretly glanced at the strange man.

'Little girl, I'm Qi Tu,' Qi Tu said. 'I'm your young master's friend. Let me hear you call me big brother.'

'Big brother Qi Tu,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'If your young master doesn't need you anymore, you can come to me,' Qi Tu said. 'I'll love you.'

Qi Tu wasn't scared of Hao Yan Che's murderous eyes, he rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che like she was abandoned.

'He escaped from a mental hospital,' Hao Yan Che said and patted Yuan Gun Gun's bottom.

Qi Tu spat out water, stood and wiped water off his body.

'Little girl, it must be your good influence if your young master knows how to joke,' Qi Tu said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know where to look or what to think.

'Eat,' Hao Yan Che said to Qi Tu and put chopsticks in Yuan Gun Gun's hands.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, and began eating.

Qi Tu sat, quickly ate his full and read the front page newspaper article.

'Mr Hao, CEO of Hao Yan's company,' Qi Tu read. 'Mr Hao attended Zhao's company dinner function with his beautiful girlfriend Miss Yuan, the heiress of Yuan's company. The unlucky Miss Yu initiated an ugly confrontation with Miss Yuan outside the bathroom. Mr Hao protected Miss Yuan.'

Qi Tu looked at the photos of Hao Yan Che kissing Yuan Gun Gun, Hao Yan Che kicking Yu Cheng Su to the floor and blood coming out of Yu Cheng Su's mouth.

'Mr Hao's close confidantes revealed that Mr Hao is planning a wedding with

Miss Yuan,’ Qi Tu said. ‘Little girl, you’ve become a miraculous angel.’

Yuan Gun Gun ate and didn’t understand what Qi Tu meant.

‘Miss Yuan, is a beautiful bright star,’ Qi Tu read. ‘Her eyes are hypnotizing, and her lips are luscious. Her face is like a lotus bud opening. The longer a person gaze at her, the more enchanting she looks. She’s an innocent butterfly... how poetic.’

‘Did someone write that about me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Qi Tu said and passed the newspaper to Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the photos of Hao Yan Che. She was relieved he didn’t look angry in the photos.

‘The Yuan Gun Gun in the article doesn’t sound like me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Of course not,’ Qi Tu said. ‘Yuan Gun Gun in real life is more loveable and genuine.’

End of Chapter Ninety-Nine

Related

Chapter One Hundred



‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You have a scandal because of me.’

‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Young master, why are you pinching my face?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What did you call me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’s the last reminder,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘The next time you call me by the wrong name again, you can’t eat dessert for a month.’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

At the Yuan Mansion’s living room, Yuan Ting Liu was sitting on the sofa with Feng Du Du.

‘Do you like Hao Yan Che or Ting Du?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘I like you,’ Feng Du Du said.

Yuan Ting Liu pinched Feng Du Du’s nose.

‘Out of Hao Yan Che and Ting Du, who do you want our daughter to be with?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Yuan Ting Liu waited a while for Feng Du Du’s answer.

‘Both are rare men,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘I’m happy for either of them to be with

our daughter.'

Yuan Ting Liu was right about Feng Du Du answering that way.

'Ting Liu, who do you want our daughter to marry?' Feng Du Du asked.

'I want the man Gun Gun loves to be her husband,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Ting Liu, what if we're worried for nothing?' Feng Du Du said. 'I heard Hao Yan Che's a cold cruel man. In the past he hasn't been seen with a woman. I don't know if our dummy Gun Gun is the kind of woman he can love.'

'Gun Gun doesn't need to be smart to be addictive,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'To someone she's opium. Look at me, I love opium.'

'Are you calling me a dummy?' Feng Du Du asked.

'No,' Yuan Ting Liu said. He kissed Feng Du Du's forehead. 'I'm declaring my love for you.'

'Then you're my ice man,' Feng Du Du said.

'Um, I'm your ice man,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Ting Liu, I hope Gun Gun will be happy like us,' Feng Du Du said.

'She will be happy,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

At Hao Yan's company at twenty-five to one, Yuan Gun Gun walked to Hao Yan Che's desk.

'Che, it's time to eat lunch,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm hungry.'

Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun sit on his lap, and Yi Tu went to get lunch for them.

'Che, are you and big brother Qi Tu close friends?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't answer.

'You and big brother Qi Tu don't like wearing clothes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'My mummy said birds of the same feather flock together. So you and big brother Qi Tu must be close friends.'

'What about you?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'You eat, sleep, eat and sleep like a pig. Are you close friends with pigs?'

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun's pout into a smile.

'Am I wrong?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Does it make you happy to bully me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was always dazzled by Hao Yan Che's smile.

Hao Yan Che loved his dummy rice ball. He kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips.

'Um... Che, big brother Jia Tu is here,' Yuan Gun Gun whispered.

Jia Tu bowed and left Hao Yan Che's office.

'Che, if you're always like this, how can I face them?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips again to monopolise her thoughts.

Yuan Gun Gun liked kissing Hao Yan Che. She liked Hao Yan Che more than Na Liu Ting Du and her daddy. She didn't know what her kind of like toward Hao Yan Che was.

Hao Yan Che didn't know what he was waiting for. Yuan Gun Gun belonged to him.

End of Chapter One hundred

Related

Chapter 101



Note: Chapter 101 has mature content. If readers are not of a mature age, skip chapter 101.

Chapter 101

Hao Yan Che unbuttoned Yuan Gun Gun's dress, and pulled her dress to the floor. He kissed her collar bone, and caressed her back. She gripped his shoulders and pressed her body closer to his body.

'Um... Che...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che unhooked Yuan Gun Gun's bra.

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun knew she should stop Hao Yan Che, but her body flowed with his lead.

Hao Yan Che took off Yuan Gun Gun's bra, and nibbled her left breast.

'Um... Che... can't,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Don't fuss,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun's right breast.

'Um...' Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Yuan Gun Gun blushed and her eyes were misty. Hao Yan Che pulled her underwear down her legs.

'Um... no,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her breasts with one arm and her free hand tried to pull her underwear up.

Hao Yan Che used one hand to hold Yuan Gun Gun's hands behind her back,

and his other hand took off her underwear. Her naked body was a moving picture in his heart.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was embarrassed Hao Yan Che was staring at her naked body.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips, and his hand stroked her soft moist honeypot.

‘Um... no... someone will see,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No one will see,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che’s hand continued to caress between Yuan Gun Gun’s legs.

‘No...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s shy teary eyes inflamed Hao Yan Che’s desire for her. He sealed her lips with a deep kiss. When she closed her eyes and only thought about him, the door opened.

‘Little girl, your big brother Qi Tu...’ Qi Tu said.

Qi Tu’s eyes were treated to the sight of Yuan Gun Gun’s bare back, and Hao Yan Che in the middle of unzipping his bulged pants.

‘Get out!’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che grabbed a letter opener, and threw it at Qi Tu’s ear. It embedded on the door one millimetre from Qi Tu’s ear.

‘You two continue,’ Qi Tu said. ‘I’ll put a do not disturb sign outside the door.’

Qi Tu escaped Hao Yan Che’s office before Hao Yan Che teared his organs into pieces.

Hao Yan Che’s bottom half wanted to continue. But his upper half won after he saw Yuan Gun Gun’s doom and gloom face. He helped her put on her underwear and clothes.

‘The expression on your face is hard to look at,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Someone saw,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I know,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You know?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Big brothers Yi Tu, Jia Tu and Qi Tu all saw. What if they tell aunty Chen and everyone else? What will they think? It’s all your fault.’

‘They won’t say anything,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘They will,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘They’ll say I seduced my young master... that I’m a bad person and I have an ugly heart.’

‘Don’t forget there’s no cure for having a dummy brain,’ Hao Yan Che said and wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s tears off her face.

‘You... my reputation is gone because of you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You sleep with me every day,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Your reputation was gone long ago.’

‘If my daddy finds out, he’ll beat me to death,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Has your dad ever hit you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun.

End of Chapter 101

Related

Chapter 102



‘But if my daddy finds out, he’ll hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ve seen it on TV.’

‘I thought your parents must have hit you when you were little girl for you to have a dummy brain,’ Hao Yan Che teased. ‘But now I know the heavens made you this way.’

‘It’s not my fault,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I inherit my mummy’s intelligence but none from my daddy.’

‘I see,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Your parents must have a hard life.’

‘What do you mean?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Think about it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are you in a good mood now?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Average,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to request something,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I really miss my parents,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Can I go home to visit them?’

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun grew puppy ears again.

‘I haven’t seen them for a long time,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m begging you to let me see them.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to be away from him.

‘I’ll come home at night,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll ask my mummy to make

delicious food for you.'

'Do you want to see your parents or do you want to see Na Liu Ting Du?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I want to see everyone,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But big brother Du moved out. He doesn't live at home anymore.'

'You're not allowed to see him,' Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun's bottom.

'I won't see him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He's busy at work.'

'If he's not busy, will you run to him?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You have to come home before midnight,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Thank you Che,' Yuan Gun Gun said and kissed Hao Yan Che's cheek.

'Even if you come home one second after midnight, you'll be punished,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I promise I'll come home on time,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'll go get ready now.'

'What's the rush?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Eat lunch before you go.'

'OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

At three in the afternoon, Yi Tu escorted Yuan Gun Gun to the Yuan Mansion. In the car, her face didn't stop blushing.

'Gun Gun, you don't have to be embarrassed,' Yi Tu said. 'We're all adults.'

Yuan Gun Gun regretted there was no hole for her to crawl in. Yi Tu caught her and Hao Yan Che in another compromising position. During lunch she accidentally dropped tomato sauce on Hao Yan Che's desk. When Yi Tu walked into Hao Yan Che's office, her bottom was facing Hao Yan Che's face and she was bending over Hao Yan Che's desk to clean. Yi Tu said that she and Hao Yan Che could take all the time they wanted, and Yi Tu would wait in the car for her.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped out of the car the moment the car stopped in front of the Yuan Mansion.

‘Bye big brother Yi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yi Tu waved bye and Yuan Gun Gun ran into the Yuan Mansion.

‘Daddy, mummy, I’m home!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Feng Du Du ran downstairs, kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s face and hugged Yuan Gun Gun tightly.

‘Gun Gun, my little treasure is home,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Mummy really missed you.’

‘I really missed mummy too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Feng Du Du took Yuan Gun Gun to the living room, and Yuan Gun Gun was surprised to see Na Liu Ting Du sitting on the sofa.

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You sound like you don’t recognise me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat next to Na Liu Ting Du, and kissed his cheek.

‘Daddy said big brother Du is busy at work,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I didn’t think you’ll be home.’

Na Liu Ting Du was sad Yuan Gun Gun didn’t hug him like usual. He forced himself to smile and rubbed her head.

‘I knew you’re visiting dad and mum today,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘So I made time to come home to see you. Did you miss me?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du pulled Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap and kissed her cheek. She felt awkward and uncomfortable sitting on his lap.

Na Liu Ting Du sensed Yuan Gun Gun sat rigid on his lap.

‘You’re heavier than last time,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Have you been happy lately?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Na Liu Ting Du said but there was no warmth in his eyes.

Yuan Ting Liu entered the living room, and was happy to see his little girl.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, do you remember your daddy?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

End of Chapter 102

Related

Chapter 103



Yuan Gun Gun jumped off Na Liu Ting Du's lap and ran to Yuan Ting Liu.

'Of course,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She hugged Yuan Ting Liu. 'Daddy is my daddy. I really missed daddy.'

'I thought you forgot you're daddy because you didn't see me in the living room,' Yuan Ting Liu teased.

'Who said?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I called daddy at the door. It's daddy who forgot me.'

Yuan Ting Liu noticed Hao Yan Che's kiss marks on his little girl's neck.

'Daddy,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know why Yuan Ting Liu was quiet.

Na Liu Ting Du saw the kiss marks on Yuan Gun Gun's neck too. He picked up a cookie from the coffee table and put it in his sour mouth.

Feng Du Du sensed the tension in the living room.

'Gun Gun, come shopping with mummy,' Feng Du Du said. 'Mummy will cook dinner for you before you leave.'

Yuan Gun Gun smiled, and ran to Feng Du Du.

'Yes mummy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ting Liu, Ting Du, do you two want to join us?' Feng Du Du asked.

'No,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'We'll give you and Gun Gun privacy to spend time together.'

Feng Du Du knew Yuan Ting Liu's answer before she asked.

'OK,' Feng Du Du said. 'We'll see you and Ting Du at dinner time.'

‘Bye daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Bye big brother Du.’

Only two solemn men were left in the living room.

‘Kiss marks,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Na Liu Ting Du heard Yuan Ting Liu state the truth and the pain in his heart increased.

‘Ting Du, Gun Gun has always been a simple girl,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘She doesn’t need designer clothes, jewellery and gourmet food. Do you understand?’

‘Dad, I understand,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘But right now she’s receiving the best of everything.’

‘In the past I had doubts,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘But now I’m certain that Hao Yan Che loves Gun Gun. Ting Du, ask yourself what chance you have left. Ting Du, I know you’re more capable than me and on par with Hao Yan Che. But success is meaningless if you’re wasting precious time being away from Gun Gun. While you’re building your career, Hao Yan Che and Gun Gun’s bond deepens. Perhaps in Gun Gun’s heart, Hao Yan Che is her man and you’re her big brother for life.’

‘Dad, you’re right,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Perhaps I don’t have a chance left.’

Yuan Ting Liu wanted both his children to be happy.

‘Dad, even if it’s true,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I want to use my last chance.’

‘Ting Du, like I told you before,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘No matter what happens, you’ll always be my son.’

Na Liu Ting Du smiled bitter sweetly at Yuan Ting Liu. Na Liu Ting Du believed Yuan Ting Liu truly loved him as a father.

In the dining room at ten at night, Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her satisfied stomach.

‘I’m full,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy’s food tasted delicious.’

‘Gun Gun, do you want to eat ice-cream?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But Che only lets me eat ice-cream once a week. This week I ate ice-cream already.’

Na Liu Ting Du didn’t want to hear Yuan Gun Gun call Hao Yan Che’s name

intimately.

‘Don’t you want me to take you to eat ice-cream?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I... I’ll go,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Let’s go.’

Na Liu Ting Du and Yuan Gun Gun stood and waved to Yuan Ting Liu and Feng Du Du.

‘Bye daddy and mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um, go eat ice-cream,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Gun Gun, mummy...’ Feng Du Du said.

Feng Du Du didn’t want to see Yuan Gun Gun leave her so soon. Yuan Ting Liu pulled her onto his lap, and stopped her from chasing after Yuan Gun Gun.

After Na Liu Ting Du left with Yuan Gun Gun, Yuan Ting Liu let go of Feng Du Du.

‘Let’s go to our bedroom,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘What for?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘Exercise,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

At eleven at night, Yi Tu went to the Yuan Mansion to pick up Hao Yan Che’s little treasure.

‘Hello, I’m here to pick up your young mistress,’ Yi Tu said to a maid.

‘I’m sorry,’ the maid said. ‘Young mistress went to eat ice-cream with young master Ting Du.’

‘Na Liu Ting Du?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Yes,’ the maid said.

‘Thank you,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu said a prayer for Yuan Gun Gun on the way to the car.

At Gossip Lovers, Na Liu Ting Du reserved a VIP room and ordered Yuan Gun Gun’s favorite ice-cream desserts like fried ice-cream.

‘Big brother Du, you should eat the delicious ice-cream here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 103

Related

Chapter 104



Warning: Chapter 104 contains SV and likely to cause distress for readers. Readers under 18 do not read chapter 104.

In reality, any form of violence against females or males is not condoned.

Chapter 104

‘I’ll let you eat the ice-cream,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun held a spoon of ice-cream in front of Na Liu Ting Du’s mouth.

‘Big brother Du should eat too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s not fun if I eat ice-cream by myself.’

Na Liu Ting Du ate the ice-cream Yuan Gun Gun offered and smiled back at her.

‘What’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her face to see if she had ice-cream on her face because Na Liu Ting Du was looking at her strangely.

‘Nothing,’ Na Liu Ting Du said and drank coffee.

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out. She was scared to see the clock on the wall. ‘It’s eleven twenty. Big brother Du, take me home. Che is going to kill me.’

Na Liu Ting Du didn’t want to hear Yuan Gun Gun wanting to go home to Hao Yan Che. He knocked the cups and ice-cream platter off the table.

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was startled by Na Liu Ting Du’s indifferent expression.

‘Do I have a place in your heart?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun stood, and took steps away from Na Liu Ting Du.

Na Liu Ting Du stood and loomed over Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Right now in your heart is there only Hao Yan Che?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was cornered to a wall. Na Liu Ting Du pulled down her collar, Hao Yan Che’s kiss marks were all over her neck, shoulders and collar bone.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her neck.

‘Big brother Du... what’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hands away. He ripped her shirt and forcibly kissed her lips.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared of Na Liu Ting Du. She pushed his chest away from her. He wouldn’t let her go. He felt like a scary stranger to her. She didn’t know what happened to her gentle big brother.

Yuan Gun Gun bit Na Liu Ting Du’s tongue hard, but he didn’t pull away.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

In Yuan Gun Gun’s head there was only Hao Yan Che. She wanted Hao Yan Che to appear.

Na Liu Ting Du didn’t care if Yuan Gun Gun was in pain. He forced her onto the floor, and his hands moved all over her soft body.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and cried loudly.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted Na Liu Ting Du to get off her.

‘Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du called.

Na Liu Ting Du left his teeth mark on Na Liu Ting Du’s body.

‘Big brother Du... no!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t do this.’

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t move her body to run away.

‘Gun Gun, you’re mine,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips of tears.

‘Big brother Du, stop!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che, where are you?’

Yuan Gun Gun calling out Che's name made Na Liu Ting Du livid.

'Don't call his name!' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Stop!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Let me love you,' Na Liu Ting Du said and kissed Yuan Gun Gun's tearful face.

'Big brother Du, I'm begging you to stop,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du pretended he didn't hear Yuan Gun Gun's pleas. He pulled down his pants, his hands played with her body and his body.

'I only like Che,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Big brother Du, I'm begging you to stop. Don't do this.'

Na Liu Ting Du heard Yuan Gun Gun's choked sobs, he discharged on her chest and his hands stopped moving on her body.

'Gun Gun, I'm sorry,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du licked his wet substance off Yuan Gun Gun's body. She only felt repulsed and wanted to be far away from him.

'Big brother Du, stop,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, I was slow from the start,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I lived with you for years, but I couldn't hold onto you. I only have myself to blame. Gun Gun, you're my slow burn addiction. There is no cure for me to get over you after being addicted to you for years. Tell me what I should do? How do I stop being addicted to you?'

'Big brother Du, don't be like this,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 104

Related

Chapter 105



Yuan Gun Gun wiped tears off Na Liu Ting Du's face.

'Big brother, don't be like this,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, I'm sorry,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du stood, took off his jacket and wrapped it around Yuan Gun Gun's body.

'I'll go buy clothes for you,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Then I'll take you home.'

Na Liu Ting Du didn't want to accept Yuan Gun Gun's home was with Hao Yan Che.

'Big brother Du...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Don't say anything,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Act like nothing happened.'

At twelve to one in the morning, Na Liu Ting Du's red Lamborghini parked in front of the Hao Mansion.

'Gun Gun, go inside,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't say anything and walked to the front door. She felt like she lost someone who loved her since she was a little girl.

'Gun Gun...' Na Liu Ting Du called.

Na Liu Ting Du ran to Yuan Gun Gun. She turned around, and her sad eyes looked at him.

'Gun Gun, can I kiss you one last time?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Na Liu Ting Du pecked Yuan Gun Gun's lips. There were tears in her heart too.

'Gun Gun, this is goodbye,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't say anything.

'My Gun Gun is the most loveable,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You'll be happy. Go inside.'

'Big brother Du, are you still my big brother who cares about me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You're the only person I'll always care about.'

'You're not allowed to lie,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Yes,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Go inside.'

Na Liu Ting Du watched Yuan Gun Gun enter the Hao Mansion. Then he walked defeated back to his car. He knew from that day, Yuan Gun Gun would always be Hao Yan Che's woman and he would always be Yuan Gun Gun's big brother. He thought fate was cruel toward him.

Upstairs in the study room, Qi Tu taunted Hao Yan Che.

'Kissing someone's lips is only a custom to say goodbye,' Qi Tu said.

Qi Tu wisely took steps away from Hao Yan Che.

'Hehe... my king, I'll go and take the initiative to kneel,' Qi Tu said and ran outside the room.

Hao Yan Che walked back to the master bedroom.

Downstairs, Mrs Chen chastised Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, do you know what time it is?' Mrs Chen asked.

'I'm sorry aunty Chen,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen sighed, and patted Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder.

'Go to bed,' Mrs Chen said.

'Is Che angry?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'What do you think?' Mrs Chen asked.

Yuan Gun Gun walked anxiously to the master bedroom. Hao Yan Che was sitting on the bed waiting for her. She pulled her dress collar together, and they stared at each other for a while.

‘New clothes?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the pastel pink dress she wore, and nodded her head.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared to go to the bed.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s body shivered. She slowly walked to the bed.

Hao Yan Che lifted Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap.

‘Where did you go today?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I went shopping with my mummy and had dinner at home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m sorry I came home late.’

‘You only ate dinner at home?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes... yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Let’s check.’

Hao Yan Che tore Yuan Gun Gun’s dress to pieces.

End of Chapter 105

Related

Chapter 106



Warning: Chapter 106 has explicit mature content. Readers under 18 do not read chapter 106.

Chapter 106

Hao Yan Che saw a teeth mark and a hand shaped bruise on Yuan Gun Gun’s breast that didn’t belong to him.

‘I didn’t know you have this kind of fetish,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It’s not what you think...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Tell me what happened?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Did you bite yourself?’

Yuan Gun Gun felt the cold way Hao Yan Che looked at her was like someone pouring ice water on her heart on a winter’s day.

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What should I do now?’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I want to do it with you too. I don’t think you’ll mind.’

Hao Yan Che took off his clothes.

Yuan Gun Gun moved back on the bed, and cried.

‘Why are you crying?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun close to him so she couldn’t escape.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her eyes.

‘Che, don’t do this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m scared.’

‘Are you scared I’m not good in bed like Na Liu Ting Du?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che laid on Yuan Gun Gun’s body, and glared at the markings on her

chest that didn't belong to him.

'Che... pain,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'That's right,' Hao Yan Che said. 'How can I forget you like pain?'

'It's not like that...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'That's right,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Let's do it this way.'

Hao Yan Che sat up on the bed, he pulled Yuan Gun Gun up, turned her around and she knelt on the bed.

'Che, no...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che tied Yuan Gun Gun's wrists behind her back with a bedspread strip. She couldn't move. He caressed her bottom, and pulled her long hair back so she could only look up.

'Ah... it hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said and cried helplessly.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun's chin, he kissed and bit her lips. He let go of her chin after he tasted her blood. His hands gripped her bottom and he thrust into her forbidden chamber.

'Ah!' Yuan Gun Gun screamed.

Yuan Gun Gun felt like her body was ripped apart. Hao Yan Che's shaft penetrated through her hymen. Her body trembled like she was in a wind storm.

The truth startled Hao Yan Che. He held Yuan Gun Gun's bottom and kept his shaft still inside her.

'Hao Yan Che, I hate you,' Yuan Gun Gun said in a shaky voice.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun's bottom harder. He withdrew and thrust deep inside her. Even if it was her first time, he couldn't forgive the markings on her body that didn't belong to him and he couldn't forgive her lying to him.

Yuan Gun Gun buried her face into the pillow. She couldn't endure the unbearable pain.

‘No, it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che thrust in and out of Yuan Gun Gun. His desire for her didn’t diminish.

‘Ah... ah... no,’ Yuan Gun Gun muffled cries into the pillow.

Yuan Gun Gun’s screams and moans echoed in the master bedroom.

Hao Yan Che thrust in and out of Yuan Gun Gun faster and deeper. Her inner walls tightened around his shaft. He ejaculated into the deepest part of her, and grunted on the long sweaty hair stuck on her back.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom for a while. Then he withdrew all the way out of her body. The blood and semen on his shaft were evidence of their first coupling together.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom, and her body collapsed on the bed. If he didn’t hold onto her bottom, her body would have collapsed a long time ago.

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun onto her back. He spread her legs and carefully parted the opening of the sensitive jewel between her legs. He was worried her jewel was swollen and bleeding excessively.

Hao Yan Che covered Yuan Gun Gun’s shaky body with a bedsheet. Then he quickly dressed and made a phone call.

‘Bring the best female gynaecologist here right now!’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

‘Huh... yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone. Yuan Gun Gun was sleeping. There were tears on her cheeks, and blood on her lips. He untied the bedspread strip around her swollen wrists. He opened a drawer, grabbed a tube of soothing cream and rubbed it on her wrists.

Hao Yan Che regretted he was rough with Yuan Gun Gun during her first time. But he couldn’t forget another man’s markings on her body and her lies. He flung the tube against a wall.

Yi Tu knocked on the door.

‘Young master, the gynaecologist is here,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Come in,’ Hao Yan Che said.

The female gynaecologist walked into the master bedroom. She wore a white lab coat over her clothes.

‘Examine her,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Where?’ the doctor asked.

‘Everywhere,’ Hao Yan Che said.

The gynaecologist put on disposable gloves.

‘Mr Hao, do you want to stay and watch me examine the patient?’ the doctor asked.

End of Chapter 106

Related

Chapter 107



Hao Yan Che turned around and walked outside the master bedroom.

Twenty minutes later, the gynaecologist informed Hao Yan Che about Yuan Gun Gun's condition.

'This is a prescription for a cream and painkillers that will help the patient's swelling and pain,' the doctor said. 'Encourage the patient to soak the patient's body in warm water to help relax sore muscles.'

'Is it serious?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' the doctor said. 'The patient's swelling and bleeding indicate the size of the patient's vagina isn't compatible with the size of Mr Hao's penis.'

Hao Yan Che creased his brows.

'Like how a male's penis varies in size, a female's vagina varies in size too,' the doctor explained. 'The patient's vagina is categorized in the small group, and Mr Hao's penis is categorized in the abnormal big group. Also, Mr Hao, you being rough with the patient caused the patient more pain.'

'Does she have a permanent injury?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Physically the patient's body will recover,' the doctor said. 'But it's the patient's mental state that worries me.'

Hao Yan Che opened the master bedroom door.

'Goodbye Mr Hao,' the doctor said.

'Wait,' Hao Yan Che said. 'How can I prepare her body to get used to my body?'

'Longer foreplay and lubricant will help,' the doctor said. 'During sex be gentle with patient too. It'll help the patient both physically and mentally.'

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll ask someone to buy the prescription for her.’

The following afternoon past four, Yuan Gun Gun woke up. She saw Mrs Chen sitting on a chair beside the bed.

‘You’re awake,’ Mrs Chen said. She wiped sweat off Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead. ‘I’ll help you take a bath, apply cream then I’ll cook your favorite dishes.’

Mrs Chen helped Yuan Gun Gun sit up on the bed, but Yuan Gun Gun’s face winced.

‘Are you in pain?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Do you want me to bring your toothbrush and a small tub for you?’

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. She got out of bed, and stumbled a step back. Mrs Chen supported her to the bathroom.

In the bathroom, Yuan Gun Gun brushed her teeth and washed her face while Mrs Chen prepared a warm bath for her.

Yuan Gun Gun cried after she got out of the bathtub.

‘Gun Gun, are you crying?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Take this painkiller and it’ll help your pain.’

‘Aunty Chen, I don’t want to swallow the pill,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why?’ Mrs Chen asked.

‘I don’t want to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried. Mrs Chen rushed to help her stand.

‘Alright,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘You don’t have to take the painkiller. Come outside, and I’ll help you apply cream.’

Mrs Chen supported Yuan Gun Gun to the bed, and Yuan Gun Gun laid on the bed.

‘Gun Gun, spread your legs and I’ll help you apply cream,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’ll help you have babies in the future,’ Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head and moved back on the bed.

Mrs Chen didn't want to force Yuan Gun Gun. Mrs Chen put the cream on the bedside table, and chose clothes for Yuan Gun Gun to wear.

'Gun Gun, change your clothes,' Mrs Chen said. 'I'll go cook a meal for you. Then I'll come back and help dry your hair.'

Mrs Chen walked outside the master bedroom. Yuan Gun Gun picked up the phone on the bedside table. She dialled a number, but there was no answer. She dialled several more times, still no answer. She sat on the bed and stared at the phone in her hand.

One hour later, Mrs Chen returned with a tray of food. She was worried to see Yuan Gun Gun sitting in a daze on the bed.

'Gun Gun, why didn't you change your clothes?' Mrs Chen asked.

Yuan Gun Gun changed clothes, and crawled under the bedsheet.

Mrs Chen patted Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder.

'Gun Gun, eat something then sleep,' Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her head.

'Gun Gun,' Mrs Chen called.

Mrs Chen was about to pull the bedsheet, but Yuan Gun Gun's pitiful cry made her sad.

Mrs Chen walked to the living room, and called Hao Yan Che on the phone.

'Young master, Gun Gun refused to take the painkiller,' Mrs Chen said. 'She won't let me apply the cream for her and she refused to eat too. Young master, do you think Gun Gun needs to see a psychologist?'

End of Chapter 107

Related

Chapter 108



‘Wait for me to come home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, when will you be coming home?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Gun Gun isn’t her normal self. I’m scared...’

‘I’m coming home now,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone, and Mrs Chen paced back and forth in the living room.

Twenty minutes later, Hao Yan Che walked into the living room.

‘Young master you’re home,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘What should we do now?’

‘Go reheat the food and bring it to my room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

In the master bedroom Yuan Gun Gun was depressed. The two most important men in her heart abused her on the same night. One was her big brother who had loved her since she was a little girl, and the other man was Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che bullied her, but he didn’t injure her before. Hao Yan Che’s abuse caused her the most pain. Why did Hao Yan Che had to be so cruel and cold toward her?

Yuan Gun Gun wanted last night to be a nightmare. She lost her big brother Na Liu Ting Du, he didn’t answer her calls. If she didn’t step foot into the Hao Mansion, perhaps she would have married Na Liu Ting Du and have babies with Na Liu Ting Du. But she wouldn’t have met Hao Yan Che... was that the best outcome?

Hao Yan Che slammed the door opened. He walked to the bed, and pulled Yuan Gun Gun out of the bedsheet.

‘Do you want a confrontation?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun wrapped her arms around her knees.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, it’s best for you if you cooperate,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes, and propped her head on her knees.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Open your eyes and talk,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun like she was the one in the wrong. She cried bitterly.

‘Can you hear me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Say something.’

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes again and refused to open her mouth.

‘Young master,’ Mrs Chen called.

Mrs Chen, Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen carried trays of food into the room for Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Mrs Chen’s voice, and opened her eyes to look pitifully at them.

‘This is your last chance,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Are you going to talk or not?’

‘Young master, don’t treat Gun Gun like this,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

‘Get out!’ Hao Yan Che said.

The women in the room were scared of Hao Yan Che’s intimidating voice. Chen Jia Ting was the first to recover.

‘Young master, you’re not behaving like someone befitting of your status,’ Chen Jia Ting said.

Hao Yan Che got up from the bed, and walked to Chen Jia Ting.

‘My status?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘What about your status?’

Chen Jia Ting closed her mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want Hao Yan Che to hurt Chen Jia Ting. Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed, but she couldn’t stand steady and fell face down onto the floor.

Hao Yan Che heard Yuan Gun Gun’s cry. He walked to Yuan Gun Gun, and carried her back to the bed.

‘If you can’t stand steady then don’t get out of bed,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her sore forehead. Hao Yan Che held her hand, there was a lump on her forehead.

‘Aunty Chen, apply the cream for her,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun hid under the bedsheet.

‘If you don’t let aunty Chen apply cream for you within fifteen minutes, I’ll apply cream for you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che stood, and walked out of the room.

Twenty minutes later, Hao Yan Che returned to the room. Yuan Gun Gun was crying on Mrs Chen’s shoulder.

‘Everyone leave,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Mrs Chen’s waist, and she refused to let go.

‘Let go,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. Hao Yan Che freed Mrs Chen from Yuan Gun Gun’s arms. Then Mrs Che, Chen Jia Ting and Chen Jia Wen left the master bedroom.

Hao Yan Che picked up a bowl of congee, and he fed Yuan Gun Gun the congee. She looked at him, but she didn’t know what he was thinking.

End of Chapter 108

Related

Chapter 109



Hao Yan Che wiped Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

'Take a painkiller and soak your body in herbal water,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

'I'm not asking for your opinion,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che's chest.

'I don't want to!' Yuan Gun Gun said in a hoarse voice.

'Does your throat hurt?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Why are you crying?'

'Hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I don't want to.'

'You need to,' Hao Yan Che said.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Be quiet,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You're hurting my ears.'

'Then you shouldn't hurt my ears,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why don't you call your big brother Du to confront me on your behalf?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her mouth.

Hao Yan Che stormed out of the bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun fell into dark thoughts. She didn't have a big brother to rely on anymore. Na Liu Ting Du was the one person in her life who used to love her and took care of her since she was five. But she couldn't rely on him anymore.

In the evening, Hao Yan Che returned to the bedroom. Yuan Gun Gun was crying in her sleep. He sat on the bed next to her, and patted her shoulder.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun murmured on a pillow. Hao Yan Che helped her sit up on the bed. She opened her eyes and looked at him.

Hao Yan Che picked up a warm bowl of herbal broth, and began feeding the broth to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Tastes bad,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che put another spoon of broth into Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

‘I don’t want to eat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

A while later, the bowl of herbal broth was empty.

Hao Yan Che took the empty bowl outside, and Yuan Gun Gun slept.

At eleven at night, Yuan Gun Gun woke up naked in Hao Yan Che’s arms.

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun screamed.

‘Be quiet unless you want me to drown you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck. She didn’t want to soak her body in the herbal water.

‘If you don’t let go and stop crying, I’ll drown you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che undressed, and got into the bathtub of herbal water with Yuan Gun Gun. The smell of herbal water was like dung to his nose. He didn’t know why he sacrificed himself for Yuan Gun Gun. Why couldn’t he drown her and send her back to the Yuan Mansion?

‘I want to go outside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The herbal water stung Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

‘In thirty minutes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want to go outside,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che closed his eyes, and held Yuan Gun Gun in the herbal water. She

hugged his neck so she wouldn't drown. But their naked bodies being close together made her feel strange.

Thirty minutes later, Hao Yan Che kept his promise. He carried Yuan Gun Gun out of the herbal water, helped rinse and dry her body and carried her to the bed.

Hao Yan Che went back to the bathroom to rinse the herbal water dung smell off his body. After he returned to the bed, Yuan Gun Gun rolled the bedsheet around her body like an Eskimo.

End of Chapter 109

Related

Chapter 110



‘Are you cold?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then why are you sweating?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It’s... cold sweat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ll sacrifice my body and be your heater,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You don’t need to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun protected her Hello Kitty gloves.

‘Take it all off,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat back on the bed.

‘If you don’t take it all off, I don’t mind using my way to take it all,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun took off her gloves, scarf, beanie, fur jacket, fur vest and all the other layers under the fur vest except for her night shirt and the pants underneath the fur pants.

‘Pants,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun pounded Hao Yan Che’s chest while he took off her fur pants.

‘Don’t test a person’s patience,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re not human,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Which is why you shouldn’t provoke me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Underneath the fur pants were track pants, jeans, leggings and shorts that

matched her night shirt.

‘Daddy...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Even if you called someone from the heavens, it’s useless,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che tossed the pile of clothes onto the floor.

‘You have three seconds to stop crying,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you don’t stop crying. I’ll make you cry every day even if I have to hit you. Do you believe me?’

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose.

‘Last night where did you go?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Shopping with my mummy and ate dinner at home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Where did you go afterward?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Big brother Du took me to Gossip Lovers...,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then last night you lied to me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what to say.

‘Answer me,’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes, but...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What day was yesterday?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Friday,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What did I tell you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m only allowed to eat ice-cream once a week,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are my words only wind to you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No, but...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Does eating ice-cream to you mean eating ice-cream off your body?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Or is it you and him have a special way of eating ice-cream like taking off clothes and biting each other?’

Hao Yan Che pulled down Yuan Gun Gun’s night shirt. There were another man’s markings on her breast.

‘Big brother Du... he... I... he,’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled. ‘It’s not what you

think.'

'What about kissing lips?' Hao Yan Che asked. He held Yuan Gun Gun's throat. 'Is it a custom for you to kiss other men's lips goodbye?'

'You saw?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I didn't just see,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I saw clearly. Why didn't you two do it in the car like how we did it together last night?'

Yuan Gun Gun looked down and didn't say anything.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun's neck. He walked to the door, kicked the door open and walked outside.

Yuan Gun Gun curled up on the bed and cried. She wished the person she liked was Na Liu Ting Du instead of Hao Yan Che.

One week later, Yuan Gun Gun became abnormally quiet. She only talked if someone asked her a question. Other times she laid in bed and watched TV.

On the following Monday, Yuan Ting Liu called Yuan Gun Gun and told her that Na Liu Ting Du moved to Paris. Na Liu Ting Du asked Yuan Ting Liu to pass on a message to Yuan Gun Gun. Na Liu Ting Du wanted Yuan Gun Gun to be happy, and he would buy her French chocolates when he came back home to visit. But she knew that Na Liu Ting Du wouldn't come back to visit her again.

Hao Yan Che noticed Yuan Gun Gun's odd change in behavior. He didn't want to upset her so he suppressed his frustrations. He hated how she stuck to the rules. The change in Yuan Gun Gun's behaviour was a butterfly effect. Hao Yan Che couldn't vent out his frustrations on Yuan Gun Gun, and as a consequence anyone working under him were affected even if they didn't provoke him. Some of Hao Yan Che's employees went to a temple and prayed that a deity would exorcise whatever was possessing Hao Yan Che's body.

End of Chapter 110

Related

Chapter 111



At night, Hao Yan Che entered the master bedroom. Yuan Gun Gun quietly got out of bed.

‘Do you want to take a bath?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun quietly followed Hao Yan Che to the bathroom. She turned on the tap, waited for the bathtub to be full, tested the water and quietly walked out of the bathroom.

One hour later, Hao Yan Che walked out of the bathroom and sat on the bed. Yuan Gun Gun knelt behind him and blow dried his hair.

Hao Yan Che felt the way Yuan Gun Gun touched his head was indifferent. Since their argument that day, she didn’t bicker with him, didn’t ask him for dessert, didn’t cry, and quietly performed her duties like there was nothing between them. She acted like a doll without a soul. He was frustrated he couldn’t vent, because she didn’t do anything wrong. There was a ticking bomb in his stomach.

Five minutes later, Yuan Gun Gun put the dryer in a drawer, and laid in bed.

‘Do you want to sleep yet?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Not yet,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then can I watch TV?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che moved closer to Yuan Gun Gun on the bed.

‘Yes?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun moved to the edge of the bed to distance herself from Hao Yan Che, and turned on the TV.

Hao Yan Che took a deep breath, and told himself to be patient. He got out of bed, got a pudding out of the fridge and put it in Yuan Gun Gun's hands.

'Thank you young master... Che,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che missed the way Yuan Gun Gun called his name sweetly. He fisted his hands, and laid close to her. He didn't expect she would get out of bed and sit on a chair to eat the pudding.

'I remember you said I'm not allowed to eat on the bed,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che wanted to kill someone. How often did he feed Yuan Gun Gun in bed? Yet she suddenly wanted to abide by the rules. She broke all his rules. So he got rid of the rules. He wanted to go back to the period they were happy together.

Yuan Gun Gun threw the rubbish in the bin, washed her hands in the bathroom and laid on the edge of the bed.

'I'm going to sleep,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She closed her eyes. 'You can turn off the TV when you want to.'

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun fell off the bed. Hao Yan Che got out of bed and carried her back to the bed.

'What do you want?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was unlucky. Hao Yan Che startled her, and made her fall off the bed. Her forehead hurt, but he was pain free yet he acted like she was in the wrong. She should be the one who asked what he wanted.

'Tell me what you want,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I... I don't want anything,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then smile,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun's mouth up. She didn't know why he was acting odd, but she forced herself to smile.

'Do you call this a smile?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Who do you want to scare? It's hard to look at.'

Yuan Gun Gun smiled wider.

‘Not like this,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Like how you usually smile.’

Yuan Gun Gun had enough and cried.

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said and held Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s chest hard.

‘I don’t want to smile!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ve done everything to appease you, but why are you picking fights with me? Does watching me suffer make you happy? If you don’t want to see me, you can pick up the phone and call my daddy. Tell my daddy that you hate me, and you want to send me back to the Yuan Mansion. There is no reason for you to treat me like this.’

End of Chapter 111

Related

Chapter 112



Yuan Gun Gun turned away from Hao Yan Che and cried.

A moment later, Yuan Gun Gun felt Hao Yan Che got out of bed. She thought he was going to kick down another door. But she felt something heavy jumped onto the bed, and something scratched her back. She couldn't stand being touched by Hao Yan Che.

'Don't touch me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and was happily surprised to see a snow white werewolf. The werewolf took up more than half the giant bed. The werewolf's tail was white and long, and its eyes were violet and arrogant like a king.

'Aunt Li?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't think it was Qiu Li Luo, because the werewolf on the bed was bigger than Qiu Li Luo and had cold violet eyes instead of Qiu Li Luo's warm violet eyes.

'Young... master?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

The werewolf growled, and its violet eyes looked at Yuan Gun Gun's eyes without blinking.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed the werewolf's cheeks.

'Che?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

The werewolf stuck out its tongue and wagged its long white tail.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed the werewolf's back, neck and legs. She smiled for the first time in days.

The werewolf let Yuan Gun Gun touched it and hug it. If she looked at its face, she could see it raising its eyebrows and twitching its nose.

A long time later, Yuan Gun Gun had enough fun playing with the werewolf and remembered she was angry. She laid back in bed, and turned her back toward the werewolf.

The werewolf was unhappy Yuan Gun Gun ignored it after she had her fun. Its paws pushed her back. She continued to ignore it so its paws pushed her head and bottom. Then its front right paw pushed her shoulder and its front left paw rubbed her chest.

‘Hey... you’re playing dirty,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The werewolf wagged its tail happily. Each time Yuan Gun Gun held onto its invasive paw, it would use a different paw to rub her chest and bottom.

‘You’re bullying me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The werewolf’s paws stopped rubbing Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

‘Big brother Du is my big brother,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll always see him as my big brother. That night he overpowered me, kissed me and left marks on me. But you forced yourself on my body, and accused me of seducing you and big brother Du. Why can’t you see the difference between right and wrong? How can you be cruel to me this way?’

The werewolf’s paws rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks like its paws were wiping her tears. The werewolf curled next to her on the bed, its head rubbed her neck and it howled softly.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged the werewolf’s neck and cried on its head.

The werewolf waited for Yuan Gun Gun to cry herself to sleep. Then a bright white light emitted from the werewolf’s body and it changed into a naked Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead, got out of bed and put on clothes.

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up on Hao Yan Che’s chest. She rubbed her eyes, remembered about last night and felt embarrassed.

Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che shared a long awkward silence.

Yuan Gun Gun looked around the bed, and pointed at the broken bedhead.

‘You broke this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and looked everywhere else except at Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘I’m sorry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 112

Related

Chapter 113



Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun and stroked her back.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was happy Yuan Gun Gun sounded like herself again. He felt like the woman he loved returned to him.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck and cried on his shoulder.

‘You’re not allowed to lie to me again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Um,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Like how Hao Yan Che didn’t think there would be a day he would like seeing a sunny sky, he didn’t think he would fall in love with a woman like Yuan Gun Gun.

Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun to the dining room.

‘Today is good weather,’ Qi Tu said. ‘Your young master’s employees’ prayers were answered. They got to escape your young master’s stormy moods.’

Qi Tu smiled at Yuan Gun Gun who was sitting on Hao Yan Che’s lap and eating.

‘Big brother Qi Tu, do prayers really come true?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Of course,’ Qi Tu said. ‘Look at your young master’s good mood. It’s thanks to the employees’ emptying their pockets. Before today, your young master’s moods were either icy or hot.’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s face, he didn’t look like he was in a good mood.

‘Little girl, do you have a wish you want to come true?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I have a lot of wishes.’

‘Like what?’ Qi Tu asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che feeding her pieces of bread.

‘Do you want your young master?’ Qi Tu asked.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned red and she shook her head.

‘You don’t want your young master?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘It’s not like that...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then what do you want?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘I... I,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Qi Tu laughed. It was the first time the servants heard someone laugh in several days.

After breakfast, Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun went to work together.

At midday, Yuan Gun Gun sat on Hao Yan Che’s lap and ate lunch like in the past.

‘Why do you want to come here to work?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘You used to like working at home.’

Hao Yan Che tucked Yuan Gun Gun’s hair behind her ears.

‘Lately it’s busy at work,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why do you have to dye your hair black to go to work?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che fed Yuan Gun Gun a dish. She didn’t push him to answer. She fed him a dish she liked.

‘This tastes delicious,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che, today in the tea room, I heard big sisters talked about an unsolved string of murders. Is it true?’

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che.

‘Why didn’t I know sooner?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You don’t watch the news,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You don’t watch the news either,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘How did you know?’

‘I just know,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and ate a prawn.

‘Aren’t you scared?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Not scared,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Aren’t you scared the killer will target you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m safe because the killer wouldn’t target someone who looks like me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 113

Related

Chapter 114



‘Big sisters said the killer chose beautiful women to kill,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Because of my looks and I have you, I’m not scared.’

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face. He was in a good mood because she felt safe having him.

‘The killers’ victims died pitifully,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun put the chopsticks down. She felt sad for the victims.

Hao Yan Che picked up the chopsticks and put food in Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun chewed. She thought about what Qi Tu said so she considered going to the temple to pray for world peace. She could also pray that Hao Yan Che would always be in a good mood, and for him to let her eat ice-cream seven days a week.

At twenty-five past ten at night, Yuan Gun Gun heard a woman’s screams and fell out of bed. Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun back to bed.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s only sounds of someone playing.’

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che. She couldn’t stop shaking.

‘Che, I’m scared,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re safe,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’m here with you. I won’t let anything happen to you.’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s calm eyes. She stopped shaking. But she cried for the victim.

Hao Yan Che kissed the tears on Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'Look how scary I am,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you're not scared of me then there's nothing for you to be scared of.'

'The killer is scarier than you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun's cut lips from her fall.

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che licked the blood from Yuan Gun Gun's lips.

'Che... my head feels dizzy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Sleep,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I can't sleep,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'I'm here with you,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Sleep.'

'Um,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes and drifted to sleep.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun. He got out of bed, dressed and made a phone call.

Later Yi Tu entered the master bedroom to see Hao Yan Che.

'Investigate the addresses of the victims,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu noticed a familiar photo on one of Hao Yan Che's laptops under the listing of the killer's future victims.

'Isn't that a photo of Gun Gun...' Yi Tu asked.

'Go investigate,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu carried the laptop, and left the room.

Hao Yan Che looked at the bed. Yuan Gun Gun was sleeping soundly. His fingers tapped the table. He wanted to find out the killer's identity and motive.

A while later, Yi Tu returned to the master bedroom looking solemn.

'What did you find out?' Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, have you heard about the details of the recent spree killings?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Get to the point,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘The IP address of the uploaded victims’ photos is the same as the bedroom next door,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Don’t alarm anyone here,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Investigate the killer’s identity.’

‘But young master...’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu saw Hao Yan Che’s warning and swallowed his words.

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu bowed and left the master bedroom.

End of Chapter 114

Related

Chapter 115



The next seven nights, Yuan Gun Gun had nightmares. Hao Yan Che gave her a bit of his blood to help her sleep. She was sheltered by her parents, it would be strange if she wasn't scared of the serial killer.

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's back and kissed her forehead.

'It's OK,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I'm here. Sleep.'

Hours later, Yuan Gun Gun woke up.

'Today we're not going to work,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Go change your clothes and I'll take you out.'

'Where are you taking me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Go change your clothes,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun went to the bathroom, brushed, washed and changed her clothes.

One hour later, Yuan Gun Gun sat next to Hao Yan Che at a restaurant. He fed her sweet and sour ribs. But it was the plates of desserts on the table that surprised her.

'Che, there are too many dishes on the table,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'We won't be able to eat it all.'

'I know,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che put a shumai in Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't understand why Hao Yan Che took her out to eat a meal at a crowded restaurant. In the past he hated being in noisy places. But the sounds of chatter and glasses clinking helped calmed her anxiety.

‘Eat,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘The food is getting cold.’

For several days Yuan Gun Gun lost her appetite. She lost a lot of weight and looked sick. Even she didn’t want to look at herself in the mirror.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun eat, and he endured the noisy surroundings.

‘This tripe tastes delicious,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun fed Hao Yan Che a tripe. He was relieved to see her smile. If she smiled, he felt his world was at peace.

Three hours later, Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun to an amusement park. He was unhappy she was having too much fun and didn’t pay attention to him.

Five hours later, Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun sat on a bench under a shady tree.

‘Thank you Che, it’s been a long time since I had fun at an amusement park,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re the best.’

Yuan Gun Gun linked arms with Hao Yan Che. Strangers would have thought they were lovers. But she didn’t know how he saw her. To him, was she his lover, maid or secretary?

Hao Yan Che opened a bottle of water and passed it to Yuan Gun Gun. She drank half the bottle and felt satisfied.

‘Where do you want to go next?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I want to go to the zoo,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s nose twitched.

‘You don’t want to go?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Let’s go,’ Hao Yan Che said.

One hour later, Hao Yan Che walked around the zoo and looked like he wanted to vomit. Yuan Gun Gun was right, having a strong sense of smell like Xiao Chi who fainted from vomit odor was a curse.

‘Che, are you OK?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘You look sick.’

‘It’s nothing,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand. He walked quickly to the zoo’s restaurant so his nose could escape the torturous dung odors.

End of Chapter 115

Related

Chapter 116



‘Che, are you OK?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed Hao Yan Che’s sweaty forehead.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. She looked at the people staring at them and felt embarrassed. Some people smiled at her, and others looked enviously at her.

‘Seen enough?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But I want to go to the toilet.’

Hao Yan Che walked with Yuan Gun Gun to the toilet.

‘Che, I can go to the toilet on my own,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che waited for Yuan Gun Gun outside the toilet.

Yuan Gun Gun went to the toilet, and washed her hands. She heard groaning and moaning from a cubicle, and ran outside.

‘Che, let’s go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face was bright red.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She pulled Hao Yan Che’s arm in the direction of the car. ‘Let’s go home.’

‘Are you lying?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No... there are people inside the toilet...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Doing it?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and led her to the car.

At the Hao Mansion at eleven at night, Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun watched an animation movie on TV in bed. She ate popcorn and laughed while watching the movie. Her good mood was the opposite of Hao Yan Che’s mood.

‘Che, taste the popcorn,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t mind if Hao Yan Che refused to eat the popcorn. It meant more popcorn for her.

‘Tomorrow you don’t need to go to work,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are you taking me out tomorrow?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I have somewhere I need to be tomorrow,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’re staying at home.’

‘Yes... wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Where are you going? Take me with you. I’m scared of being alone.’

‘Qi Tu and Jia Tu will be home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What about big brother Yi Tu?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I haven’t seen him for a long time.’

Yuan Gun Gun sensed Hao Yan Che was in a bad mood so she closed her mouth.

The sounds of the TV filled the tensed silence.

‘Can you come home early?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I’ll stay home and wait for you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You have to keep your word and come home early.’

‘I will,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s smile made Hao Yan Che want to tease her. He grabbed her box of popcorn.

‘Go brush your teeth,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I haven’t finish eating,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held the box of popcorn above Yuan Gun Gun’s head. She didn’t want to give up, and kept reaching for the box for a long time.

‘Go brush your teeth,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled out of bed, and walked to the bathroom.

Hao Yan Che threw the half eaten box of popcorn into the bin.

After Yuan Gun Gun returned to the bed, she regretted not eating the popcorn faster. It made her sad to waste good popcorn.

Hao Yan Che turned off the TV and hugged Yuan Gun Gun. She was used to sleeping on his warm chest. She felt sad thinking about being separated from him in another three years. She wondered since she liked being with a sadist like Hao Yan Che if that meant she was a masochist.

End of Chapter 116

Related

Chapter 117



The next day, Yuan Gun Gun woke up and was sad Hao Yan Che wasn't home. She dressed and walked to the dining room.

'Little girl, it's the middle of the day,' Qi Tu said. 'Did your young master tire you out last night?'

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She sat down on a chair. 'Yesterday Che took me to a restaurant, the amusement park and the zoo. It was a fun and tiring day.'

Qi Tu laughed at himself, and continued eating his steak. He should know better than tease someone who couldn't understand they were being teased.

'Gun Gun, you're awake,' Mrs Chen said. 'What do you want to eat?'

Yuan Gun Gun stood and linked arms with Mrs Chen.

'Auntie Chen, today I want to cook,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'No,' Mrs Chen said. 'Young master said you're not allowed in the kitchen.'

'Che isn't at home,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'No,' Mrs Chen said. 'Stay here. I'll go ask someone to cook you a meal.'

Mrs Chen made Yuan Gun Gun sit back on a chair, and she walked into the kitchen.

Yuan Gun Gun propped her chin on the dining table. She was sad she couldn't go into the kitchen to cook.

'Little girl, why won't your young master let you go into the kitchen?' Qi Tu asked.

'I don't know,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'When I first came here I was responsible for cooking Che's three meals. But after the kitchen gas explosion incident, Che didn't want me to cook or let me in the kitchen. Che said he's scared I'll put

poison in the food. Big brother Qi Tu, what type of person do you think I am? Even though Che is moody and bullies me, I wouldn't harm him.'

Qi Tu smiled. It was obvious to everyone why Hao Yan Che didn't let Yuan Gun Gun into the kitchen except Yuan Gun Gun.

'Big brother Qi Tu, are you and Che close friends?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Technically he's the king and I'm a servant,' Qi Tu said and drank a glass of red wine.

'Huh?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'You don't look like a servant.'

'There are many things you can't see,' Qi Tu said. 'A simpleton like you is suited to be under a protector's wings.'

Qi Tu put the empty glass on the dining table, and rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Little girl, I have a little sister who's a simpleton like you,' Qi Tu said.

'Is she your biological sister?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Qi Tu said. 'Her name is Qi Xue Yi, she's my twin sister.'

'Big sister Xue Yi must be a beautiful woman,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why?' Qi Tu asked.

'Because big sister Xue Yi is your twin sister,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you sucking up to me?' Qi Tu asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She held her nose up high. 'I'm being serious.'

Mrs Chen brought Yuan Gun Gun's meal to the table. Mrs Chen was displeased to see Qi Tu teasing and pinching Yuan Gun Gun's nose.

'Gun Gun, eat your meal while it's hot,' Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Mrs Che's waist.

'Thank you aunty Chen,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'It smells delicious.'

'Gun Gun, after you're done eating, go get some sunshine out in the garden,' Mrs Chen said. 'Jia Ting, Jia Wen and your small friends are waiting for you in the garden.'

‘Can I eat outside in the garden?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Alright,’ Mrs Chen said. She picked up the tray of food. ‘Come with me to the garden.’

‘Bye big brother Qi Tu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qi Tu watched Yuan Gun Gun walk to the garden and smiled.

At Hao Yan’s company on the one hundredth floor, Yi Tu reported to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, here are the files and photos you wanted,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che looked at the photo of the killer’s latest victim, and fumed.

‘Is this photo taken yesterday?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said. ‘The woman was killed in the zoo’s toilet where young master took Gun Gun yesterday. It hasn’t been confirmed if the woman was killed by the same serial killer. But the woman was killed in the same horrific manner as all the serial killer’s victims.’

Yi Tu felt nauseous looking at the victims’ photos.

‘Any news about the killer’s identity?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yi Tu said. ‘I’m sorry young master.’

‘It’s obvious the victims have no connection to Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Yi Tu, why do you think the killer made copies of the victims’ photos and addressed them to Gun Gun?’

‘I think the killer’s real target isn’t Gun Gun...’ Yi Tu said.

‘It’s me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 117

Related

Chapter 118



‘The victims’ heads and hearts are missing,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Yi Tu, do you think the killer ate their hearts or sold their hearts?’

Yi Tu pursed his dry lips.

‘The injuries on the victims’ bodies looked like the killer used their teeth to bite chunks of flesh off the victims’ bodies,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu’s shirt was drenched in sweat.

Hao Yan Che held one of the victims’ photo in front of Yi Tu.

‘Yi Tu, do you think the killer is a demon?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, what do you want me to do?’ Jia Tu asked.

Jia Tu covered his mouth. He didn’t want to vomit on Hao Yan Che.

‘Tell Ming to ask his people in New York to find out the killer’s identity,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, do you suspect the killer is one of your subjects?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘In the last few years, demons have kept a low key. But it doesn’t mean their thirst for blood has lessen.’

Hao Yan Che stood, and walked to the door.

‘Young master, where are you going?’ Yi Tu asked. ‘I can take young master there.’

‘I’m going to the Yuan Mansion,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Go do your duties. You know I’m not a patient person.’

Hao Yan Che left his office, and Yi Tu packed up the victims’ files and photos.

Later at the Yuan Mansion’s living room, Yuan Ting Liu poured the tea he

brewed himself into two tea cups. Brewing tea helped Yuan Ting Liu kill time, but the icy young man in front of him didn't know how to appreciate good tea.

Hao Yan Che couldn't correlate his rice ball and Yuan Ting Liu together. Yuan Gun Gun was right, she didn't inherit any of Yuan Ting Liu's intelligence.

'Mr Hao, why did you come here to see me?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'I want to marry Yuan Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Che said.

'What do you think my answer is?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'You'll give your answer soon,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Do you love my little girl?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Yuan Ting Liu and Hao Yan Che were two of the same kind. They didn't need to mince words with each other.

'I love her,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Ting Liu wasn't surprised by Hao Yan Che's answer.

'What about Gun Gun?' Yuan Ting Liu asked. 'Does she love you?'

'She loves me,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I promised your parents that if you and Gun Gun love each other during the three years being together, I'll give my blessing for you to marry Gun Gun,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Besides, you've tarnished my little girl's innocence.'

'You and your wife can discuss with my parents about her dowry and an auspicious day for you to hand her over to me,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che's tone of voice sounded like he was buying a pet at a pet store.

'Has Gun Gun agreed to marry you?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'She'll agree,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Is that so?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Hao Yan Che's brows creased.

'Stay for dinner,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Then bring home a box of your mother-in-law's dinner dishes for Gun Gun. If you ask Gun Gun to marry you while she's eating her mummy's dinner dishes, perhaps she'll say yes.'

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said.

At the Hao Mansion’s front porch at ten at night, Yuan Gun Gun sat on a chair and waited anxiously for Hao Yan Che to come home.

‘Little girl, what are you doing?’ Qi Tu asked. He sat on the chair next to Yuan Gun Gun. ‘Did you change professions? Are you a security guard now?’

Xiao Yuan sat on Yuan Gun Gun’s lap, Xiao Chen was coiled around Yuan Gun Gun’s arm, Xiao Bi sat on Yuan Gun Gun’s shoulder and Xiao Gun rolled in a ball inside Yuan Gun Gun’s pocket.

‘What’s wrong?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘Che isn’t home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He promised he would come home early.’

‘Your young master isn’t home?’ Qi Tu asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and looked sadly at Xiao Yuan.

‘Do you miss him?’ Qi Tu asked.

Qi Tu rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head and pinched her pink face.

‘Turning pink after someone teases you a little is your specialty,’ Qi Tu teased.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Qi Tu’s hand away from her head and face.

Hao Yan Che arrived home. He wasn’t impressed to see Qi Tu touching Yuan Gun Gun and her small friends on her lap.

End of Chapter 118

Related

Chapter 119



The small animals sensed their king, and wisely slid off Yuan Gun Gun's body.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to Hao Yan Che.

'You lied to me,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You promised you would come home early.'

'That's right,' Qi Tu said. 'You're a bad man. You made Gun Gun miss you.'

Qi Tu stood, walked to the door while strutting his bottom that was visible through his pants. Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's waist and hid her face on Hao Yan Che's chest.

'I'll give you two privacy,' Qi Tu said. 'Little girl, make sure you give your young master good service tonight.'

'Che, is there anything wrong with big brother Qi Tu?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered she was upset with Hao Yan Che, and stood away from him.

'You lied to me,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I waited a long time for you to come home.'

Hao Yan Che held up Feng Du Du's box of dinner dishes.

'Your mum asked me to give you this,' Hao Yan Che said.

'My mummy?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun grabbed the box from Hao Yan Che. She opened the box and looked confusedly at Feng Du Du's dinner dishes.

'Why do you have a box of my mummy's dinner dishes?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che walked to the master bedroom. Yuan Gun Gun held the box and followed him.

In the master bedroom, Hao Yan Che took a bath and Yuan Gun Gun put the box in the fridge.

After Hao Yan Che walked out of the bathroom, he saw Yuan Gun Gun sitting on the bed and looking worried.

‘Why aren’t you eating?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed and touched Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead.

‘Do you feel sick?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head, and looked like she wanted to cry.

‘You have three seconds to tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why did you go to my parents’ home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s hair.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Did you go to my parents’ home to tell my daddy to take me back home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Don’t even dream about it,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked confusedly at Hao Yan Che.

‘Let’s get married,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun widened her eyes and thought she was dreaming.

Hao Yan Che turned off the light, hugged Yuan Gun Gun and slept. But she stayed awake the whole night.

The next day at midnight, Yuan Gun Gun sat on Hao Yan Che’s lap with panda eyes and mumbled questions to herself.

Hao Yan Che frowned. Why did his rice ball look like she was traumatised? Did Yuan Gun Gun not want to marry him?

‘Do you love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I don’t hate you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why do you want to marry me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Did my daddy forced you to marry me?’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why do you want to marry me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che thought of an excuse for a while.

‘To take responsibility,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s body shivered. She couldn’t forget about how painful that night was.

‘I don’t want to marry you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I didn’t ask for your opinion,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If you want to marry me then you need to ask for my opinion,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

‘Are you waiting for Na Liu Ting Du to come back to you to finish what you two didn’t finish that night?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You have to marry me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips to stop herself from crying out.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed.

‘I don’t want to marry you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Do you want to see what happens if you don’t marry me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to the door.

‘Come back,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun kept walking to the door.

Hao Yan Che thumped the bedside table.

‘Do you dare take another step?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Aren’t I allowed to go to the bathroom?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun walked out of the master bedroom.

End of Chapter 119

Related

Chapter 120



Note: Chapter 120 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 120.

Chapter 120

After Yuan Gun Gun left, Hao Yan Che remembered there was a bathroom in their bedroom. He punched the bedside table. He wanted to marry her but she dared to say she didn't want to marry him.

The following day at Han Yan's company, Yuan Gun Gun hid in a bathroom and cried. She wanted to have a marriage like her parents who loved each other. When she heard Hao Yan Che wanted to marry her, she was happy enough to fly. She thought the kind of like toward Hao Yan Che was love. It was a one sided love. She loved Hao Yan Che, but he didn't love her.

Yuan Gun Gun washed her hands at the sink, and looked at herself in the mirror. She couldn't marry someone who didn't love her. She washed the tears off her face and walked outside the bathroom.

At midday, Hao Yan Che was worried why Yuan Gun Gun didn't return to his office.

'Go find her,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Young master, perhaps Yuan Gun Gun is in the women's bathroom,' Jia Tu said.

'There are women at Hao Yan's company you can ask any of them to look for Yuan Gun Gun in the women's bathroom,' Hao Yan Che said.

Half an hour later, Jia Tu reported to Hao Yan Che.

'Young master, I've searched two hundred bathrooms,' Jia Tu said. 'I didn't find Gun Gun.'

Hao Yan Che called Yuan Gun Gun's phone. She didn't pick up, and he hung up.

'Go find her,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Yes young master,' Jia Tu said.

Jia Tu left Hao Yan Che's office, but Hao Yan Che couldn't sit still while Yuan Gun Gun was missing. Hao Yan Che grabbed the key for the silver Rolls-Royce and walked to the parking lot.

Hao Yan Che drove around restaurants Yuan Gun Gun liked to eat. At the red lights he received a phone call, and put it on speaker.

'Hello,' Hao Yan Che said.

'CEO Hao,' the caller said.

'What do you want?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Are you looking for your little treasure?' the caller asked.

'Where is she?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Do you want to see her?' the caller asked.

'What's the address?' Hao Yan Che asked.

The caller hung up the phone and sent a photo of where Yuan Gun Gun was held captive.

At a secret location, Yuan Gun Gun woke up. The back of her neck hurt like someone struck her neck, and her wrists and ankles were bound.

The door opened and Qi Tu walked in with a beautiful French woman.

'Big brother Qi Tu?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Qi Tu's smile was scarier than frostbite.

'Big brother Qi Tu, was it you who struck me and took me here?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Qi Tu whispered something into the French woman's ear. She giggled and kissed him.

Yuan Gun Gun felt Qi Tu's behavior was creepy. The ropes around her wrists and ankles were too tight for her to free herself.

Qi Tu's lifted the French woman's short dress and put his hand into her underpants.

'Big brother Qi Tu, let me leave!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qi Tu tossed the French woman onto the bed. She took off her short dress and spread her legs. While he took off his shirt and pants.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes. She didn't want to witness Qi Tu and the French woman's perverse behavior.

Yuan Gun Gun could close her eyes, but she couldn't cover her ears. The French woman's moans made her body shiver. The last thing Yuan Gun Gun remembered was she walked out of the bathroom. Yuan Gun Gun didn't know why Qi Tu held her captive, and wanted her to witness him with the French woman in bed.

The French woman's moans grew progressively louder. One hour later, she screamed like someone was cutting her body flesh into pieces. After her screams was dead silence.

End of Chapter 120

Related

Chapter 121



Warning: Chapter 121 has incest references, and may cause some readers distress.

Chapter 121

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes. Qi Tu had changed into a golden werewolf. The golden werewolf viciously bit off the French woman’s flesh piece by piece. The French woman’s blood shot eyes were opened and looked in Yuan Gun Gun’s direction.

‘Ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun screamed.

The golden werewolf looked at Yuan Gun Gun. It widened its mouth, bit another flesh chunk off the French woman’s body, spat it out in Yuan Gun Gun’s direction and blood dripped onto the floor.

‘Big brother Qi Tu, are you crazy?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Don’t do that to the woman!’

The werewolf bit off the French woman’s chest, and ate her heart.

The werewolf jumped off the bed, and changed into the naked Qi Tu. He stood drenched in blood in front of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Che... Che... Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun called and cried.

Qi Tu dressed, and his bloodied hands clutched Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Xue Yi is more beautiful than you,’ Qi Tu said.

The moment Yuan Gun Gun blinked again, Hao Yan Che knocked down the door and glared at Qi Tu.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Qi Tu, what do you want?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Qi Tu's bloodied hands rubbed blood on Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'I want to be the werewolf king,' Qi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che didn't hesitate to take off the werewolf ring on his left thumb. He threw it and Qi Tu caught it.

'Let her go,' Hao Yan Che said.

Qi Tu's fingernails cut the ropes binding Yuan Gun Gun. She stood, and took a step toward Hao Yan Che. Qi Tu pulled her long hair, held her neck and licked blood off her face.

'Don't!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Qi Tu's bloodied body made Yuan Gun Gun nauseous.

'Qi Tu, don't take it too far,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che's voice was calm, but his clenched hands betrayed his true feelings.

'What sort of a king are you?' Qi Tu asked. 'Why did you make this pathetic woman your queen? Why did you let her drink your blood and made her an immortal? Yet you let the beautiful Xue Yi die in front of you and refused to save Xue Yi.'

'Qi Tu, you know clearly Xue Yi killed herself,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che's heart hurt to see how scared Yuan Gun Gun was.

'Xue Yi killed herself because of you,' Qi Tu said.

Qi Tu's bloodied hands rubbed blood on Yuan Gun Gun's neck.

'It's Xue Yi's choice whether she wanted to live or die,' Hao Yan Che said. 'She choice to die.'

'You are the Vampire King's son,' Qi Tu said. 'Your blood could have saved Xue Yi. Why did you refuse to save her?'

Qi Tu squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's neck. A second later Hao Yan Che stood behind Qi Tu and aimed a silver gun at Qi Tu's heart.

'Qi Tu, don't force me,' Hao Yan Che said.

Qi Tu let go of Yuan Gun Gun, and turned around to face Hao Yan Che. Bloodied tears flowed down Qi Tu's face.

'Do you know how important Xue Yi is to me?' Qi Tu asked. 'I love her. I love my twin sister. I've loved her since we were children. But she loved you since she was a little girl. I thought if she married you, I would be happy to see her happy. You're my king and friend. We grew up together. How can you be this cruel to us?'

Hao Yan Che threw the gun away.

'Xue Yi said if I don't love her then I shouldn't save her,' Hao Yan Che said.

Qi Tu's shocked eyes looked at Hao Yan Che.

'Qi Tu, do you understand how hard it is to live forever?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che tried to put the werewolf ring onto Qi Tu's left thumb, but a bright white light emitted from the werewolf ring and the werewolf ring rejected Qi Tu's left thumb.

Qi Tu stood in disbelief.

'Now do you understand?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Qi Tu laughed despairingly.

'I never wanted this but I can't escape my fate,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che put the werewolf ring back on his left thumb, and stroked Yuan Gun Gun's shivering back.

Qi Tu picked up the silver gun. Yuan Gun Gun fainted in Hao Yan Che's arms. Someone behind Qi Tu flung the silver gun out of Qi Tu's hand and knocked Qi Tu unconscious.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the silver Rolls-Royce.

End of Chapter 121

Related

Chapter 122



At the Hao Mansion's master bedroom, Qiu Li Luo and Hao Yan Que visited Yuan Gun Gun.

'Where's my Gun Gun?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

Qiu Li Luo sat on the bed, stroked Yuan Gun Gun's pale face and Hao Yan Che frowned.

'Xiao Che, tell me what happened,' Qiu Li Luo said.

'Qi Xue Yi is behind the murders,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Xue Yi?' Qiu Li Luo asked. 'Didn't she die long ago?'

'Is Qi Tu back?' Hao Yan Que interrupted.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Tell me everything that happened,' Qiu Li Luo said.

Hao Yan Che was more worried about Yuan Gun Gun.

'Dad, help me erase Gun Gun's memories from today,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Que smiled and sat comfortably on the sofa.

'What's in it for me?' Hao Yan Que asked.

'I'll marry Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Che said.

'That doesn't count,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Dad, what do you want?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Xiao Luo, do you have a request you want our darling son to grant?' Hao Yan Que asked.

Qiu Li Luo's eyes lit up, and she momentarily forgot how worried she was

about Yuan Gun Gun. Qiu Li Luo walked to the sofa and sat on Hao Yan Que's lap.

'I want a loveable granddaughter like Gun Gun,' Qiu Li Luo said.

'Darling son, do you agree?' Hao Yan Que asked.

Hao Yan Che laughed coldly.

'Dad, do I have a choice?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Que stroked Qiu Li Luo's white hair and he smiled.

'Darling son, it's a deal,' Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Che didn't leave Yuan Gun Gun's side. He caressed Yuan Gun Gun's clammy forehead.

'Dad, I'll give you a grandson too if you erase all of Qi Tu's memories,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Sounds like a fair deal,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Xiao Che, when will you give me and your daddy a grandson and granddaughter?' Qiu Li Luo asked.

'When Gun Gun gives birth to my children, I'll bring them to see you and dad,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che wasn't interested in having children. Yuan Gun Gun was the only person he needed.

'Xiao Che, do your best,' Qiu Li Luo said. 'Don't let mummy wait a long time.'

'Xiao Luo, first let's go and help our grandson see us soon,' Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo stood and walked outside the master bedroom.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun's forehead. He didn't agree with Hao Yan Que. If he and Yuan Gun Gun had to have children, he wanted Yuan Gun Gun to give him a daughter first.

Fifteen minutes later, Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo returned. Hao Yan Que placed his hands on Yuan Gun Gun's head. A bright red light emitted from Hao Yan Que's hands, and he let go of Yuan Gun Gun's head.

‘Darling son, don’t forget you owe me and your mum a grandson and a granddaughter,’ Hao Yan Que said.

‘I promise,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Xiao Luo, let’s go home,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que hugged Qiu Li Luo and they disappeared before Qiu Li Luo could protest.

Hao Yan Che pulled the bedsheet over Yuan Gun Gun’s body, and he walked to the study room.

In the study room, Yi Tu reported to Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, I buried the victim’s body and erased the evidence,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Here’s a key and the address of an apartment in Sydney. Take Qi Tu to Sydney, and wait for him to accept he lost his memories and decides to start a new life.’

‘Young master...’ Yi Tu said.

‘Go and perform your duty,’ Hao Yan Che said.

The following day, Yuan Gun Gun sat in a daze on Hao Yan Che’s lap during lunch.

Hao Yan Che fed Yuan Gun Gun a prawn.

‘What are you thinking about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Why does it feel like I’ve forgotten something?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘But I don’t know what I forgot.’

‘Then don’t think about it,’ Hao Yan Che said and fed Yuan Gun Gun a piece of meat.

‘Oh... I remember,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Didn’t you say something about us getting married?’

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why do you want to marry me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘No reason,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Do you love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Perhaps,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to marry you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘After you marry me, I’ll convert room eighty-five into a room for your small friends,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You can bring all your small friends from the Yuan Mansion here. You can eat ice-cream three times a week, and two different desserts every night. On the weekend I’ll take you out wherever you want to go. You can read books at work, and I’ll watch animation movies with you at night if I’m not busy. I’ll buy you a fridge for you to store junk food, and I promise not to bully you often. Will you marry me?’

Yuan Gun Gun was tempted by Hao Yan Che’s offer.

‘And I’ll get you a baby panda, a snow white baby fox and a snow white baby werewolf,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Two of every kind.’

Yuan Gun Gun was on the verge of accepting.

‘Will you marry me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘In the future will you love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Perhaps,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Will you come home with me when I want to see my parents?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Will you hit me if I do something wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t want to marry you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 122

Related

Chapter 123



‘If you’re not going to marry me, I’ll call Jia Tu to take you home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Take me home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and pulled Hao Yan Che’s shirt sleeve.

‘I don’t need you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che’s shirt sleeve and her eyes stung.

‘Will you marry me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che fed Yuan Gun Gun a piece of fish to stop her from crying.

Yuan Gun Gun thought about Hao Yan Che’s offer. A while later she nodded her head.

‘We’re getting married in three days,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘That soon?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s not that soon,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I have one condition,’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I want a tower chocolate wedding cake with two figurines that look like us on top,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You have to keep your promise,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t forget the two figurines that look like us.’

‘I promise,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach and he put the chopsticks down.

‘I want to eat more,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the chopsticks, and Hao Yan Che hit her hand.

‘Ow... why did you hit my hand?’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Your stomach is bloated,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you eat more you’ll kill your stomach.’

Hao Yan Che put the bowl and chopsticks out of Yuan Gun Gun’s reach.

‘My stomach has never been flat,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun back to their room.

‘Where are we going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘To sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But I just woke up,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I haven’t slept,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then why do you need me to come with you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘To keep me warm,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Right now it’s not winter or cold,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t be long winded,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

At the Yuan Mansion, Qiu Li Luo and Feng Du Du sat next to each other. They happily browsed through wedding magazines, and chose a wedding dress for Yuan Gun Gun.

Hao Yan Que and Yuan Ting Liu were also in a good mood. They sat on the sofa and drank tea together.

‘Mr Yuan, what wedding gifts do you want for Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘I don’t need gifts,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘All I want is for your son to treat my

daughter well.'

Yuan Ting Liu and Hao Yan Que exchanged knowing smiles.

Hao Yan Que put a small glass bottle of blood on the coffee table.

'This is a small gift from me and Xiao Luo to show our gratefulness toward you and your wife for raising a loveable daughter like Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Que said.

'Your blood?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Que said.

'I'm not going to beat around the bush,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I'm going to accept your gift. The truth is I want to live forever with Gun Gun's mum.'

'Living forever is a curse unless you're with someone you want to love forever,' Hao Yan Que confessed.

Hao Yan Que thought his immortality was a curse until he met Qiu Li Luo.

Yuan Ting Liu accepted Han Yan Que's blood, and agreed with Han Yan Que.

'Ting Liu,' Feng Du Du called.

'Que,' Qiu Li Luo called.

Hao Yan Que and Yuan Ting Liu exchanged another knowing smile with each other. Then they went to sit next to their own soul mate.

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun's parents' bonds strengthened after the wedding while Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun's daily lives stayed the same.

Yuan Gun Gun continuously asked Hao Yan Che when he would love her, and he would always answer that he didn't know when.

One night Yuan Gun Gun looked at hers and Hao Yan Che's wedding portrait hung on the master bedroom wall. He held her waist and kissed her forehead in their wedding portrait. But it was the only heart-warming wedding photo of them together. She flicked through their wedding album and felt unhappy that he looked like he was forced to marry her in all the photos in their wedding album.

Hao Yan Che walked out of the bathroom. He saw Yuan Gun Gun frowning on the bed. He sighed and sat on the bed.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Are you constipated?’

‘You’re constipated,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che dried his hair with a towel, and he draped the wet towel on Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Hey... you’re hateful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Ow... let go,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s hands turned Yuan Gun Gun’s face pink.

‘Ow... I’m hateful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Satisfied?’

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said and let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

End of Chapter 123

Related

Chapter 124



The night before Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun's wedding day.

'I feel like I'm a witch that forced a moon like you to marry me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun's bottom.

'Ow... it's true,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You don't look happy to marry me.'

Yuan Gun Gun laid in bed. By the following day she would be Hao Yan Che's wife. She felt like he didn't want to marry her. But she was happy in three years she didn't have to be separated from him.

'Why are you smiling like a fool?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Che, when will you love me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I don't know,' Hao Yan Che said.

'When...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Sleep,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun slept soundly that night. Hao Yan Che looked at her sleeping face in the dark and sighed. He didn't know why she couldn't feel how much he loved her.

The morning of Hao Yan Che's and Yuan Gun Gun's wedding day, Yuan Gun Gun had a final wedding dress fitting.

In a room at the Hao Mansion reserved for Yuan Gun Gun's personal fitting room, Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her flat stomach. She was hungry, and wondered when she could eat.

'Miss Yuan, all these wedding dresses are designed by Mr Hao,' an assistant said. 'Which wedding dress do you like?'

‘The wedding dresses are all beautiful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s hard for me to choose. I don’t mind wearing any of the wedding dresses.’

‘What about this dress?’ the assistant asked.

The assistant held a collar laced white wedding dress with embroidered diamond beads and a wide tail that flowed to the floor.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll take this wedding dress.’

‘Mr Hao instructed for the wedding dresses Miss Yuan didn’t want to be taken to room fifty-five,’ the assistant said to the servants.

The servants took the other wedding dresses to room fifty-five in an orderly fashion.

‘Are all the wedding dresses mine?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ the assistant said. ‘Mr Hao also designed dresses for Miss Yuan to wear tonight at the wedding reception.’

The assistant smiled at Yuan Gun Gun, and went to store the wedding dress Yuan Gun Gun chose in a safe place. The assistant knew Yuan Gun Gun didn’t have to worry about the diamond beads that all the servants’ lifetime work pay combined wouldn’t be enough to buy the wedding dress.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to call Hao Yan Che. She picked up her phone, and received an international caller ID.

‘Hello,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was sad and happy to hear Na Liu Ting Du’s voice.

‘It’s me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Big brother Du, why did you have to move to Paris?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Don’t you need your little sister anymore? Why did you leave without saying goodbye?’

‘Gun Gun, you’re about to get married,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You’re not a little girl anymore. You shouldn’t cry so easily.’

‘Big brother Du, can’t you come back?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘If you stay in Paris, how do I see you?’

‘Gun Gun, if you could only choose one person between me and Hao Yan Che, who would you choose?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I choose both,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, since you were a little girl I gave you everything you wanted,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘On this occasion you can only choose one person between me and Hao Yan Che. If you choose me, I’ll come back home and I’ll deal with the consequences. If you choose Hao Yan Che, I won’t come home and I’ll wish you happiness.’

Yuan Gun Gun covered her mouth and muffled a cry.

Na Liu Ting Du gambled everything one last time. He looked at the smiling photo of Yuan Gun Gun he carried around everywhere with him, and he knew he lost everything.

‘I’ll help you choose,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I choose to wish you eternal happiness.’

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried a river of tears.

On the other end Na Liu Ting Du laughed sadly at himself. He knew he shouldn’t have called Yuan Gun Gun one last time. But he wanted the glimmer of hope that Yuan Gun Gun would choose him to come true. He regretted he had to wake up from a fleeting beautiful dream, and lost the most important person to him.

End of Chapter 124

Related

Chapter 125



‘Big brother Du, come back home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ll come home after I find a woman to replace you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du was lying to himself instead of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che appeared out of nowhere behind Yuan Gun Gun. He snatched her phone and smashed it.

‘Che, what are you doing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the broken phone. Hao Yan Che destroyed the phone Na Liu Ting Du gave her. She lost her big brother like she lost the phone.

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun’s wrist and she dropped the broken phone.

‘Ah... what are you doing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I was talking to big brother Du. Why did you break the phone big brother Du gave me as a birthday gift?’

‘Do you know you’re about to marry me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Of course I know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why are you calling another man before you’re about to marry me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t care Hao Yan Che was hurting her wrist. Her heart hurt a lot more.

‘Why did it have to be like this?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s wrist.

‘I only have one big brother... he’s the person who loved me since I was a little

girl,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Why did it turn out like this? My big brother doesn't need me anymore. My big brother never cries. That night he cried. I believe he truly didn't want to hurt me. He was in pain. He knew I didn't choose him. I chose you. After that night, he left. I've hurt the person who loved me the most. Why does everyone forces me to choose between my big brother and you? Why won't my big brother come back?'

'Don't cry,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was angry and heartbroken to see Yuan Gun Gun devastated. He hugged Yuan Gun Gun. He was angry she was upset with him for breaking another man's gift to her, and she was crying because of another man. His heart hurt because she was in pain.

Yuan Gun Gun let Hao Yan Che constrict her body in a tight hug. There were no ifs left. Ifs were in the past. If she didn't meet Hao Yan Che, perhaps she would have married Na Liu Ting Du and Na Liu Ting Du wouldn't have gone to Paris all alone. There were no ifs left, because she did meet Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che was in her life and in her heart.

'Right now it doesn't matter if you say you won't marry me,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It's too late.'

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's waist.

'If you betray me, I'll kill you,' Hao Yan Che said and stroked Yuan Gun Gun's back.

'I won't betray you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was never going to let Yuan Gun Gun leave him. He held her face, and kissed her lips.

In Paris, Na Liu Ting Du licked his heart wounds. He listened to the phone disconnection signal. He asked himself when he became so blind and petty. There was only one answer, he became blind and petty the day he acknowledged he loved Yuan Gun Gun.

On the other side of Na Liu Ting Du's phone, Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun to room two. In room two servants clustered around Yuan Gun Gun and fussed over her.

Hao Yan Che didn't know how long he waited to see Yuan Gun Gun wear the wedding dress to marry him. She looked beautiful and delicate in the white lace wedding dress.

'Che, when can I eat?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I'm really hungry.'

Hao Yan Che unwrapped a chocolate and put it in Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

'Wait a bit,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was satisfied how beautiful Yuan Gun Gun looked in the wedding dress and the light makeup that didn't hide her natural beauty.

'I want to eat more,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun put out her hand, and Hao Yan Che patted her hand.

'None left,' Hao Yan Che said.

'You're lying,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun searched for chocolates in Hao Yan Che's pockets.

'There really is none left,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ready?' Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 125

Related

Chapter 126



‘Mr Hao, we need to style Miss Yuan’s hair,’ the assistant said.

‘No need to,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Leave her hair like this.’

‘Then Miss Yuan is ready,’ the assistant said.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared she would trip over the long and wide wedding dress tail.

‘Don’t worry Miss Yuan,’ the assistant said. ‘I’ll attach the tail to your waist. At the church, I’ll let out the tail for you and retouch your makeup.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Thank you big sister.’

Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che ate a light meal, and were driven to the church.

In the bridal room at the church, Feng Du Du and Qiu Li Luo were crying happy tears.

‘My little treasure is really beautiful today,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Mummy is really beautiful too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun’s smiles were identical.

‘Gun Gun, if Xiao Che bullies you, you can tell mummy,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘I’ll deal with Xiao Che for you.’

Qiu Li Luo was happy the day Yuan Gun Gun became her daughter-in-law finally arrived.

‘Thank you aunty Li,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, you can’t call me aunty Li,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Call me mummy.’

‘Thank you mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun... you have to come visit mummy often,’ Feng Du Du said and sobbed.

‘Mummy...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Gun Gun...’ Feng Du Du called.

Qiu Li Luo didn’t know how to comfort the loveable mother and daughter in front of her. Qiu Li Luo was sad she only gave birth to two cold sons. Qiu Li Luo wished she was blessed like Feng Du Du who got to give birth to a loveable daughter.

Three men walked into the bridal room, and comforted their own crying wife.

‘Don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che said to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Don’t cry,’ Yuan Ting Liu said to Feng Du Du.

‘What did you see to make you cry?’ Hao Yan Que asked Qiu Li Luo.

‘Why are you men here?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Que asked. ‘The wedding ceremony is about to start, but the bride is missing.’

Qiu Li Luo looked at her watch, it was five minutes until the wedding ceremony.

‘You men need to go outside,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Gun Gun needs a makeup retouch. We’ll bring her out soon.’

Five minutes later, the wedding march song was played in the church. Yuan Gun Gun wore her white veil, and linked arms with Yuan Ting Liu. Her daddy was going to give her away to the snow white werewolf she wanted to be together with forever.

Yuan Ting Liu walked step by step with his little girl to the altar.

‘Dad is giving my daughter to you,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘If you betray her, I’ll take back my daughter.’

‘Dad, I’ll never betray her,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Good,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu handed Yuan Gun Gun to Hao Yan Che.

Everyone in the church took their seats, and the priest commenced the wedding ceremony.

‘Dearly beloved,’ the priest said. ‘We are gathered here today to join this man and this woman in holy matrimony.’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che instead of paying attention to the priest.

‘Is there anyone present who can show any just cause why these two people should not be legally joined in marriage?’ the priest asked.

Everyone in the church was silent.

End of Chapter 126

Related

Chapter 127



‘Yan Che Hao, do you take Gun Gun Yuan to be your lawfully wedded wife?’ the priest asked.

Yuan Gun Gun laughed softly, and Hao Yan Che smiled. They both thought Gun Gun Yuan sounded funny, because the priest was asking him if he wanted to marry crying south.

‘I do,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Gun Gun Yuan, do you take Yan Che Hao to be your lawfully wedded husband?’ the priest asked.

Hao Yan Che squeezed Yuan Gun Gun’s hands.

‘I do,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘The rings,’ the priest said.

Hao Yan Che put a werewolf ring on Yuan Gun Gun’s left thumb. A bright light flashed out of the werewolf ring and bound them together forever.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why Hao Yan Che put a ring on her thumb, but she felt happy when he put a ring on her thumb. She put his werewolf ring he wore since the day Qiu Li Luo gave it to him, on his left thumb.

The ancient blood inscription on Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead shone, but only Hao Yan Che could see the inscription.

Qiu Li Luo held Hao Yan Che’s hand when Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead shone. Their first son was happily married.

‘By the power vested in me, I now pronounce you husband and wife,’ the priest said. ‘Yan Che Hao, you may now kiss the bride.’

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s veil over her head, and he kissed her lips.

They could only hear each other's heart beats.

Rose petals confetti fell from the church ceiling and the wedding guests clapped and cheered.

Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun outside the church.

'Why can't we use chocolate confetti instead of petals?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che laughed.

'Chocolate confetti?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you want to be kicked?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun quietly got into the car.

At the wedding reception venue at nine at night, Yuan Gun Gun was hungry and tired of changing into different dresses, shoes and having her makeup retouched. She felt weddings were a curse, and didn't want to have another wedding. Her head felt dizzy, and her wedding day was a blur. What touched her heart was seeing how happy her parents and Hao Yan Che's parents were, and when Hao Yan Che put her ring on her left thumb.

'Are you hungry?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Look at all the delicious food on the tables. It's a waste we don't have time to eat them. Let's eat at home.'

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. He rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's flat stomach. 'We'll eat at home.'

At twenty past ten, Yuan Gun Gun walked through the front door of the Hao Mansion.

'Aunty Chen, I'm starving,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Go take a bath,' Mrs Chen said. 'I'll cook your favorite dishes.'

'Thank you aunty Chen,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You're the best. I'll never forget your kindness.'

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the master bedroom.

‘Young master, Na Liu Ting Du sent a box of chocolates from Paris to Gun Gun,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Do you want to give them to Gun Gun?’

‘I’ll give them to her tomorrow,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘Aunty Chen, put a little Mateus in the food,’ Hao Yan Che instructed.

Mrs Chen understood, and she walked to the kitchen.

In the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was happy to take off the heavy diamond beaded dress and remove her makeup. She soaked her tired body in the bathtub for half an hour. Then she walked to the bed, and saw paradise. Her favorite dishes were brought to the master bedroom.

‘Little hungry demon,’ Hao Yan Che called affectionately.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled and continued eating.

Hao Yan Che took an hour bath. By the time he returned to the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks were rosy from eating Mrs Chen’s cooked dinner dishes.

‘Che, my head feels dizzy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Aunty Chen’s food tastes strange tonight.’

End of Chapter 127

Related

128 – 129

Chapters 128 to 129



Note: Chapters 128 to 129 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapters 128 to 129.

Chapter 128

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bed.

‘You’re right,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘The dinner dishes tonight are a little strange.’

‘Wha...’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips, and took off her nightshirt.

‘Um... Che... no,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ll be gentle,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che lips planted butterfly kisses on Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Che... tickles,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che sucked one of Yuan Gun Gun’s nipples, and his hand kneaded her other breast.

‘Um... Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s hands gripped the bedspread.

‘Little rice ball,’ Hao Yan Che called.

‘Where?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Here,’ Hao Yan Che said and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips.

Yuan Gun Gun was dazzled by Hao Yan Che’s beautiful face. She licked his lips and wrapped her arms around his neck.

Hao Yan Che took off his nightshirt, and pulled down Yuan Gun Gun’s

underpants.

‘Che... it’ll hurt,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Hao Yan Che. ‘It won’t hurt this time.’

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s face and gently kissed her lips.

‘Che... no,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ll be really gentle,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s breasts, and her nipples hardened.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Hao Yan Che nibbled from Yuan Gun Gun’s ear to her collar bone. The feel of her naked body underneath his body made his shaft throbbed.

Yuan Gun Gun arched her back and rubbed her body against Hao Yan Che’s body.

Hao Yan Che felt the wetness between Yuan Gun Gun’s legs and he entered halfway inside her.

‘Um... ah,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wrapped her arms around Hao Yan Che’s back.

‘Little rice ball, wait a bit,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che thrust all the way inside Yuan Gun Gun’s tight body.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

‘Don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che gently wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s tears off her face and tenderly kissed her lips.

‘Hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and shook her head.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It won’t hurt soon.’

Hao Yan Che slowly moved in and out of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Um... Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what the tingling vibration between her legs was.

She dug her fingernails into Hao Yan Che's back.

Hao Yan Che could smell Yuan Gun Gun's discharge. He thrust harder in and out of her dampness.

A while later, Hao Yan Che lifted Yuan Gun Gun's bottom, and ejaculated deep inside her.

'Ah... um... Che,' Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Yuan Gun Gun's arms and legs clung onto Hao Yan Che's sweaty body, and she orgasmed again.

Chapter 129

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's sweaty hair.

'Does it hurt?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then let's do it again,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun's wet eyelids.

'Um... no,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che withdrew from Yuan Gun Gun's body. He turned her onto her side, held her waist from behind and thrust deep into her dampness.

'Um... Che... ah...' Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che cupped Yuan Gun Gun's breasts, she gripped his arms and he groaned in her ear.

Hao Yan Che didn't let Yuan Gun Gun sleep until early morning.

The following afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun woke up. She couldn't move her aching body. She opened her eyes, and saw her naked body lying on top of Hao Yan Che's naked body.

'What... how...' Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

'They're called breasts,' Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her chest.

‘You... I... you... I,’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

‘Loved each other last night and this morning,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun blushed, and didn’t know what to say.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and walked naked to the bathroom. He was comfortable being naked in front of Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun laid in bed, and pitied herself. She felt like she was the only woman who didn’t remember what happened on her wedding night.

After the bathtub was full of herbal water, Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bathroom.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck. ‘I don’t want to.’

Yuan Gun Gun remembered how her body stung the last time she soaked her body in herbal water.

Yuan Gun Gun laid on top of Hao Yan Che’s body in the bathtub. He stroked her back, and diverted her attention.

‘Where do you want to go on a honeymoon?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘What?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Honeymoon,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Paris,’ Yuan Gun Gun said carelessly.

Hao Yan Che narrowed his eyes.

‘Hehe... you can decide,’ Yuan Gun Gun said sweetly. ‘It doesn’t matter where we go as long as we’re together.’

‘Then we don’t need to go on a honeymoon,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Forty-five minutes later, Hao Yan Che helped Yuan Gun Gun dressed.

‘Dry your hair,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Where are you going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Downstairs,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun blow dried her hair, and thought about why Hao Yan Che was unhappy. Was it because she said she wanted to go to Paris?

Half an hour later, Mrs Chen brought a tray of food to the master bedroom.

‘Good morning aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’s afternoon now,’ Mrs Chen teased. ‘Eat while the food is hot.’

‘Yes aunty Chen,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Where’s Che?’

‘Young master is in the study room,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘He’ll come here soon.’

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, you received a box of chocolates,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘For me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Eat it slowly.’

Mrs Chen left the master bedroom to give Yuan Gun Gun privacy.

Yuan Gun Gun opened the box of chocolates from Paris. Inside were her favorite chocolates, a new phone and a letter from Na Liu Ting Du, ‘Gun Gun, congratulations on your wedding day, I love you.’

Yuan Gun Gun cried and hugged the phone like she was hugging her big brother.

When Hao Yan Che walked into the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was staring at the phone in her hands.

‘Che, this is...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you done eating?’ Hao Yan Che interrupted.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then what are you doing standing in the middle of the room?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Are you waiting for me to serve you?’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the sofa. Hao Yan Che grabbed her phone.

‘My...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Your what?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

HaO Yan Che put the phone on the table, and Yuan Gun Gun sighed in relief.

End of Chapters 128 to 129

Related

Chapter 130



‘Why aren’t you eating?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up a bowl and chopsticks. Then she randomly put a piece of meat in her mouth.

Hao Yan Che sat on the sofa, and picked up a different bowl and chopsticks.

Yuan Gun Gun ate and occasionally glanced at the phone on table.

‘Let’s go to Indonesia,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Huh?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che, and thought he looked unhappy.

‘Are you saying you want us to go to Indonesia for our honeymoon?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Didn’t you say we’re not going on a honeymoon?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to see Hao Yan Che look coldly at her. She looked down at her bowl and ate.

Hao Yan Che scoffed. He ate and looked at the phone. He thought it was pointless treating Yuan Gun Gun well when she didn’t appreciate his efforts.

Yuan Gun Gun secretly glanced at Hao Yan Che and she smiled. They’ve been eating together for months. But that day was the first time they ate a meal together as husband and wife.

Three years later.

Many events and meetings would happen in a three year period. Hao Yan Che

and Yuan Gun Gun's life together was an exception.

On a sunny day at the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Che's voice echoed throughout the mansion.

'Yuan Gun Gun!' Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun was sitting in the living room and drinking tea.

Hao Yan Que had quick reflexes, and avoided the tea that spat out of Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Yuan Ting Liu, and feared for her life.

'What's wrong?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Xiao Che, why are you raising your voice at Gun Gun?' Qiu Li Luo asked.
'You're scaring her.'

Hao Yan Che slammed the box of pills on the coffee table.

'You dare drink this?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun's looked at the box of pills on the coffee table and frowned.

'I... I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

After being married for three years, Yuan Gun Gun understood her husband had two moods. One was icy indifference and the other was hot anger. In that moment Hao Yan Che was angry.

'Come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Daddy...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Ting Liu didn't save his little girl. He agreed with his son-in-law on that occasion.

'Mummy...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'Gun Gun...' Feng Du Du called.

Feng Du Du looked at everyone's face of disapproval. She felt powerless to help Yuan Gun Gun.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun off the sofa.

‘No one can help you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Mummy...’ Yuan Gun Gun called Qiu Li Luo.

Qiu Li Luo coughed and winked at Yuan Gun Gun to help her.

‘Gun Gun, did someone tell you to take these pills?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But...’

‘You’re dead,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che slung Yuan Gun Gun over his shoulder and took her to their bedroom.

‘I don’t want to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy... daddy... mummy... daddy...’

‘Gun Gun...’ Feng Du Du and Qiu Li Luo called.

Feng Du Du and Qiu Li Luo stood to help Yuan Gun Gun. But their husbands pulled them onto their laps.

‘What are you doing?’ Qiu Li Luo asked. ‘Look how angry Xiao Che is. What if he hurts Gun Gun?’

‘Do you think you can stop Xiao Che?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘I can’t but you can,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

‘I’m not going to stop Xiao Che,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que picked up the box of pills and fumed.

‘Why are you taking our son’s side?’ Qiu Li Luo asked. ‘You should be on the side of justice.’

‘Our son’s father-in-law hasn’t given his opinion yet, why are you in a rush?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘Gun Gun’s needs a memorable punishment so she doesn’t make the same mistake again,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Qiu Li Luo couldn’t believe the two men who were supposed to love Yuan Gun Gun would sit back, and not help Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Ting Liu...’ Feng Du Du called.

‘If you dare drink this, you’ll share the same fate as our daughter,’ Yuan Ting Liu warned.

Feng Du Du and Qiu Li Luo exchanged a helpless look with each other. Then they looked upstairs and sighed together.

End of Chapter 130

Related

Chapter 131



‘Put me down,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy, save me!’

Hao Yan Che slammed the door shut. He walked to the bed, and dropped Yuan Gun Gun on the bed.

‘Confess,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Who bought the pills for you?’

‘I bought them myself,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and looked pitifully at Hao Yan Che.

‘When did you buy them?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I bought them secretly when I went shopping with my mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Congratulations,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You made me angry’

Hao Yan Che cracked his knuckles, and stepped closer to the bed.

‘Don’t come here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun onto her stomach before she had a chance to escape. He lifted her dress, and took off her underpants.

‘Don’t,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Hao Yan Che, let go of me.’

Hao Yan Che hit Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

Hao Yan Che hit Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom again.

‘I was wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t hit me.’

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun, and she rolled onto the floor. She rubbed her bottom, and cried.

Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun stay on the floor. He walked to the living room.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled onto the bed. She was turning twenty-two in a few months. But her husband punished her like a little girl.

In the living room Hao Yan Che drank a cup of tea and still didn't feel calm.

'Xiao Che, let Gun Gun...' Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo was scared of her son's anger. She hugged her husband.

Feng Du Du pulled her husband's shirt sleeve to signal him to save their daughter. But he ignored her.

'She's not eating dinner tonight,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Everyone can eat dinner without her.'

Hao Yan Che walked to the study room.

'Let's go home,' Hao Yan Che and Yuan Ting Liu said to their wives.

'But...' Qiu Li Luo and Feng Du Du said.

The men dragged their wives home before their wives could protest.

In the study room Yi Tu reported to Hao Yan Che, and hesitated to speak on behalf of Yuan Gun Gun.

'Young master, they made a move,' Yi Tu said.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Young master, Gun Gun...' Yi Tu said.

'Don't say she's a little girl,' Hao Yan Che said. 'In this world there isn't a little girl as big as her.'

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che tossed the files on the desk.

'Keep an eye on them and protect the fool,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You can leave.'

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu bowed and left the study room.

After ten at night in the master bedroom, Mrs Chen rubbed ointment on Yuan Gun Gun's bottom.

‘Ow... aunty Chen be gentle,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yes,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘I’ll be gentle. Don’t cry.’

Yuan Gun Gun laid on her stomach and cried pitifully.

‘How can young master use force to hit your bottom like this?’ Mrs Chen asked.

‘Aunt Chen, you know this isn’t the first time,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Before we were married, he promised he wouldn’t bully me. He’s a liar. Aunty Chen, it really hurts.’

End of Chapter 131

Related

Chapter 132



‘Gun Gun, you shouldn’t have taken dangerous pills,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘He didn’t say I couldn’t take diet pills,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did you ask young master’s permission before you took diet pills?’ Mrs Chen asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Can you honestly say you didn’t know young master would be angry?’ Mrs Chen asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to admit the truth.

‘But he didn’t say I couldn’t take diet pills,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Mrs Chen poked Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, with your IQ, do you think you can hide a secret like this from young master?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Listen to me. If you don’t want to be hit again then don’t repeat what you said to me to young master.’

‘He didn’t say I couldn’t take diet pills,’ Yuan Gun Gun persisted.

‘Gun Gun!’ Mrs Chen said.

The door opened. Yuan Gun Gun pulled down her dress, stood up against a wall and endured her bottom pain.

‘Young master,’ Mrs Chen greeted.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun and Mrs Chen took one look at Hao Yan Che, and they knew time didn’t help calm him.

Mrs Chen bowed and left the master bedroom.

Hao Yan Che walked to Yuan Gun Gun. She moved along the wall in vain.

‘Don’t come here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun feared for her bottom, and stood still.

‘Are you coming?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun walked like a turtle to Hao Yan Che.

‘Are you scared I’ll eat you for dinner?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m scared you’ll hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What are you going to do if I hit you right now?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said and her eyes teared up.

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Tell me why you took those pills.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned red suspiciously.

‘Can’t you hear me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I... I want to lose a bit of weight,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did I give you permission to diet?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Big sister Feng said if a woman is too fat, the woman’s husband will leave her,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried. She only wanted her husband to love her. But he raised his voice and hit her.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun up, and took her to the bed.

‘Why are you such a dummy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun onto her stomach.

‘Don’t hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che lifted Yuan Gun Gun's dress. Her bottom was red and swollen. He regretted he hit her bottom hard.

'Don't hit me,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Mummy, daddy...'

'Be quiet,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pulled down Yuan Gun Gun's dress.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled to the edge of the bed. Hao Yan Che turned her over and laid on top of her.

'It hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Do you remember that we never use protection?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'If you remember then why did you take dangerous pills?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Don't you want to have a baby? Or is it, you don't want to have my baby?'

'Of course I want to have your baby,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What if you're pregnant now?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Don't tell me you don't know that taking those pills can harm our unborn child.'

End of Chapter 132

Related

Chapter 133



Note: Chapter 133 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 133.

Chapter 133

‘I honestly didn’t know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her eyes. She didn’t want to see Hao Yan Che looking coldly at her.

‘I never had a baby before,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If I knew then I wouldn’t take the diet pills. Of course I want to have your baby.’

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hands away from her eyes.

‘What are you crying about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Baby,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What baby?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Besides crying, what else do you know?’

‘Will our baby be sick?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s your brain that is sick,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che kissed and bit Yuan Gun Gun’s lips.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Our baby...’

‘You’re not pregnant,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘How do you know?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘You just had your period,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re right.’

‘What right?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'It hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che took off Yuan Gun Gun's dress. He held her wrists, kissed her lips and fondled her breasts.

'Um... Che... not tonight,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che nibbled Yuan Gun Gun's neck.

'Don't leave kiss marks there,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che inserted his fingers inside Yuan Gun Gun's sweetness between her legs. His fingers stroked her sensitive spot.

'Um... not tonight,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Don't be noisy,' Hao Yan Che said. 'And don't cry. You know you shouldn't test my patience.'

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che didn't have patience.

'My bottom hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You deserve your bottom pain,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che withdrew his fingers, and he swiftly entered her wet passage.

'Ah... be gentle,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Um... ah... not there... ah.'

Hao Yan Che continuously hammered Yuan Gun Gun's core.

'Um... Che... hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun murmured.

Hao Yan Che wrapped Yuan Gun Gun's legs around his waist, held her bottom and poured his seed inside her. They peaked together, he stayed inside her and caressed her bottom.

'For the next several days stay at home,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You're not allowed to leave.'

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'No reason,' Hao Yan Che asked.

'What about you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I have something I need to do,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Where do you need to be?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Work,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s long hair.

‘Why can’t I come to work with you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Do you want to work in your condition?’ Hao Yan Che asked and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom softly.

‘Ow...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s concern was lost on Yuan Gun Gun. Couldn’t she see how much he loved her, and wanted her to be safe?

Hao Yan Che rolled on his back, and Yuan Gun Gun laid on top of him.

‘When will you be coming home tomorrow?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Before dinner,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Can I take my small friends for a walk?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Do you need to get your ears checked?’ Hao Yan Che asked and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s ears’ softly.

‘Let go of my ears,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Promise you’ll stay at home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I promise,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You can’t eat junk food,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You can’t bring your small friends into our room or go into the kitchen.’

‘Yes, yes and yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Wait for me to eat dinner with you tomorrow,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘We can watch an animation movie together. Right now I want you again.’

Hao Yan Che hardened again inside Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Yes, yes and yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Wait...’

Yuan Gun Gun was right, Hao Yan Che didn’t have patience.

End of Chapter 133

Related

Chapter 134



At fourteen to one the following afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun laid lethargically on the grass with her small friends.

Yi Tu's shadow cast over Yuan Gun Gun and she sat up.

'Big brother Yi Tu, how come you're not with Che today?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yi Tu sat on the grass, and smiled at Yuan Gun Gun.

'Young master asked me to stay home with you,' Yi Tu said. 'Don't you want me to be here?'

'Of course it's good to have your company,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But you and big brother Jia Tu are normally with Che.'

Yi Tu watched Yuan Gun Gun played with her small friends.

'Big brother Yi Tu, I want to eat dessert,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'OK,' Yi Tu said. 'What dessert do you want me to get for you?'

'I want to eat egg tarts from Ting's Cafe,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ting's Cafe, near Hao Yan's company?' Yi Tu asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Does it have to be egg tarts from there?' Yi Tu asked. 'Don't you like the chef's desserts?'

'It's not that,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I don't know why, but I'm craving for egg tarts.'

'If you promise me that you'll stay at home then I'll go buy them for you,' Yi Tu said.

‘I promise I’ll stay home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Everyone at the Hao Mansion feared their young master. But they had the same weakness as their young master. They were all putty in their young master’s wife’s hands. Yi Tu wasn’t an exception.

Yi Tu walked to the car, and Yuan Gun Gun received a phone call from Feng Du Du.

‘Mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Little treasure are you at home?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘I’m on my way there.’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She rubbed Xiao Yuan’s back. ‘Mummy is it just you?’

‘Just me,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘I’m coming to pick you up for lunch.’

‘Where’s daddy?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘He’s at work,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Mummy, why aren’t you eating with daddy today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’m almost there,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘We’ll talk later.’

‘Mummy, wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che said I can’t go out today.’

‘Is he at home?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then there is no problem,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘But...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘My little treasure doesn’t need her mummy because she has her husband,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Mummy, of course I need you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then stay home and wait for mummy,’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Hello?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Half an hour later Yi Tu returned to the garden with a box of egg tarts. He panicked when he saw the note on the garden table, ‘Big brother Yi Tu, I’m really

sorry. My mummy picked me up to eat lunch with her. She'll drive me home after lunch. I'm sorry. P.S. Don't tell Che.'

'Gun Gun, do you want young master to kill me?' Yi Tu asked himself.

At the grand opening of a new restaurant, Feng Du Du piled spicy food into Yuan Gun Gun's bowl.

'Little treasure, does the food taste good?' Feng Du Du asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She drank a glass of water. 'Mummy, how did you find out about this place?'

'I saw it in a newspaper advertisement,' Feng Du Du said. 'I wanted to come here with your daddy. But he hates eating spicy food, and he's too busy to take me here today.'

'Mummy, are you and daddy fighting?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'No,' Feng Du Du said. 'Your daddy is really busy. I think I'm being unreasonable.'

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Because this morning your daddy said he's not free to come here with me,' Feng Du Du said. 'I got upset with him. Now that I think about it, I'm being petty. He promised to take me here tomorrow.'

'Mummy, don't worry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Daddy isn't mad at you.'

'Um,' Feng Du Du said.

A man in a white suit appeared at the mother and daughter's table.

'Excuse me,' the man said. 'Are you Miss Feng?'

'My maiden name is Feng,' Feng Du Du said. 'But I'm a married woman so I'm not the Miss Feng you're looking for.'

'I'm sorry,' the man said. 'I should have asked if you're mistress Feng Du Du.'

'Yes,' Feng Du Du said. 'Why?'

Related

Chapter 135



‘Mr Yuan, Yuan Ting Liu has a surprise for you and young mistress Yuan,’ the man said. ‘He sent me here to drive you there.’

‘Where?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘Follow me,’ the man said.

The gullible Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun held each other’s hands, and followed the man to a car.

‘Mistress Feng and young mistress Yuan, take a seat in the car,’ the man said.’

‘Talk less and capture them,’ the ponytail man said.

The ponytail man grabbed Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

‘Ah... let me go!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, let go... let go of me!’ Feng Du Du said.

The man grabbed Feng Du Du too, and neither mother nor daughter could move.

‘Let go of us!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Who are you?’ Feng Du Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun bit the ponytail’s arm hard. The ponytail man threw Yuan Gun Gun to the ground.

‘Gun Gun...’ Feng Du Du called.

‘Ah!’ the men cried out.

A tall beautiful woman with long hair to her thighs kicked the two men’s faces. The two men fell to the ground, and looked up the woman’s dress.

‘Did you two see something forbidden?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Does white underpants count?’ the two men asked.

Long Liu Bao cracked her knuckles and smiled at the two men.

‘Ah!’ the two men cried out.

Long Liu Bao’s beautiful hands cracked the two men’s necks. Then she tossed the two silent men onto the ground.

Long Liu Bao turned around and assessed Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun for injuries.

‘Are you two ladies OK?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun looked at Long Liu Bao like she was a heroine out of fairy tale.

‘What are your names?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yuan Gun Gun,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Feng Du Du,’ Feng Du Du said.

Long Liu Bao thought she heard them called themselves little round ball and little chub. She held their soft hands, and smiled warmly at them.

‘What adorable names,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Where are you ladies going? Do you ladies want me to take you two home?’

‘To your home,’ Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun said.

Feng Du Du and Yuan Gun Gun followed Long Liu Bao to Long Wu’s company.

Inside the CEO’s office, two handsome identical looking men were happy to see Long Liu Bao. One man looked like a gentle angel and the second man looked like an oppressive king.

‘Bao Bao, why are you here?’ Long Liu Lang asked gently. ‘Didn’t you say you wanted to go shopping?’

Long Liu Bao hugged Long Liu Lang.

‘I saved these two lovely sisters from thugs,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘We hit it off, and became friends.’

Long Liu Bo looked at Yuan Gun Gun who looked familiar to him.

‘Aren’t you Che’s wife?’ Long Liu Bo asked Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Hehe... hi big brother Lang and big brother Bo,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Yuan Gun Gun’s life was over. Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t believe she met the Long brothers’ little sister. Hao Yan Che was going to kill Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Everyone knows each other?’ Long Liu Bao asked and stood next to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun is your big brother Che’s little treasure,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Hao Yan Che?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

Long Liu Bo knocked Long Liu Bao’s forehead.

‘Where are your manners?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Impossible,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Gun Gun can’t be the wife of the beautiful angel with a demon soul.’

Yuan Gun Gun held Long Liu Bao’s hands like she met a kindred spirit. Yuan Gun Gun finally met someone who wasn’t hoodwinked by her husband’s beauty.

‘Xiao Bao, even if it’s the truth, you shouldn’t let him hear you praise him like that,’ Long Liu Bo said.

End of Chapter 135

Related

Chapter 136



Long Liu Bao looked at Yuan Gun Gun like she couldn't believe Yuan Gun Gun would fall into a trap. Yuan Gun Gun looked innocently at Long Liu Bao, and they both sighed together.

The two Long brothers looked at the two little monkeys, and they thought Hao Yan Che's taste was unique.

'What about Du Du?' Long Liu Bao asked. 'Du Du and Gun Gun look like sisters.'

'Aunty is Gun Gun's mummy,' Feng Du Du said and beamed.

Long Liu Bao received another shock. Impossible. She couldn't believe the youthful looking Feng Du Du was Yuan Gun Gun's mum.

'Aunty... you look so youthful,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Aunty, you need to share your beauty secret with my mum.'

Feng Du Du held Long Liu Bao's hands gleefully.

'Really?' Feng Du Du asked. 'Bao Bao is a loveable girl. Bao Bao can come to aunty's home anytime. Aunty will cook Bao Bao delicious food.'

The Long brothers were scared to meet another woman living under her husband's protective wings.

At Hao Yan's company, in Hao Yan Che's office was an icier atmosphere than at Long Wu's company.

'Young master, I'm sorry,' Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu kept his head bowed. He was too scared to look at Hao Yan Che's eyes.

'Don't tell me you didn't find her,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I'm sorry,' Yi Tu said.

‘Yi Tu how long have you served me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You should know me by now.’

‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Yi Tu said. ‘But...’

‘You couldn’t turn down her request and disobeyed me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yi Tu knelt on the floor and banged his head on the floor.

‘Young master, I’m sorry,’ Yi Tu said.

Fortunately for Yi Tu, Long Liu Bo called Hao Yan Che’s phone.

‘Che, your loveable wife is with us,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘I’ll be right there,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Your lively mother-in-law is here with us too,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone, put on his jacket and called his father-in-law’s phone on the way to the car.

Yi Tu looked at Hao Yan Che walking out of the office, and he thanked his lucky star that Yuan Gun Gun was found.

‘You’re not safe yet,’ Jia Tu said.

‘Jia Tu, if you were in my shoes, could you say no to Gun Gun?’ Yi Tu asked.

Jia Tu silently agreed.

‘Gun Gun knows how to give someone a headache,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Don’t worry,’ Jia Tu said. ‘Later it won’t just be your head that aches.’

While Jia Tu taunted Yi Tu, Hao Yan Che zoomed to Long Wu’s company. Hao Yan Che kicked open the CEO’s office door. Long Liu Bao instinctively stood in front of Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun was happy to hide behind Long Liu Bao’s back, because Hao Yan Che looked like he wanted to send everyone to their next life.

Long Liu Bao looked at the other beautiful man behind Hao Yan Che. She thought the world was unfair to give men with demon souls such beautiful faces.

Yuan Ting Liu strode toward Feng Du Du. Long Liu Bao couldn’t believe Yuan

Ting Liu was Yuan Gun Gun's dad. Yuan Ting Liu looked intimidating like Long Liu Bao's dad.

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Long Liu Bao who dared to hide his wife from him.

'Long Liu Bao,' Hao Yan Che said.

Long Liu Bao shivered in fear.

'Hello big brother Che,' Long Liu Bao greeted. 'How have you been lately? Has business been good? Did you buy a home and got married? If you haven't it's time for you to settle down and have babies.'

'Are you sure you want to stand here?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Long Liu Bao almost bowed and said no sir. She knew if someone was going to hell, it would be her.

'I'm sure you'll be reasonable,' Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao hid behind the Long brothers. She knew what books were forbidden like how she knew she couldn't save Yuan Gun Gun. She could only ask the Long brothers to save Yuan Gun Gun.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was unprotected so she sat on the floor in front of Hao Yan Che.

Long Liu Bao looked at her kindred spirit who sat pitifully on the floor. Her kindred spirit's pitiful state reminded her of herself.

'Little rice ball, stand up,' Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 136

Related

Chapter 137



Long Liu Bao was in awe of Hao Yan Che's nicknaming talent. She thought little rice ball was a befitting name for someone loveable like Yuan Gun Gun.

'Look at me,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

Hao Yan Che gently held his wife's face. He saw someone dared hit his wife's face, and he wanted to kill that person's whole family.

Long Liu Bao was grateful she was standing behind the Long brothers.

'Where else?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'What?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Long Liu Bao was in awe with Yuan Gun Gun's talent of acting clueless. She thought Yuan Gun Gun was a better actress than her.

'Where else are you hurt?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Oh,' Yuan Gun Gun said. She lifted her dress above her scraped knees. 'Do you mean this?'

Long Liu Bao covered her eyes. She couldn't believe how honest Yuan Gun Gun was. Did Yuan Gun Gun wanted to die?

'Good little rice ball,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che held his doomed wife's hand.

'Thank you little sister Liu Bao,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I owe you a favor. Next time Lang and Bo wants to kill you, I'll come save you.'

Long Liu Bao came out of hiding, and stood in front of the Long brothers.

'Do you mean it?' Long Liu Bao asked. 'You have to keep your promise.'

The Long brothers smiled dangerously at Long Liu Bao.

‘Big brother Che, forget it,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I won’t give them a reason to kill me.’

Long Liu Bo stroked Long Liu Bao’s hair.

‘Xiao Bao is a good little girl,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘You’re finally maturing.’

Long Liu Bao smiled sweetly at the Long brothers.

‘Feng Du Du,’ Yuan Ting Liu called.

‘I’m here,’ Feng Du Du said. ‘Husband are you thirsty? Hungry? Tired? Do you want to sleep?’

Feng Du Du didn’t look like a mother of a grown woman. But her husband was immune to her sweet deposition when he was angry at her.

‘Let’s go home,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu held Feng Du Du’s hand, and they walked to his car.

Long Liu Bao pitied Yuan Gun Gun. Yuan Gun Gun grew up with a cold dad, and Yuan Gun Gun married a monster.

Later at the Hao Mansion’s living room, Yi Tu was kneeling on the floor.

‘Che, why is big brother Yi Tu kneeling?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’ll know soon,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Aunty Chen, bring it here.’

‘Young master...’ Mrs Chen said.

‘Bring it here,’ Hao Yan Che ordered.

Mrs Chen reluctantly gave Hao Yan Che a silver box.

Yuan Gun Gun knew any beautiful boxes that appeared inside the Hao Mansion held deadly contents.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che took out the long whip from the silver box.

‘Yi Tu, who am I?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Yi Tu, you willingly serve under me and know what happens if you defy me,’ Hao Yan Che. ‘Today if you don’t want to admit you disobeyed me, you’re free to leave. Do you want to leave or stay and face the whip?’

‘Young master, I choose to receive my punishment,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che whipped Yi Tu’s left shoulder. Yi Tu’s left shoulder bled, but Yi Tu endured the pain silently.

Hao Yan Che saw the wound on Yi Tu’s shoulder and he suppressed their bond over the years. Hao Yan Che needed to stay indifferent, he whipped Yi Tu’s back four times. Yi Tu’s bloodied skin peels stuck to the whip.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t standby to witness Yi Tu being whipped. Yuan Gun Gun knew that if anyone disobeyed Hao Yan Che’s orders, they would be whipped. Hao Yan Che threatened to whip Yuan Gun Gun often, but she never seen him take out a whip to whip anyone until that day. The sounds of the whip lashes, and the sight of Yi Tu’s blood made Yuan Gun Gun’s head dizzy.

End of Chapter 137

Related

Chapter 138



Yi Tu gritted his teeth and clenched his pale hands. Yi Tu didn't make a sound or defend himself while Hao Yan Che whipped him.

Yuan Gun Gun held onto Hao Yan Che's arm.

'Che, don't hit,' Yuan Gun Gun pleaded.

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun's hands away, and continued to whip Yi Tu.

Yuan Gun Gun knelt at Hao Yan Che's feet, and she held onto his leg.

'Che, don't hit,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You're going to kill big brother Yi Tu. Che, I'm begging you don't hit big brother Yi Tu.'

'Move out of the way,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Later it's your turn.'

Hao Yan Che whipped Yi Tu's ear. Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che's leg, and she knelt in front of Yi Tu to protect Yi Tu. Yi Tu hugged Yuan Gun Gun and protected her from Hao Yan Che's whip.

Hao Yan Che immediately pulled back the whip. He was worried it struck his wife.

Yuan Gun Gun freed herself from Yi Tu's embrace. She knelt in front of Yi Tu and begged Hao Yan Che again.

'Che, don't hit big brother Yi Tu,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What?' Hao Yan Che said. 'Is your skin itchy?'

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

'Young master...' Mrs Chen called.

Hao Yan Che raised the whip. Yuan Gun Gun covered her face, and waited for

the whip to strike her. She waited a while, and nothing hit her. She uncovered her face, and didn't know how Hao Yan Che wrapped the whip around her without hurting her.

Hao Yan Che slung Yuan Gun Gun over his shoulder, and he carried her to their bedroom.

Mrs Chen sighed in relief. She was relieved Hao Yan Che loved Yuan Gun Gun and wouldn't whip Yuan Gun Gun.

Jia Tu helped Yi Tu stand.

'How are you feeling?' Jia Tu asked.

'I feel loved,' Yi Tu said sarcastically.

Jia Tu rolled his eyes.

'How can young master punish you this cruelly?' Mrs Chen asked. 'Jia Tu, help bandage Yi Tu's wounds.'

'Not all the lashes were painful,' Yi Tu joked. 'When Gun Gun was protecting me, young master's whip felt like a feather scratching me. Young master sure plays favoritism.'

'Are you young master's wife?' Jia Tu asked sarcastically.

In the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was tossed on the bed and still bound.

'Young master... husband... Che... I'm scared,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Don't hit me.'

'You know how to admit you're wrong quickly,' Hao Yan Che said. 'But you know how to cause trouble quicker.'

'But I didn't know my mummy would come here today to take me out,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you saying I misunderstood you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'm saying I didn't intentionally leave,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'There's never a time you intentionally disobey me,' Hao Yan Che said. 'But every time I ask you to do something to keep you safe, my words fly out of your ears.'

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I didn’t want to go out. It’s because mummy looked sad, and I agreed to go out with mummy to cheer her up.’

‘Is that why you chose to forget my words and went outside?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her mouth. She knew her husband was extra angry that day.

‘What do you think would have happened if you didn’t meet Long Liu Bao today?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Don’t you know what would have happened to you if you were kidnapped? How many times have I told you that it’s OK if you’re not smart as long as you listen to me and stay safe? Do my words reach your heart? Or is it if I don’t let you do something, it makes you want to defy me?’

Hao Yan Che thumped the bed a millimetre from Yuan Gun Gun. The rope flew off Yuan Gun Gun’s body. Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the bed and hid in a wardrobe.

‘Come out,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I know I was wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. She whimpered in the wardrobe. ‘Don’t hit me.’

‘Come out,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t make me say it a third time.’

Yuan Gun Gun opened the wardrobe doors. She hid in the corner behind clothes, and looked pitifully at her husband.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun outside the wardrobe.

‘Don’t forget Yi Tu was punished because of you,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you don’t want the people around you that you care about be punished then you need to be good. Understand?’

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, and Hao Yan Che wiped her tears.

‘Che, the truth is big brother Yi Tu didn’t do anything wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Yi Tu made me promise not to leave while he went to buy food for me. I didn’t listen to him. I went out to eat lunch with mummy. I thought I would be back home soon. I didn’t think those scary men would capture me and mummy. They hit me. I was really scared. I didn’t want to die, because I haven’t

given birth to your baby yet.'

End of Chapter 138

Related

Chapter 139



Warning: Readers do not read chapter 139 on a full stomach or if you're about to eat.

Chapter 139

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bed, and laid next to her.

'You know how to be scared?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun clung onto Hao Yan Che's body.

'Of course I was scared,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Because you won't there with me.'

'I'm going to tell you what would have happened to you if you were kidnapped today,' Hao Yan Che said. 'They would have scarred your face, raped you, lock you in a room and torture you until you wished you were dead. They would have peeled off your fingernails, scratch your lips off, cut off your ears, pour hot coal on your head, they would starve you and not let you have a bath.'

Hao Yan Che held his wife's whitened face.

'Do you dare not listen to me again?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun cried out of fear of what would have happened if she was kidnapped.

Hao Yan Che flipped Yuan Gun Gun under him.

'Don't think because your family and everyone around you here love you that everyone else in the world will love you too,' Hao Yan Che said. 'There are bad people in the world, and scary demons who lurk in the shadows. Do you think they would spare you if you cry in front of them?'

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

‘If you want to be safe then stay by my side,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you don’t listen to me, I won’t need you anymore.’

Hao Yan Che was happy to see Yuan Gun Gun looked sad after he threatened he wouldn’t need her anymore. He kissed her lips. He didn’t care if she truly loved him or not, as long as she didn’t want to leave him.

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Hao Yan Che back. He released her lips, and nibbled her lips while she breathed.

‘Do you want a baby?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know why his childish wife wanted to have his baby. It wouldn’t matter if their daughter inherited her intelligence. But it would matter if their son inherited her intelligence. He didn’t care, he wanted to have a baby with her.

‘You can’t cry halfway and say you don’t want to,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned red.

‘Did you hear me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Do you want to do it today?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Yesterday we did it many times.’

‘If yesterday you ate dessert, would you still want to eat dessert today?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Why do we do it every day but there’s no baby?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It means we’re not doing it often enough,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

‘Um... don’t leave marks,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘People will see.’

‘Why are you always noisy in bed?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che took off his and Yuan Gun Gun’s clothes.

‘After what happened today, you should cooperate with me if you don’t want me to stay angry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you cry halfway, I won’t let you sleep

tonight.'

'Che, wait...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

That night Hao Yan Che didn't let Yuan Gun Gun sleep.

The following afternoon, Jia Tu captured Qiang Jia Tao and her two minions and brought her to see Hao Yan Che in a secret location.

'Who are you?' Qiang Jia Tao asked. 'What do you want?'

Jia Tu took off Qiang Jia Tao's blindfold.

'Qiang Jia Tao, I gave you a chance but you didn't cherish it,' Hao Yan Che said.

'If I can't have you, she can't have you,' Qiang Jia Tao said. 'I want her to die suffering. Yesterday she was lucky she escaped. I had prepared ten men to rape her, a knife to cut her face and let her take a bath in boiling water. What a waste she didn't come.'

'Good,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I'll return the favor. Jia Tu, go find ten men to play with her. Don't forget to bring back the sharpest knife and prepare a tub of boiling water. Use the knife to help her exfoliate her face and her scalp. Let her soak in boiling water. Afterward you can take her back to Daniel's place. Tell Daniel I don't care what he does. But he'll suffer painfully for daring to hurt my wife. If there is a next time, he'll pay with his life.'

'Yes young master,' Jia Tu said.

'As for the two men, chop off their arms and legs,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Put their arms and legs through the mincer and make them eat their minced arms and legs. Then return them to Daniel alive.'

The two minions' bodies shook with tribulation.

'Yes young master,' Jia Tu said.

'After you're done, remember to take a bath,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I don't want to smell fresh blood on you.'

Hao Yan Che walked out of the secret location. His ears didn't care about the screams of pain. No one was allowed to hurt his little rice ball.

At the Long Mansion, Long Liu Bao looked out the window at the stormy night

and lightning bolts. Whoever was behind Yuan Gun Gun's failed kidnapping wasn't going to survive the storm.

Long Liu Bao picked up a chocolate and popped it in Yuan Gun Gun's mouth. In the morning, Hao Yan Che dropped off his little treasure at the Long Mansion. Hao Yan Che explained he wanted his little treasure to have a friend so she would be less lonely. Long Liu Bao wouldn't believe Hao Yan Che's lie even if the sky fell down. Long Liu Bao knew Hao Yan Che was up to no good, and he wanted Long Liu Bao to babysit his little treasure and ensure his little treasure didn't run away. Long Liu Bao lived with the Long brothers long enough to recognise a ruthless man like Hao Yan Che.

End of Chapter 139

Related

Chapter 140



Warning: Chapter 140 has polygamy references and may cause some readers distress.

Chapter 140

‘The heavens’ crying because of me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Oh please,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘If it’s raining it’s because the heavens’ peeing.’

‘Then the heavens’ lightning bolts are striking the ground because they’re angry on my behalf,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Oh please,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘The heavens’ lightning bolts are accidental farts.’

‘Then the heavens’ hailing on that hateful man on behalf of me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Oh please,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘The heaven’s hailing because it’s their number twos.’

Yuan Gun Gun had enough. She turned around and glared at her laughing friend.

‘Do you actually think the heavens can’t control their bladder, farts and bowel?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, everyone has the same three kinds of emergencies,’ Long Liu Bao. ‘You shouldn’t assume the heavens can control every emergency.’

‘What a hateful friend you are,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Can’t you sympathise with me a bit?’

‘Your husband at most would pat you two times if he’s angry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘His heart would break if his little treasure is in pain. Not like me, I’ve been

given beatings since I was a little girl.'

'Do they break your phone?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'What's a broken phone?' Long Liu Bao asked. 'They've broken my laptop before.'

Yuan Gun Gun was grateful Hao Yan Che didn't break her laptop.

'Does your husband threaten to lock you in the bedroom with him if you don't cooperate with your husband?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'Usually he doesn't threaten to lock me in our bedroom with him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He takes me to bed and keeps me in bed with him for a long time. Even if I beg him to spare me, he won't let me go until he's satisfied.'

Long Liu Lang thought Hao Yan Che was a true monster.

'Do they hit you there?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Where?' Long Liu Lang asked.

'You know,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'On your round place.'

'Do you mean my bottom?' Long Liu Bao asked. 'Yes they've hit my bottom right in front of the servants.'

Yuan Gun Gun sympathised with Long Liu Bao's plight. The Long brothers were too much.

'Does your husband hit your head with his knuckles?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then you're luckier than me,' Long Liu Bao said.

'He hits my head with his whole hand,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

The two women exchanged a sympathetic look with each other. They were born to be friends. Who else suffered the same fate as them?

'But isn't big brother Lang gentle?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'At least if big brother Bo is angry at you, you have big brother Lang to protect you. If Che is angry at me, I have no one to protect me.'

'Do you actually think big brother Lang is gentle?' Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Lang is gentle and caring.’

Yuan Gun Gun had dreamt of marrying a gentle and caring man.

‘Yes, big brother Lang is gentle and caring,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘But if he loses his temper, he’s scarier than big brother Bo.’

Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun popped a chocolate in their mouths.

‘At least there are times when big brother Lang is gentle and caring,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re right,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘But have you thought how scarier it is for me when they’re angry at the same time? At least you only have to deal with one Hao Yan Che no matter his mood swings. When big brother Bo and big brother Lang are angry at the same time, the person who’s dead is me.’

‘It sounds like you live a more dangerous life,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, don’t you think it’s wrong for them to be with me?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘What’s wrong about it?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Do you think it’s normal for two men to be with the same woman?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘As long as you love them then there is nothing wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t think there is anything absolutely right or wrong in the world. It depends on each person if they think what they do with their own life is worth it. You and big brother Lang and big brother Bo are compatible with each other and love each other. There is nothing wrong with you being with them.’

‘Thank you my dear friend,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘What is there to thank me for?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Nothing,’ Long Liu Bao said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks.

‘The truth is I wanted a husband who is gentle and caring like big brother Lang,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Do you want me to help you find a gentle and caring husband?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Long Liu Bao. Why did Hao Yan Che always appear at the wrong time? Yuan Gun Gun wondered if there was bad blood between her and the heavens.

End of Chapter 140

Related

Chapter 141



Hao Yan Che smiled at his little rice ball. He was going to give his little rice ball a good talk that night.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘My little treasure, let’s go home,’ Hao Yan Che said in a scary gentle voice.

‘I... I... today I want to stay here with Bao Bao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I said let’s go home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked slowly toward Hao Yan Che. He lifted her in his arms, wrapped her legs around his waist and carried her like she was his little treasure.

‘Your big brother Che is taking his little treasure home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Take care my loveable little sister Liu Bao.’

Hao Yan Che’s scary smile made Long Liu Bao shivered.

‘Bye big brother Che,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘When you’re free bring Gun Gun here to play.’

‘I’ll try,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘But I have a feeling starting from today my little treasure will be busy for a whole year.’

Hao Yan Che carried his little treasure to the car, and Long Liu Bao prayed for Yuan Gun Gun’s life. Long Liu Bao hoped Yuan Gun Gun would accept her own fate caused by her own mouth.

Later at the Hao Mansion in the living room, Hao Yan Che’s little treasure was happy to see his parents sitting on the sofa.

‘Mummy, daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Gun Gun,’ Qiu Li Luo called.

‘Go to our room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I want to stay here and spend time with mummy.’

‘Go to our room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips, and walked to the master bedroom.

‘Xiao Che, I know Jia Tao did the wrong thing,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘But you’re too cruel.’

Hao Yan Che sat on a chair.

‘Mum, do you think I’m too cruel?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Isn’t it true?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘It’s true you married the wrong man,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you married a gentle and caring man then you wouldn’t give birth to a son like me. I have no control over the genes I inherited.’

‘Hao Yan Che!’ Qiu Li Luo called.

‘Darling son, are you causing trouble?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘I only wanted her to taste what she wanted to do to Yuan Gun Gun but couldn’t,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Do you still think it’s too cruel? Everything that happened to her is everything she prepared to torture your precious daughter-in-law.’

Qiu Li Luo and Hao Yan Que couldn’t refute Hao Yan Che’s reasoning.

‘Xiao Che, but Gun Gun is safe,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Why couldn’t you spare Qiang Jia Tao this one time...’

‘My darling mum, are you sure I didn’t give her a chance?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Mum, have you forgotten I said there won’t be a second time?’

Hao Yan Que held the crying Qiu Li Luo on his lap.

‘Hao Yan Che, watch your attitude toward your mum,’ Hao Yan Que warned.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It looks like mum wants Yuan Gun Gun to be

injured so mum can cry in front of Qiang Jia Tao and tell Qiang Jia Tao how cruel she is.'

'I would never want Gun Gun to be harmed,' Qiu Li Luo said.

The sound of a fallen vase was heard. Behind the fallen vase was Yuan Gun Gun. Hao Yan Che caught her before she could escape.

'Yuan Gun Gun it looks like your life is too comfortable lately,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I... I...,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Is it because you don't understand what it means to go to our room or you want to see if I'll whip you to death?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun bowed her head to avoid Hao Yan Che's cold eyes.

'Mum, dad, I need to go make the next generation with my wife,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You two are free to stay here.'

Hao Yan Che didn't wait for his parents' reaction. He carried his dummy little rice ball to their bedroom.

Qiu Li Luo hugged her husband.

'If in the past I didn't bring Qiang Jia Tao here then today would never have happened,' Qiu Li Luo said.

'In this world there is no such thing as undoing the past,' Hao Yan Que said. 'She has to deal with the consequences of her actions.'

Qiu Li Luo didn't understand why love made Qiang Jia Tao lose her own conscience. How did the sweet and innocent Qiang Jia Tao turn spiteful and vicious to the point of wanting to make Hao Yan Che's woman suffer?

End of Chapter 141

Related

Chapter 142



Note: Chapter 142 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 142.

Chapter 142

In the Hao Mansion's master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun sat on the edge of the bed.

'How much did you hear?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Everything,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her mouth again after a tensed silence.

'Che, big sister Jia Tao...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Is dead,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun onto his lap, and pinched her bottom.

'That hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You dare eavesdrop yet you're scared of pain,' Hao Yan Che said.

'If you let me hear then I wouldn't need to eavesdrop,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Isn't a husband and wife meant to be honest with each other and not hide secrets?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I tell you about everything I do, but you tell nothing about what you do. That's not a fair exchange.'

'Do you tell me everything?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'The other night you secretly ate cheesecake. Last night you dare give medicine to Yi Tu behind my back. Today you ate junk food like crazy at the Long Mansion. Can you say that you tell me everything?'

‘How did you know?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Do you think everyone has your intelligence?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips.

‘There is no one in the world who isn’t hiding a secret,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I only explain when necessary. Why do I need to explain to my dummy?’

Yuan Gun Gun slid off Hao Yan Che’s lap, and laid on the bed with her back facing Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun from behind. She let him fondle her breasts since it would be futile to push his hands away.

‘Um... Che, was big sister Jia Tao the person who wanted to kidnap me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Does big sister Jia Tao hate me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘She hates you bone deep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But in the past she was good to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘She put on an act,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re in a good mood,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Let’s exercise a bit.’

Hao Yan Che took off Yuan Gun Gun’s dress.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I still want to talk with you.’

‘You can ask,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘And I’ll exercise. We won’t disrupt each other.’

Yuan Gun Gun sighed. She hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck and let him exercise inside her body.

A while later Yuan Gun Gun orgasmed and cried out Hao Yan Che’s name.

‘Che, do you love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che moved deeper inside Yuan Gun Gun, and rubbed against her

sensitive spot.

‘Um... Che, be gentle,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s chest back. She couldn’t get used to his strength even after being intimate with him every day for more than three years.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s glazed eyes. Couldn’t she feel how much he loved her? Didn’t her heart know she was the most important person to him? What else could he do to make her feel his love for her? Why did she doubt him? Should he give her a baby to erase her doubts?

Yuan Gun Gun’s body accepted Hao Yan Che’s seed. But her heart craved for his love. They were married for more than three years yet he didn’t love her. She loved him deeply. She didn’t know what would happen to her if one day he didn’t need her anymore.

‘Am I hurting you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s tears. She usually cried a little after he stopped, but not while he was still moving inside her.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to have a baby with you.’

‘If you want a baby, I’ll give you a baby,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It’s been three years but I’m not pregnant,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I promise this year you’ll be pregnant,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Do you promise?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘But...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Be quiet,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you say another word, I’m not going to give you a baby.’

Hao Yan Che thrust hard into Yuan Gun Gun’s tight passage.

‘Um... ah...’ Yuan Gun Gun muffled a cry.

The master bedroom became quiet except for the sounds of the bed springs creaking. The creaking sounds lasted throughout the night.

End of Chapter 142

Related

Chapter 143



At Han Yan's company, Yuan Gun Gun delivered reports on different floors.

'Big sister Feng, here are a copy of the latest reports,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Thank you Gun Gun,' Feng Ting said. 'I bought sushi. It's lunch time, eat together with me.'

'Sorry big sister Feng,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'If I don't have lunch with Che, he'll be angry.'

'Are you sure?' Feng Ting asked. She took out the boxes of sushi from a drawer and showed them to Yuan Gun Gun. 'I bought it just then.'

Yuan Gun Gun hesitated to eat lunch with Feng Ting.

'Let's go eat together to the tea room,' Feng Ting said. 'I'll make us hot green tea to eat with the sushi.'

In the tearoom, two female workers gossiped about Yuan Gun Gun.

'I don't know what's so good about Yuan Gun Gun,' the brunette woman said. 'She doesn't deserve to be married to our CEO Hao. I pity CEO Hao has to be married to a woman like Yuan Gun Gun.'

'Not only is she ordinary,' the drag queen woman said. 'She's been married to CEO Hao for three years, and hasn't even laid a rotten egg. I think CEO Hao has no interest to sleep with her. The only reason he would marry her is that someone forced him to marry her.'

'Who knows,' the brunette said. 'She must have drugged him, and he was forced to marry her.'

'What man would love a woman who is ugly and dumb?' the drag queen asked. 'Who knows, by the end of this year we'll hear news about them divorcing.'

Besides a handsome and successful man like CEO Hao would have mistresses. So it wouldn't matter if he's married or divorced. To him, a marriage or a divorce certificate is a piece of decoration.'

'Hey you gossipmongers, don't you two have work to do?' Feng Ting asked. 'Why are you two so free to gossip about other people? What can't lay a rotten egg? Can you two lay a fried egg? We're all women. There is no need to talk trash about each other.'

The brunette and the drag queen stopped laughing the moment they saw Yuan Gun Gun. They were jealous of Yuan Gun Gun, but they didn't want to lose their jobs. They quickly left the tea room.

Only an angry Feng Ting and a quiet Yuan Gun Gun were left in the tea room.

Feng Ting put the sushi on the table, poured two cups of green tea and consoled Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, don't take their words to heart,' Feng Ting said. 'Most people are ruled by jealousy. Because they see other people have what they want, they trash talk about people out of jealousy to make themselves look good.'

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head and forced a smile.

'I'm OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'What they said was true. Che and I... the distance between us is the same distance as the sky and the ground. Sometimes standing next to him, I feel that I'm not worthy to be with him. Che married me to take responsibility. But I didn't drug him or use any other scheme to force him to marry me.'

'Gun Gun, you don't need to explain,' Feng Ting said. 'I understand. I believe CEO Hao would scheme to get you to marry him. But I don't believe you would ever scheme to get him to marry you.'

Feng Ting patted Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder.

'Let's eat,' Feng Ting said. 'If CEO Hao chose you then it shows how important you are in his heart. Don't underestimate yourself, you have more good traits than you think.'

Feng Ting put an Aburi Salmon Nigiri on Yuan Gun Gun's plate.

‘Big sister Feng, do you think one day Che won’t need me anymore?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, no one can predict a person’s heart in the future,’ Feng Ting said. ‘Love comes and goes in a blink of an eye. Underneath CEO Hao’s status, he is just like other ordinary man. Whether a man is gentle and caring or not, a person’s heart is still the fastest thing that can change in the world. So you shouldn’t be stubborn. If that day comes, you should let go. If you hold on, you’ll only be hurting yourself.’

‘Big sister Feng, are you saying one day Che will have a change of heart?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘And I should listen to him and let him go?’

‘No little dummy,’ Feng Ting said. ‘I meant no one can predict what will happen in the future. You only need to worry about appreciating every second and minute of the day. It doesn’t matter what will happen in the future. You only need to go with the flow. Don’t worry about what you can’t control, and don’t put pressure on yourself. Understand?’

‘Is there something I can do so Che won’t ever leave me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If such a way existed then there wouldn’t be so many people in the world who kill themselves over love,’ Feng Ting said. ‘Holding someone’s hand for a whole lifetime is something precious. Not everyone is that blessed. But I believe you’re that blessed so you don’t need to worry.’

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because the heavens loves dummies,’ Feng Ting said.

Yuan Gun Gun frowned. She was unhappy with Feng Ting’s answer.

After lunch, Yuan Gun Gun ran to Hao Yan Che’s office. She couldn’t believe she took half an hour to eat sushi.

Yuan Gun Gun opened Hao Yan Che’s office. There was no one inside. She sighed in relief, and sat at her desk. She noticed two wrapped boxes on Hao Yan Che’s desk. Did someone sent Hao Yan Che gifts?

Yuan Gun Gun was curious, and walked to Hao Yan Che’s desk. It looked like a

woman gave him the gifts.

End of Chapter 143

Related

Chapter 144



Warning: Chapter 144 has Pandora's Box references. What's in the box may cause some readers distress.

Chapter 144

Hao Yan Che walked into his office the moment Yuan Gun Gun was about to touch the boxes on his desk.

'You can't touch them!' Hao Yan Che said sternly.

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was curious what was inside the boxes. Hao Yan Che rarely forbid her to touch any of his things.

'Don't you know how to read?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'They are addressed to me.'

'I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Didn't your parents teach you that you shouldn't open another person's gift?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun took a step back. Her eyes stung. She was married to Hao Yan Che for more than three years. But in his eyes she was only an outsider.

'Where did you go before?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Big sister Feng invited me to eat sushi with her,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Go deliver the reports I put on your desk,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the reports from her desk, and quietly left Hao Yan Che's office.

Hao Yan Che silently looked at Yuan Gun Gun's lonely back.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu looked at each other confusedly. They didn't understand what happened between Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun.

Hao Yan Che opened the two wrapped boxes. Inside were two fresh bleeding heads. Their mouths were sewed together, their minced brains and blood were mixed together and their eyes were dangling from their eye sockets.

Hao Yan Che read the letter attached to the boxes, 'Mr Hao, I've sent you my sincere apologies. Here the two heads of the men who deserved to die. Believe me, I had no involvement with your wife's kidnapping attempt. I wouldn't dare oppose you by causing harm to your wife. Please forgive for my traitorous men's actions.'

'Are these the two men who kidnapped Gun Gun?' Yi Tu asked.

'Looks like it,' Jia Tu said.

Yi Tu felt nauseous. How could Daniel be that cruel to his own men?

'Young master, were you stern with Gun Gun before because you could smell fresh blood from the boxes?' Yi Tu asked.

'Yi Tu, Jia Tu, go release Daniel's son,' Hao Yan Che ordered. 'And give these boxes to Daniel's son. Tell Daniel's son to return these boxes to Daniel.'

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu and Jia Tu said.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu bowed, they each carried a box and left Hao Yan Che's office.

In the women's bathroom, Yuan Gun Gun sat in a toilet cubicle and cried. She knew it was wrong to touch Hao Yan Che's things without his permission. But they were husband and wife. Why did he hide secrets from her? She didn't know what was so important inside the boxes that he wouldn't even let her see what was inside. Did he want freedom to keep secrets? But he didn't let her withhold a secret from him. He made all her decisions. He was used to having control over her. But why did he have to scold her over boxes? She only wanted to see what was inside. Was she only someone who helped to guard his home? Did he marry her because someone forced him?

'I heard someone delivered two wrapped gifts to CEO Hao's office,' the first

woman said. 'It must be from a woman.'

'And I saw Yuan Gun Gun crying and running out of CEO Hao's office,' the second woman said. 'Something must have happened.'

Yuan Gun Gun often accidentally overheard women gossiping in the women's toilets. There were many women at Han Yan's company who were secretly in love with Hao Yan Che.

'What did I tell you?' the third woman said. 'Miracles don't happen in real life. Only princesses get to marry the prince.'

'Yuan Gun Gun is a princess,' the first woman said. 'Yuan's company can't compare to Hao Yan's company. But Yuan's company is one of the top twenty richest companies in the world.'

'Then I should say, only beautiful princesses get to marry the prince,' the third woman said.

'What is wrong with you women?' the fourth woman asked. 'Don't you women have anything better to do? Who do you women think you are? I think Yuan Gun Gun is a genuine and caring person. Even if CEO Hao wasn't married to Yuan Gun Gun, you women have zero chance of attracting his attention.'

'What are you implying?' the first woman asked.

'What do you mean we don't have a chance?' the second woman asked.

'Are you saying we're nosy people?' the third woman asked. 'Who do you think you are to look down on us?'

While the three women were ganging up on the fourth woman, Yuan Gun Gun's phone rang.

'Did you go to Australia to deliver the reports?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'll come back now.'

Hao Yan Che's brows creased after hearing Yuan Gun Gun crying softly. He hung up the phone, and waited for her to return to his office.

Yuan Gun Gun got off the toilet seat. She dusted her bottom, and walked outside the toilet cubicle. The beautiful women who were gossiping about her

before were washing their hands at the sinks. She smiled at their ashamed faces, washed and dried her hands and walked outside the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to fight with the women who gossiped about her, because it was troublesome and what they said about her was the truth.

End of 144

Related

Chapter 145



Yuan Gun Gun returned to Hao Yan Che's office, and she stood at a distance from him.

'I'm sorry,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I was in the bathroom before.'

'Come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun walked to Hao Yan Che like nothing happened. He held her on his lap.

'Did you cry?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't say anything.

'Did I say something wrong?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'What you said was right. I'm sorry. In the future I won't do it again.'

'Then why did you go and hide to cry?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Do you think I'm unreasonable?'

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips.

'Talk,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I... in your heart, am I an outsider?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun took a deep breath, and looked at Hao Yan Che's eyes.

Hao Yan Che was unhappy to hear Yuan Gun Gun doubted him.

Yuan Gun Gun bowed her head, and regretted the question she asked Hao Yan Che.

'For three years your intelligence hasn't improved,' Hao Yan Che said. 'At least you know your place.'

Yuan Gun Gun slid off Hao Yan Che's lap.

'I'll go organise your schedule,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn't stop Yuan Gun Gun from going to her desk. He fisted his hands, looked at his laptop and ignored her.

Yuan Gun Gun returned to her desk and quietly worked.

Since that day, Hao Yan's company's employees lived on edge. They were scared to report to CEO Hao. Only CEO Hao's wife worked unaffected. They heard a foolish employee dared to give CEO Hao's wife a gift, and a love letter which made CEO Hao raged.

At the Hao Mansion's master bedroom at night.

'Yuan Gun Gun let go!' Hao Yan Che said.

'This is mine,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you going to let go or not?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Didn't you say it's wrong to touch another person's gift?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Don't tell you want to keep your secret admirer's gift as a love token,' Hao Yan Che said.

'What about you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'You kept two love tokens from two women.'

Hao Yan Che snatched the gift from Yuan Gun Gun's hands, and threw it on the floor. He laid on top of her, bit her face and left his teeth mark.

'Ah,' Yuan Gun Gun cried out.

'You dare twist my words,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che left teeth marks on Yuan Gun Gun's lips and neck too. Then he pinched her bottom.

'It hurts,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You don't know right from wrong.'

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che's chest. He held her hands above her head, and bit each of her breasts hard.

‘You’re bullying me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said and cried.

‘What are you going to do if I bully you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun could only let Hao Yan Che bully her.

Hao Yan Che’s lips were about to kiss Yuan Gun Gun’s lips, but she turned her head to the side.

‘I don’t want you to kiss me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You dare say you don’t want to?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s chin. She looked at him like he was a kidnapper so he let go of her.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, what do you want?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun sat up on the edge of the bed.

‘I don’t want to do it with you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I can see,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Tell me why.’

Hao Yan Che crossed his arms, and glared at his wife. His wife dared to withhold his rights as her husband.

‘I don’t want to do it with you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Go find one of the women who gave you the gifts to do it with.’

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I... I...’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

Yuan Gun Gun saw Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes changed color. There was nowhere else she could retreat on the bed.

Hao Yan Che captured Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

‘Say it again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 145

Related

Chapter 146



‘Tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I... are you hungry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’m hungry enough to eat you.’

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hands away from her face, and caressed her body. He suppressed his anger, and acted like he didn’t hear his wife say to him to sleep with another woman.

Yuan Gun Gun let Hao Yan Che have his way with her body. In her heart she was frustrated about being too scared to say everything she bottled up to him. She remembered what happened at work, and what he said to her. Her heart hurt, and she didn’t know what else she could do except cry.

Hao Yan Che laid still on Yuan Gun Gun’s body. He was unhappy to see her cry and look so sad.

‘Tell me what’s wrong,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che rolled off Yuan Gun Gun’s body. She moved to the edge of the bed, and turned her back toward him. He got out of bed, walked to the door, kicked the door open and left their bedroom.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged a pillow and sobbed. She didn’t want Hao Yan Che to be angry, and she didn’t want to fight with him. His words cut her. Why were two boxes more important to him than her? It hurt her to think he was sleeping with other women while married to her. It hurt her the most to hear he didn’t love her.

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up alone. Did Hao Yan Che spent the night with another woman? She shook her head, got out of bed and walked to the bathroom.

In the living room, Hao Yan Ming sat on the sofa next to Su An Luo who wore a red dress.

Hao Yan Ming looked like Hao Yan Che, except they had different color eyes. Hao Yan Ming's eyes were silver.

'Hey,' Su An Luo said. 'You shouldn't be like this in someone else's living room.'

'I'm not hey,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'You can only call me husband or Ming.'

Hao Yan Ming pushed Su An Luo onto the sofa.

'Don't be such a monster,' Su An Luo said.

'Little girl, how can you call your husband a monster?' Hao Yan Ming asked. 'You need to be disciplined.'

Su An Luo closed her mouth. Her man's mood swings were unpredictable. She didn't want to provoke his anger.

'Let your husband hear you call him husband,' Hao Yan Ming said.

Su An Luo rolled her eyes.

'What a naughty girl,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'But I love you.'

Hao Yan Ming kissed Su An Luo's lips. He always wanted her to be bound to him.

'Hao Yan Ming, not here,' Su An Luo said.

Hao Yan Ming's lips swallowed Su An Luo's protests. He stroked her soft body under her red dress to numb her thoughts.

In that moment Yuan Gun Gun stood frozen near the living room. Her husband was kissing another woman on the sofa. She was an outsider looking at her husband loving another woman. The pain she felt witnessing her husband's betrayal was a thousand times more painful than picturing him with another woman.

'Gun Gun, you're awake,' Mrs Chen said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around.

'Aunty Chen,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

‘Gun Gun, why are you crying?’ Mrs Chen asked.

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head, and ran away.

‘Gun Gun, where are you going?’ Mrs Chen asked.

Mrs Chen didn’t know why Yuan Gun Gun ran away. Mrs Chen walked into the living room. Su An Luo was gasping for air, and Hao Yan Ming looked like a satisfied man. Mrs Chen understood Yuan Gun Gun must have mistaken Hao Yan Ming for Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master Ming, the guest bedroom is ready,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Do you want to go rest or have afternoon tea? Young master hired a French chef who makes delicious desserts.’

‘Che hired a French chef to make desserts?’ Hao Yan Ming asked. ‘If I remember correctly, he hates eating sweets.’

‘Young master Ming remembered correctly,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Young master hired the French chef to make desserts for Gun Gun who loves eating sweets.’

‘Oh?’ Hao Yan Ming asked. ‘Then is the woman who ran away crying before is my monster big brother’s little treasure?’

‘Don’t you know who the real monster is?’ Su An Luo mumbled.

‘Do you think your husband is a monster?’ Hao Yan Ming asked.

‘Yes,’ Su An Luo said. ‘A perverted monster.’

Hao Yan Ming carried Su An Luo in his arms.

‘If you think your husband is a perverted monster then I don’t want to disappoint you,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

‘Hao Yan Ming, put me down,’ Su An Luo said. ‘I don’t want to go back home with you.’

End of Chapter 146

Related

Chapter 147



‘Young master Ming, the guest bedroom is this way,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘We’re going home,’ Hao Yan Ming said. ‘Che’s little treasure has a misunderstanding because of us. I don’t want to stay here for Che to kill me. Besides, it’s more comfortable to be a perverted monster at home. Isn’t that right An An?’

‘I’m not going home!’ Su An Luo said.

Su An Luo looked pleadingly at Mrs Chen to save her.

‘Not listening to your husband is breaking the rules,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

‘You’re a pig!’ Su An Luo said. ‘Let me go.’

‘Wait until we’re at home and you can call out my name in bed,’ Hao Yan Ming said. ‘I promise I’ll let you be as wild as you want in bed.’

Hao Yan Ming and Su An Luo disappeared. Mrs Chen shook her head, Hao Yan Ming was still a robust man. Mrs Chen wondered where Yuan Gun Gun ran off to. The only place Mrs Chen could think of was Yuan Gun Gun running to her parents’ home. Mrs Chen hoped Hao Yan Che found Yuan Gun Gun soon and coax her home. Mrs Chen believed after Hao Yan Che cleared Yuan Gun Gun’s misunderstanding then there would be peace inside the Hao Mansion.

Outside the Hao Mansion, Yuan Gun Gun wandered around in the crowded streets. She couldn’t erase the image of Hao Yan Che sleeping with another woman. She couldn’t deny someone handsome like Hao Yan Che should be with the beautiful woman he slept with. Even the way Hao Yan Che kissed the beautiful woman was like a stunning painting. It made her ashamed of herself. She was only an unwanted leftover. She didn’t know where she should go.

Long Liu Bao called Yuan Gun Gun’s phone. Yuan Gun Gun answered her

phone in a daze.

‘Gun Gun are you there?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Bao Bao...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What’s wrong?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Why are you crying?’

‘Che, he...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t cry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Where are you? I’ll come pick you up.’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m on my way to your home.’

‘OK,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Come here soon. I’ll be waiting for you.’

Yuan Gun Gun hung up the phone, and she got into a taxi without a dollar in her pockets.

Half an hour later, Long Liu Bao paid Yuan Gun Gun’s taxi fare.

Long Liu Bao took Yuan Gun Gun to the Long Mansion’s living room.

‘Gun Gun, don’t cry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Your face is all puffy.’

‘Bao Bao, can I stay here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to go home. She wanted to divorce Hao Yan Che.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You can stay here for as long as you want.’

‘You can’t tell Che I’m here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want him to find me. I want to divorce him.’

‘Divorce?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Why?’

‘He...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t stop crying every time she remembered Hao Yan Che’s betrayal.

Long Liu Bao poured Yuan Gun Gun a glass of water, and passed the glass to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Take your time to explain,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘He slept with a beautiful woman in the living room,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Even the way they kissed was beautiful.’

‘What?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Impossible.’

Long Liu Bao and the Long brothers grew up with Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che hated people touching him since he was a little boy, and he would always kick anyone who touched him. Even the Long brothers and Hao Yan Che’s parents needed Hao Yan Che’s permission before touching Hao Yan Che. Long Liu Bao heard from the Long brothers that Yuan Gun Gun was the only person Hao Yan Che let touch him freely. Long Liu Bao didn’t believe Hao Yan Che would cheat on Yuan Gun Gun. Hao Yan Che hated hugging or kissing anyone except Yuan Gun Gun. Hao Yan Che loved Yuan Gun Gun crazily, he wouldn’t cheat on Yuan Gun Gun.

‘It’s possible,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che is handsome and rich. I’m an ugly rice ball. Of course he would choose to be with a beautiful woman. But I love him so much. How can he treat me like this? I don’t care anymore. I don’t want anything from him. What’s so good about being handsome? I want to divorce him. After I divorce him, I’ll find a good man to marry. I’ll have a baby with my husband, and forget about Che.’

‘Who said you’re ugly?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘I love you the way you are. You’re not allowed to call yourself ugly.’

‘Bao Bao, you’re a good friend,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Can I marry you?’

Long Liu Bao laughed, and patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘When we’re free we can go to the registry to lodge our marriage registration form.’

‘Forget it,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Lang and big brother Bo will skin me if you marry me.’

End of Chapter 147

Related

Chapter 148



‘They wouldn’t dare skin you,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll protect you.’

‘Then I’ll stay here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘No one can tell Che that I’m here.’

‘It’s not a problem,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’m on your side.’

Long Liu Bao thought Yuan Gun Gun was a loveable puppy, and Hao Yan Che was a fool to abandon Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Bao Bao, I’m hungry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Long Liu Bao almost fainted. One moment Yuan Gun Gun was dying of a broken heart, and the next moment Yuan Gun Gun wanted to satisfy her hunger to live.

‘Come with me,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll ask aunty Li to make you something to eat.’

‘Thank you Bao Bao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Long Liu Bao couldn’t believe the happy Yuan Gun Gun following her to eat was the same heartbroken Yuan Gun Gun crying on the sofa.

The Long brothers returned to the Long Mansion. They saw two little monkeys chit chatting and tearing their husbands’ bad traits apart.

‘Gun Gun, you don’t know the half of it,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I can’t reason with big brother Bo. Don’t be fooled by big brother Lang’s mask. Big brother Lang has two faces. Look at my neck. Big brother Lang almost choked me to death.’

Yuan Gun Gun was appalled by the bruises on Long Liu Bao’s neck.

‘How can they do that to you?’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘That’s right,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You’re more fortunate than me.’

‘You’re more fortunate than me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Have you seen my bruised bottom? Che pinches my bottom every day. Look at my neck. Che does it with me every day. Even if I feel dizzy, he won’t spare me.’

Yuan Gun Gun showed the kiss marks on her neck, shoulders and collar bone.

The Long brothers didn’t understand why Hao Yan Che would let his little treasure come alone to the Long Mansion.

‘Bao Bao, we’re home,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Why are you two home early today?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Bao Bao, you have a lot of grievances about us,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘What about it?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘If you two mistreat me, aren’t I allowed to voice my grievances? You men are the same. There is no such thing as a good man.’

Yuan Gun Gun was in awe of Long Liu Bao’s bravery.

‘You!’ Long Liu Bo said.

Long Liu Lang patted Long Liu Bo’s shoulder.

‘Bao Bao, we brought two desserts home,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘You can share the desserts with Gun Gun.’

Long Liu Bao stood, and kissed Long Liu Lang’s cheek. She sat back down and ate the desserts with Yuan Gun Gun.

Long Liu Bo told himself not to be petty and angry. He sat on a chair, pulled Long Liu Bao onto his lap and licked the cream off her lips.

Long Liu Bo smiled at the blushing Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun, why did Che let you come here today?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Che is busy sleeping with a beautiful woman,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He doesn’t care about me. Besides, I ran away from home so I don’t need to let him know where I am.’

‘What?’ Long Liu Bo asked. ‘Che is sleeping with another woman?’

‘You ran away from home?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun wants to stay here,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Tonight I’m sleeping with Gun Gun. You two are not allowed to tell Che. If you two tell Che then suffer the consequences.’

‘Bao Bao, Gun Gun can stay here,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘But it’s the right thing to do to tell Che that Gun Gun is here so he doesn’t worry crazily about Gun Gun.’

‘That’s right,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘If Che’s wife is missing even for one day, he’ll go crazy.’

‘Che is busy sleeping with a beautiful woman,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He won’t notice I’m not home.’

‘You two are not allowed to tell Che,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I won’t pay attention to you two if Che knows Gun Gun is here.’

Long Liu Bao put a piece of dessert in Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth to stop Yuan Gun Gun from crying. Then Long Liu Bao gave the Long brothers a warning look. If the Long brothers dared to make Yuan Gun Gun cry, Long Liu Bao would kill them.

The Long brothers exchanged a knowing look with each other. They knew Hao Yan Che would go crazy if his wife was missing. They didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to suffer after Hao Yan Che discovered she was ran away from home.

‘Gun Gun, don’t cry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘We won’t pay attention to bad men. Let’s go to our room and eat.’

The Long brothers watched Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun walk upstairs, and they anticipated trouble would arrive to the Long Mansion soon.

End of Chapter 148

Related

Chapter 149



Hao Yan Che arrived home from work at eight in the evening. His wife was a trouble maker. He was worried at work that his wife was crying in their bedroom, and refusing to eat.

Hao Yan Che walked into the Hao Mansion, and Mrs Chen bowed to him.

‘Young master, today young master Ming brought his wife here to visit you,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘Where are they?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘They went home,’ Mrs Chen said.

Hao Yan Che frowned. He got a bad feeling.

‘Young master... Gun Gun saw young master Ming sleeping with his wife in the living room,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Gun Gun must have mistaken young master Ming for you. Gun Gun ran away crying. I’ve asked some people to go look for Gun Gun already.’

‘Have they found her?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘I wanted to send someone to the Yuan Mansion to see if Gun Gun’s there. But I didn’t want Gun Gun’s parents to worry if Gun Gun isn’t there.’

‘When did my dummy run away from home?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Around ten this morning,’ Mrs Chen said.

‘They’re all going to die,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che kicked the front door open. He wanted to kill his little brother for making his wife misunderstand, and he wanted to kill his wife for not trusting him and running away.

Mrs Chen smiled at Hao Yan Che running to the car. She thought he deserved to be anxious for taking Yuan Gun Gun for granted.

In the car, Hao Yan Che put his phone on speaker and drove out of the driveway.

‘Dad, is your loveable daughter at the Yuan Mansion?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘What did she do?’

‘Nothing,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘She’s just missing.’

‘Oh?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked. ‘Did my little girl run away from home? Have a good talk with her when you bring her home.’

‘Dad, don’t worry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I promise I’ll have a good talk with her when I bring her home. Goodnight dad.’

Hao Yan Che ended the call with his father-in-law. Then he called Long Liu Bo.

‘Bo, my little rice ball is missing,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Is she at the Long Mansion?’

‘I don’t know what to say,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘I understand,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll be at the Long Mansion soon.’

‘Che, your little rice ball said you have a mistress,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘What do you think?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘My little rice ball saw Ming sleeping with his wife Su An Ting in our living room.’

‘Ming?’ Long Liu Bo asked. ‘Isn’t he in Las Vegas? When did he come home?’

‘Ming came home today,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘He’s going to die. He hasn’t changed since we were children. Always causing trouble and running away before I can kill him.’

Long Liu Bo laughed. He understood why Yuan Gun Gun misunderstood Hao Yan Che was cheating.

‘I’m hanging up,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Keep an eye on my little rice ball.’

‘Um,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘Go easy on your little rice ball.’

‘Don’t worry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I won’t be too cruel.’

Hao Yan Che's scary gentle voice made Long Liu Bo shiver. Long Liu Bo prayed for Yuan Gun Gun's life.

At the Long Mansion at nine at night, Long Liu Bao showed Yuan Gun Gun playgirl magazines.

'Gun Gun, take a look,' Long Liu Bao said. 'All the photos are of handsome men.'

'You're right,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'They are handsome.'

'See this man here?' Long Liu Bao asked. 'He's wearing the pants in the relationship. The man with the long hair is the pet in the relationship.'

'Huh?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Like how your monster Hao wears the pants and you're the pet,' Long Liu Bao said. 'He bullies you, but you can't fight back.'

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head.

'It's OK if you don't understand,' Long Liu Bao said. 'I compiled these magazines myself. Take your time to look through them.'

Long Liu Bao missed her mummy Wu. She was happy to have Yuan Gun Gun to have girl talks with.

Yuan Gun Gun carefully looked at the magazines. Most of the photos and articles made her blush.

Suddenly the bedroom door opened. Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun both jumped a little on the bed. Then Yuan Gun Gun hid behind Long Liu Bao's back.

Long Liu Bao glared at the snitching Long brothers who were standing behind Hao Yan Che at the door.

The Long brothers shook their heads, and they looked innocently at Long Liu Bao like they didn't snitch.

'Yuan Gun Gun, roll yourself over here!' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun's body was shaking. But she remembered Hao Yan Che sleeping with another woman in their living room, and she didn't care if he was cold or angry.

‘I... I’m not coming home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to divorce you.’

‘You want to what?’ Hao Yan Che asked. He narrowed his eyes. ‘Say it again.’

‘I... I want to divorce you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 149

Related

Chapter 150



The Long brothers sweated on behalf of Yuan Gun Gun. They thought her words killed her.

‘Say it again and louder,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was sad and scared.

‘Why are you crying?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Come here.’

‘Bao Bao...’ Yuan Gun Gun called and clutched onto Long Liu Bao’s waist.

‘Gun Gun, I’m here,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Don’t be scared.’

‘Long Liu Bao!’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Big brother Che, it’s wrong to cheat on your loveable wife,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You have no right to be angry at Gun Gun. Didn’t your kindergarten teacher tell you if you do something wrong, you should say sorry and ask for forgiveness...’

Long Liu Bao’s voice quickly became inaudible. Hao Yan Che looked like he was going to kill Long Liu Bao as a starter.

Long Liu Lang held Long Liu Bao’s hand, and pulled her away from the warzone.

Long Liu Bao hugged Long Liu Lang. She was scared of the dangerous werewolf king.

Hao Yan Che looked at his wife sitting on a corner of the bed. He was angry his wife wanted to divorce him.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, this is your last chance,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Come here.’

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t believe Hao Yan Che raised his voice at her. He was the one who betrayed her.

‘I... I’m not coming home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Go and be with your mistress. I want to divorce you. I’m going back to live with my parents.’

Hao Yan Che had wanted to clear his wife’s misunderstanding. But his wife kept saying she wanted to divorce him so he was going to let her keep misunderstanding him.

Hao Yan Che walked to the bed, and he held Yuan Gun Gun’s chin.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, who do you think you are?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Do you need me to remind you? You’re a gift your dad gave me, you’re my maid and my secretary. You have no right to divorce me. Even if you saw me sleeping with another woman, you still need to wait for me at home. Do you need me to remind you what happens if you make me angry?’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s calm face. She finally understood she was no one to him.

‘Hao Yan Che!’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘How can you treat Gun Gun like this? Gun Gun is your wife! You cheated on your wife yet you have the guts to spit out insults at your wife.’

Hao Yan Che carried the speechless Yuan Gun Gun in his arms, and he looked coldly at Long Liu Bao.

‘She’s my woman,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I can treat her any way I want. I have a score to settle with you, but it can wait for another day.’

Long Liu Bao could see clearly Hao Yan Che loved Yuan Gun Gun. She didn’t understand if he loved Yuan Gun Gun, how could he say such hurtful words to Yuan Gun Gun?

Yuan Gun Gun’s muffled cries made the Long brothers and Long Liu Bao sad.

‘You’re not allowed to cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked resentfully at Hao Yan Che. She bit her lips to not let crying sounds come out of her mouth.

‘Bao Bao, save me,’ Yuan Gun Gun begged.

Long Liu Lang held onto Long Liu Bao tightly, and didn’t let her escape to save Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, no one can save you,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’re going to die.’

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun outside the bedroom.

‘Let go of me!’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Bao Bao, you can’t interfere in Che’s business,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘He’s bullying Gun Gun,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Che loves Gun Gun,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘He’s not going to kill her.’

‘You rotten men only know how to stick together and hurt someone you say you love,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘How is that love? How is he hurting Gun Gun called love? It’s all a pack of lies.’

‘Long Liu Bao!’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘If you know what’s good for you then know your limits.’

‘So what if I don’t know my limits?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘What are you going to do about it?’

‘Can’t you be reasonable?’ Long Liu Bo asked. ‘Gun Gun is Che’s wife. We have no right to detain Gun Gun here.’

‘You two are brutes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘How can you two standby and watch Che hurt Gun Gun? I hate selfish men like you two and Che who only care about yourselves.’

End of Chapter 150

Related

Chapter 151



‘I’m wasting my breath talking to you,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘Me too,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bo strode outside the bedroom before he vented his anger on Long Liu Bao.

‘Bao Bao, how long are you going to stay angry for?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

‘For the rest of my life,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I want you to leave too.’

Long Liu Lang sighed. He let go of Long Liu Bao and followed Long Liu Bo outside the bedroom. It was Hao Yan Che’s fault for making Long Liu Bao angry at him and Long Liu Bo.

Long Liu Bao heard the door closed, and thumped the bed. She was angry at Hao Yan Che’s arrogance. It made her remember Long Liu Bo’s words, ‘Long Liu Bao is my woman, if I want her dead then no one can stop me.’

Long Liu Bao hated being under the thumbs of rotten men like Long Liu Bo and Long Liu Lang. She wanted to turn the tables on them.

At the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Che carried the crying Yuan Gun Gun to their bedroom.

‘Let go of me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Young master, what happened?’ Mrs Chen asked.

Mrs Chen didn’t understand why Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun didn’t reconcile after he cleared Yuan Gun Gun’s misunderstanding.

‘Nothing,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Mrs Chen watched Hao Yan Che carry Yuan Gun Gun upstairs. Mrs Chen couldn’t do anything to help Yuan Gun Gun.

In the master bedroom, Hao Yan Che dropped Yuan Gun Gun onto the bed. She huddled on the edge of the bed, and looked wearily at him.

‘If you bully me, I’ll tell my daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che threw his phone at Yuan Gun Gun’s feet on the bed.

‘I’ll give you one chance,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun called Yuan Ting Liu.

‘Daddy, it’s me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che wants to hit me. Daddy, come save me.’

‘Why does he want to hit you?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Call me back when you know and I’ll come save you,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Right now it’s late. Goodnight.’

‘Hello daddy?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun called Yuan Ting Liu’s number again, but he didn’t pick up.

‘Is your dad coming to save you?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Do you want to call my parents to save you too?’

Yuan Gun Gun felt all alone in the world.

‘If no one is coming to save you then the rest of your night belongs to me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che took off his clothes and walked to the bed.

Yuan Gun Gun sat against the bedhead.

‘What are you doing?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I don’t want you to touch me.’

‘Is there anyone under my roof who can say no to me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t stop Hao Yan Che pinning her body under his body.

‘Have I been treating you too good?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You have guts to dare say you want to divorce me.’

Yuan Gun Gun looked sadly at Hao Yan Che’s face while his hands teased her

body.

‘Little rice ball, answer me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Have I treated you too good? Is that why you don’t remember what happens if you provoke my anger?’

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s earlobe. She looked at his cold eyes that froze her heart.

‘Why aren’t you talking?’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Before you could open your mouth and say you want to divorce me. Tell me, do you want to divorce me?’

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head out of fear.

‘Why are you crying?’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s face while his hands ripped off her clothes, bra and underwear.

‘Don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s only the beginning.’

End of Chapter 151

Related

Chapter 152



‘I don’t want to,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t let go of Yuan Gun Gun until she napped. After she woke up, he took a bath with her, fed her and was intimate with her again. She thought he lost his conscience. How could he sleep with another woman, and slept with her like he didn’t betray her? How could he say hurtful words to her and not feel guilty?

Hao Yan Che looked at his wife’s crying face. He was angry she ran away from home. Why didn’t she trust him? Why did she say she wanted to divorce him? Why couldn’t she see there was only her in his heart? Why couldn’t she understand that he wouldn’t betray her? How could he betray someone who was everything to him?

‘Che, let go of me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Why do you have to treat me this way?’

‘If you know what’s good for then cooperate with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Che, I was wrong,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m sorry. I won’t do it again. Let go of me.’

‘Too late,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I gave you a chance, but you didn’t take it.’

Hao Yan Che looked at his wife’s face. She looked like was going to faint. He kissed her lips and continued to move inside her body.

A long time later, Hao Yan Che lifted Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom and planted his seed inside her.

Yuan Gun Gun lost count how many times her body and Hao Yan Che’s body reached ecstasy.

‘Remember that I don’t want to hear divorce come out of your mouth again,’

Hao Yan Che said. 'You know what happens if you say divorce again.'

'I promise I won't say it again,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun. The moment he got out of bed to go to the bathroom, she fell asleep.

At ten in the morning, Hao Yan Che woke up.

'Little rice ball, wake up,' Hao Yan Che said.

'No... no,' Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep.

Hao Yan Che regretted he was too rough with Yuan Gun Gun last night. She wasn't an ordinary person. She drank his blood so he thought she could endure more than an ordinary person.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun and stroked her back.

'You don't need to be scared,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You can sleep.'

Hao Yan Che loved how vulnerable Yuan Gun Gun looked when she cried. But it didn't mean he wanted her to feel sad. He wanted her to feel how much he loved her.

Hao Yan Che felt Yuan Gun Gun's body relaxed. He kissed her forehead, let go of her and prepared for work. He planned to come home early to be with her.

After Hao Yan Che left for work, Yuan Gun Gun was woken up by the nonstop ringing of her phone.

'Hello, who is it?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Gun Gun, it's me,' Long Liu Bao said.

'Bao Bao...' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'Are you OK?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'I'm OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Last night I was one step away from dying.'

'Gun Gun, listen to me,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Right now you need to act like you want to please Hao Yan Che.'

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'So we can runaway together,' Long Liu Bao said. 'First we need to give them a

false sense of security. We wait until they are deliriously happy that we’re doing everything to please them. When they put their guards down is the perfect time for us to escape. We need to show them they shouldn’t bully us, and take us for granted.’

‘Runaway?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘If I runaway again, Che will kill me after he finds me.’

End of Chapter 152

Related

Chapter 153



‘Gun Gun, we need to band together and stand up for ourselves,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘We can’t be submissive for the rest of our lives. We need to live with respect and dignity.’

‘How do I make Che happy?’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He always looks unhappy being with me.’

‘Gun Gun, you’re going to die of cluelessness,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘It’s not like I chose to be born this way,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Long Liu Bao pulled her hair, and took a deep breath.

‘Gun Gun, think about the times when your monster Hao is the most gentle toward you,’ Long Liu Bao said.

A while later, Long Liu Bao thought Yuan Gun Gun hung up the phone.

‘Gun Gun, are you there?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m still trying to remember the times when Che is gentle toward me.’

‘Gun Gun, you live a pitiful life,’ Long Liu Bao.

‘I remember now,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘When?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘After Che hits me, he is gentle with me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Does that count?’

Long Liu Bao hit her head against her knees. How could such a person like Yuan Gun Gun exist?

‘Apart from those times, when is Che most gentle toward you?’ Long Liu Bao

asked.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Long Liu Bao's voice sounded different than usual.

'Forget it,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Tell me something you do that doesn't make Che angry.'

'When he tells me to kiss him, I'll kiss him,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What else?' Long Liu Bao asked.

Long Liu Bao wholly believed birds of a feather flock together and share the same interests.

'When he wants more and I don't runaway,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Forget birds, Long Liu Bao thought monsters were indeed monsters.

'I understand,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Do you know how to cook?'

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Good,' Long Liu Bao said. 'I'm going to tell you what you need to do. Cook meals for Che. Take the initiative to feed him, kiss him and offer your body to him. I guarantee if you do everything I told you to do, he'll be a happy man. When he puts his guard down, ask him sweetly to let you spend time with me at the Long Mansion. He'll say yes to you in a heartbeat. Then we'll runaway together. Don't forget to pack your passport.'

'Take the initiative to kiss and offer my body to Che?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun liked Hao Yan Che kissing her. It was how he tired her out in bed afterward that scared her.

'Don't tell me you don't know how to seduce your husband,' Long Liu Bao said.

'I don't know how...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'OMG,' Long Liu Bao said. 'What cave did you crawl out of? Don't tell me you haven't eaten pork and seen pigs run.'

'I've eaten pork,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But I haven't seen pigs run.'

Long Liu Bao began to sympathise with the monster Hao.

'Listen up,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Pucker your lips, brush your lips against your

husband's lips, stick out your tongue and slowly lick his lips. Kiss him a bit, and look shyly into his eyes.'

Long Liu Bao's specialty was seduction. Yuan Gun Gun's innocent appeal was the best weapon to use on the monster Hao.

'I... I'll do my best,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'At night take the initiative to snuggle with your husband then slowly rub your hand up and down his chest,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Whisper in his ear... I want to do a role play with you in bed.'

'Play what?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Don't worry,' Long Liu Bao said. 'You don't have to do anything else after you whisper in your husband's ear what I taught you. He'll direct you how to play.'

'Bao Bao, do you think this is a good idea?' Yuan Gun Gu asked.

'Yes,' Long Liu Bao said. 'You need to sacrifice your body a bit if you want to win the war. Who knows, by tomorrow your monster Hao will become gentler than big brother Lang.'

End of Chapter 153

Related

Chapter 154



‘Do your best,’ Long Liu Bao encouraged. ‘I’ll be at the Long Mansion waiting for you to succeed.’

‘I will do my best,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Remember to do everything I taught you,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Bye.’

‘Bye,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hung up the phone, and worried she would fail to seduce Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che arrived home at eight at night. He was surprised Yuan Gun Gun was standing at the door waiting for him.

‘Che, you’re home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said shyly. ‘I’ve been waiting for you.’

Hao Yan Che was happy Yuan Gun Gun took the initiative to come to him instead of hiding under a bedsheet in their bedroom.

‘I cooked dinner,’ Yuan Gun Gun said softly. ‘Do you want to eat dinner with me?’

Hao Yan Che was displeased Yuan Gun Gun entered the kitchen. But the anticipation in her eyes calmed him.

‘If you don’t want to, I’ll go eat dinner on my own,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘Let’s eat dinner together,’ Hao Yan Che said.

In the dining room, Hao Yan Che was pleasantly surprised Yuan Gun Gun took the initiative to sit on his lap, and feed him.

Yuan Gun Gun put a piece of meat in Hao Yan Che’s mouth. He looked

suspiciously at her, and made her worry Long Liu Bao's plan failed.

'Little rice ball,' Hao Yan Che called.

'I'm here,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'What are you doing?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Nothing,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you lying to me?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Do you want me to remind you what happens if you lie to me?'

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

'I'll give you a chance to confess,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I want to make you happy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked into Yuan Gun Gun's eyes. Did she finally have an epiphany?

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che's beautiful face, and her face turned pink.

'How are you going to make me happy?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun followed Long Liu Bao's advice. Yuan Gun Gun puckered her lips, brushed her lips on Hao Yan Che's lips, licked his lips and kissed him.

Hao Yan Che was stunned Yuan Gun Gun took the initiative to kiss him.

Yuan Gun Gun retrieved her lips because Hao Yan Che didn't kiss her back.

Hao Yan Che was happy to see Yuan Gun Gun's shy face.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to give up. She kissed Hao Yan Che's lips again, and bit his lower lip. He groaned in her mouth, and made her frustrated Long Liu Bao's plan wasn't working.

Hao Yan Che smiled at Yuan Gun Gun's attempts to win him over. He wondered what her motive was.

'Little rice ball, who taught you to make me happy this way?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun's disappointed face.

‘Bao Bao taught me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why do you want her to teach you how to make me happy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che looked like he was in a good mood.

‘Why?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Bao Bao said if I make you happy, you’ll love me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was unhappy Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t feel how much he loved her. But he liked her taking the initiative to make him happy.

Hao Yan Che patted Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘Do you think biting me will make me happy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Bao Bao said I should lick you, kiss you and bite you to make you happy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che laughed. He understood how Long Liu Bao kept the Long brothers under control.

End of Chapter 154

Related

Chapter 155



Note: Chapter 155 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 155.

Chapter 155

Hao Yan Che turned Yuan Gun Gun around to face him, and her legs straddled his thighs.

‘What else did you learn to make me happy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Bao Bao taught me to say to you that I want do a role play with you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Let’s play.’

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. She remembered Long Liu Bao told her to slowly rub her hand up and down Hao Yan Che’s chest.

‘Little rice ball, I like you making me happy,’ Hao Yan Che said. He stood and carried Yuan Gun Gun in his arms. ‘I want you.’

‘Che, wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘What about dinner?’

‘We’ll eat later,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to their bedroom. He was happy she did have an epiphany.

Yuan Gun Gun wrapped her arms around Hao Yan Che’s neck, and she looked hungrily over his shoulder at the abandoned delicious dinner dishes she cooked.

One week later, an exhausted Yuan Gun Gun rolled onto her side of the bed.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called sweetly.

‘Yes?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun's waist from behind, and he kissed her bare shoulder.

'I want to visit Bao Bao,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why?' Hao Yan Che asked and fondled Yuan Gun Gun's soft breasts.

'Because I miss Bao Bao,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'No,' Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun's nipples.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and looked pitifully into Hao Yan Che's eyes.

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I want Bao Bao to teach me to cook new dishes so I can cook them for you to eat.'

'Your cooking isn't bad,' Hao Yan Che said. He stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair. 'You don't need to learn how to cook new dishes.'

'I don't mind if you come with me to the Long Mansion,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I promise I won't cause trouble.'

Hao Yan Che loved hearing Yuan Gun Gun sweet talking him. He didn't mind if Long Liu Bao taught Yuan Gun Gun more ways to make him happy.

'Do you really want to go?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'And I want to learn to cook new dishes for you.'

'If you want to go, you know what to do,' Hao Yan Che said.

'But we've done it often today,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'If you don't want to do it again then you can stay home,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che turned around. Yuan Gun Gun looked at the curve of his back, and remembered what Long Liu Bao taught her.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's waist, and pressed her body against his back. One of her hands caressed his toned stomach. Her other hand slowly rubbed his hardness between his legs and felt his erection.

Hao Yan Che's body stiffened under Yuan Gun Gun's touch. Her technique was clumsy, but her touch turned him rock hard.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her breasts against Hao Yan Che's back, and slowly

licked his ear.

Hao Yan Che was under Yuan Gun Gun's spell. All she needed to do was touch him, and he would melt under her touch.

Hao Yan Che gave in, he turned around and pinned her body under his body.

'Hehe... Che, your face is pink,' Yuan Gun Gun teased.

'Do you think it's funny?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Funny,' Yuan Gun Gun said carelessly.

Hao Yan Che kneaded Yuan Gun Gun's breasts. He watched her face turn pink and listened to her soft moan.

'I hope you'll get the last laugh,' Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun realised her mistake too late.

Later in the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun's cries were heard instead of her laughter.

The following day, Hao Yan Che escorted Yuan Gun Gun to the Long Mansion.

'Gun Gun, I really missed you,' Long Liu Bao said. She hugged Yuan Gun Gun. 'You finally succeeded.'

Long Liu Bao knew the monster Hao couldn't resist his loveable little rice ball's seduction.

The Long brothers were suspicious why Hao Yan Che would release his little rice ball. They expected Hao Yan Che would at least lock his little rice ball in the bedroom for half a year.

End of Chapter 155

Related

Chapter 156



‘Bao Bao, I really missed you too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was happy sacrificing her body helped her take one step closer to escaping with Long Liu Bao.

‘Let’s go into the kitchen,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll teach you new recipes.’

Long Liu Bao held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, they walked together to the kitchen and left the unhappy men sitting in the living room.

‘Che, are you possessed?’ Long Liu Bo asked. ‘Why did you come here with your wife?’

‘Can’t I come here with my wife?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It’s not that,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘I grew up with you. Knowing you, I thought you wouldn’t let your wife out of the bedroom for half a year. I guess I don’t know you that well.’

‘The Long Household’s little princess is remarkable,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Bao Bao?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Xiao Bao?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘How is she involved?’ the Long brothers asked.

Hao Yan Che played with the werewolf ring on his thumb, and he smiled.

‘She taught my wife how to make me happy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Make you happy?’ Long Liu Bo asked. ‘How?’

‘Like teaching my wife to touch, bite and lick a bit,’ Hao Yan Che said.

The Long brothers narrowed their eyes. What did their little dummy teach Yuan Gun Gun?

‘I’m talking about lips,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘What did you two think I was talking about?’

‘MF,’ the Long brothers cursed.

‘You two raised your little princess,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Now your lives must be comfortable.’

The Long brothers exchanged a helpless look with each other and they sighed.

In the kitchen, Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun spoke softly to each other.

‘Gun Gun, did you bring your passport?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Bao Bao, do we really need to do this?’

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘We’ll escape for a period. Your monster Hao will treat you better after you return home.’

‘What if Che is meaner to me after I return home?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘At most your monster Hao will hit your bottom,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You have a round bottom, it’s not going to make a difference if it’s swollen a bit. Even if you can’t wear the pants after you return home, at least you got to go on a holiday.’

Long Liu Bao pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks, and took out a bag from a cupboard.

‘What’s in the bag?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s to make them sleep,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Do you want to put it in their food?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘If they don’t sleep, how are we going to escape?’

‘But Che has a strong sense of smell,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re right,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Time for Plan B. Gun Gun, we only have one chance. We’ll bolt out the back door through the kitchen, and run to the car I prepared. The driver will take us to the airport, and we’ll be free. Understand?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Long Liu Lang put a letter on the kitchen bench.

‘Let’s go,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Bao Bao, what’s in the letter?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘A letter for them to read,’ Long Liu Lang said.

Long Liu Lang and Yuan Gun Gun ran to the car, and the driver drove them to the airport.

‘Bao Bao, where are we going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Las Vegas,’ Long Liu Lang said.

On hour later, the three monsters became suspicious.

‘Why haven’t they come out of the kitchen?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘I’ll go check,’ Long Liu Lang said.

Long Liu Lang walked into the kitchen and cursed. The kitchen was empty, and he understood what happened.

Long Liu Bo and Hao Yan Che heard Long Liu Lang’s curse, and they entered the kitchen too.

Hao Yan Che was the first to notice the letter on the kitchen bench: Dear big brother Lang, big brother Bo and big brother Che, Your oppressiveness is too overbearing, which is why I’m running away with the loveable Gun Gun.

Big brother Bo, remembered you praised me and said I can protect you and big brother Lang on my own. So protecting myself and Gun Gun won’t be a problem.

Big brother Bo, I used the card you gave me to fund plane tickets for me and Gun Gun. Thank you for funding our escape.

If you men want to trace the transactions on the card, it’s going to take time. I transferred money from the card to another card to buy the plane tickets. I got the card from the black market using a false identity.

Gun Gun and I are independent women. We don’t belong to anyone. We’re not your pets that you men can bully anytime you want.

If you men want to curse then go ahead and curse. After you men learn how to be less selfish, and treat us decently then come and find us. If it's impossible for you men to change for the better then let go of us.

Big brother Che, I promise I'll sacrifice my own life to protect your little treasure.

Finally, don't worry and trust me.

Bye from your precious darling littler sister Long Liu Bao.

End of Chapter 156

Related

Chapter 157



Hao Yan Che gripped the letter, and his violet eyes gleamed murderously.

‘My suspicion is right,’ Long Liu Bo said.

The gentle Long Liu Lang lost his temper. He took out his phone, and called Fang Kuang.

‘Fang Kuang, I want you to send a search party to the airport,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘Search every corner of the airport. If no one finds Long Liu Bao after half an hour, you know the drill. Stop all planes from arriving or departing the airport. If she protests, you have my permission to knock her unconscious and bring her home.’

‘Yes young master Lang,’ Fang Kuang said.

Long Liu Lang hung up the phone.

‘Big brother Che, I’m sorry,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘It’s the Long Household’s fault for not knowing how to discipline our little trouble maker. I promise I’ll bring your wife back without one hair strand missing.’

‘After my wife returns, I’ll give her an incentive to not runaway again,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che understood Yuan Gun Gun’s motivation for wanting to make him happy.

Long Liu Bo called Fang Lang on the phone.

‘Fang Lang, I want you and Fang Ming to search all departing gates where passengers are scheduled to depart within the next three hours,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘Don’t stop looking until you find Long Liu Bao.’

‘Yes young master Bo,’ Fang Lang said.

Long Liu Bo threw the phone onto the floor.

‘Long Liu Bao, you’re going to die after I find you,’ Long Liu Bo vowed and walked to the bedroom.

‘I’m going home,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll order demons to search for my wife and Long Liu Bao.’

On a private plane, Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun ate and drank.

‘Bao Bao, didn’t you buy plane tickets?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘It’s a waste of money if we’re flying on a private plane.’

‘Gun Gun, it’s called a diversion,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I bought plane tickets to Paris to make them think we’re going to Paris. Knowing them, they will ask big brother Fang Kuang to search for us at the airport. Big sister Lang has access to all systems at the airport. She’ll find out we bought plane tickets to Paris. Now do you understand why we’re taking a private plane to Las Vegas?’

‘Bao Bao, I miss Che already,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, don’t worry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Between five to seven days, they’ll find us. Let’s think of this as work leave and have fun.’

Yuan Gun Gun ate the piece of steak Long Liu Bao held up in front of her mouth, and she smiled at Long Liu Bao.

‘Gun Gun, we’re going to have fun in a city that never sleeps,’ Long Liu Bao said.

The two women chatted happily together while their men were going crazy looking for them.

Two hours later at the Long Mansion the Long brothers were ready to kill someone after receiving bad news.

‘I asked five thousand men to search the airport,’ Fang Kuang said. ‘No one found Long Liu Bao, which means she’s not at the airport.’

Afterward Long Liu Lang received a phone call from Fang Lang.

‘Young master Lang, young master Bo’s phone is disconnected,’ Fang Lang said. ‘So I called your phone.’

‘Get to the point,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘In the airport’s system there are two plane tickets bought under Long Liu Bao,’ Fang Lang said. ‘The destination is Paris. The plane departed three and a half hours ago.’

‘Um,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘Keep looking for Long Liu Lang.’

‘Yes young master Lang,’ Fang Lang said.

Long Liu Lang hung up the phone and he frowned.

‘Any news?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Fang Lang said she found two plane tickets to Paris bought under Long Liu Bao’s name,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘It departed three and a half hours ago.’

‘Three and a half hours ago?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Impossible,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘Che brought Gun Gun here less than three and a half hours ago. Even if Bao Bao and Gun Gun sped to the airport, it’ll take them at least half an hour.’

‘You’re right,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘It means she didn’t go to the airport.’

‘What?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘I checked how much money she transferred to her card,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘She didn’t just buy plane tickets, she bought a private plane.’

At the Hao Mansion, Yi Tu was a nervous wreck looking at Hao Yan Che brooding on a chair. Like all the servants, Yi Tu didn’t expect Yuan Gun Gun would dare to escape with Long Liu Bao.

‘Young master, I’ve asked all the demons around the world to be on the lookout for Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che looked at the full moon. He knew he couldn’t live without Yuan Gun Gun. That night he found out, being apart one day from Yuan Gun Gun was more painful than he imagined it would be.

‘Yi Tu, do you think I mistreat my wife?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 157

Related

Chapter 158



‘Young master, why do you ask?’ Yi Tu asked. ‘Everyone knows how much you love Gun Gun.’

‘Why is it everyone knows I love her but she doesn’t know I love her?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, not everyone can see from the way you dote on Gun Gun shows that you love Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Especially Gun Gun... she has a simple mind.’

‘You don’t need to be subtle,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I know my wife is dumb.’

‘Hehe...’ Yi Tu laughed awkwardly.

‘Yi Tu, do you think my dumb wife will sell herself for food?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, you don’t have to worry,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Young mistress Liu Bao is with Gun Gun. She won’t let anything happen to Gun Gun.’

‘You’re right,’ Hao Yan Che said.

After an awkward silence, Hao Yan Che opened his mouth again.

‘Do you think she’ll kick the bedsheet at night?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Young master, only you know if Gun Gun kicks the bedsheet at night,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Na Liu Ting Du would know too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che wanted to kill Na Liu Ting Du.

Yi Tu didn’t know why the murderous look in Hao Yan Che’s eyes looked adorable in that moment. Yi Tu laughed at himself for thinking the monster Hao had an adorable side.

‘I’m going to kill my wife,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Where did she go to die?’

Yi Tu didn’t know without Yuan Gun Gun, Hao Yan Che would be depressed.

‘Yi Tu, don’t sleep tonight,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Stay here and gaze at the moon with me.’

‘Yes... young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu’s suspicion was confirmed. Hao Yan Che was depressed, because it was the first time he wanted to gaze at the moon.

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You don’t want to?’

‘No young master,’ Yi Tu said. ‘It’s my privilege to gaze at the moon with young master.’

Hao Yan Che silently looked at the full moon. He didn’t want to return to the bedroom that didn’t have Yuan Gun Gun. He didn’t want to sleep on a bed that didn’t have Yuan Gun Gun. He wanted to stay awake and wait for Yuan Gun Gun to come home. Perhaps Yuan Gun Gun went for a walk, and got lost. He told himself he wanted Yuan Gun Gun home so he could kill her.

In the sin city Las Vegas, Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun toured the casinos and chapels where people got married under fifteen minutes and divorced under five minutes. It was a city full of temptations like gambling, beautiful hostesses and hosts and alcohol.

‘Bao Bao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Las Vegas was a beautiful city, but the strangers’ stares on the streets made her scared.

‘Gun Gun, don’t be scared,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘They’re looking at you because you’re attractive. If anyone dares to touch you, I’ll kick them home.’

‘Bao Bao, where are we going?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If we don’t go to the best casino, it’ll be a waste of a trip here,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Do we have to gamble?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, sometimes I wonder what you use to think and speak,’ Long Liu Bao

said. 'Do you use your lungs or bottom? Do you think casinos are built to hire people to count money?'

'Bao Bao, if Che finds out I gambled, he will kill me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Gun Gun, you don't have to worry,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Your husband's heart will break if he kills you.'

Yan Gun Gun anxiously followed Long Liu Bao into the best casino.

Inside the casino Yuan Gun Gun linked arms with Long Liu Bao, and she looked at all the different kinds of people around them.

Long Liu Bao felt like she was in heaven. Long Liu Bao led Yuan Gun Gun to a crowded table to test their luck.

A couple of minutes later, Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun had a taste of their first win.

'Twenty, pair,' the dealer said.

'Gun Gun, we won,' Long Liu Bao said.

The exotic looking Long Liu Bao and the innocent looking Yuan Gun Gun attracted a bigger crowd.

'Fifteen, odd,' the dealer said.

'Gun Gun, we won again,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Do you think I have a knack for gambling?'

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head. Yuan Gun Gun relaxed after seeing how happy Long Liu Bao looked.

Long Liu Bao was having a blast winning with Yuan Gun Gun until a thief spoiled their good mood.

Long Liu Bao twisted the thief's arm.

'F'k,' the thief cursed.

'Do you want to steal my money?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'F'k you bitch,' the thief said.

'What did you say?' Long Liu Bao asked.

‘F’k you bitch,’ the thief said.

Long Liu Bao smiled at the thief, cracked the thief’s arm and a scream came out of the thief’s mouth.

‘Bao Bao, let’s leave,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘We didn’t lose anything, and it’s scary here.’

Long Liu Bao wanted to break the thief’s other arm.

‘Gun Gun, don’t be scared,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I was helping the thief to wash their mouth with soap. Remember Gun Gun, we don’t harm people who don’t harm us. But if people harm us, we’ll return the favor.’

Yuan Gun Gun thought Long Liu Bao’s smile at the thief was scary compared to all the times Long Liu Bao smiled at her.

‘Miss, our boss wants to invite you to have a private drink with him,’ a guard said.

‘What if I say I don’t want to?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Our boss only has good intentions,’ the guard said. ‘Boss has prepared the best tea for Miss. Don’t make things harder for yourself.’

‘Bao Bao, let go of the thief,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Long Liu Bao let go of the thief.

‘Next time remember to wash your mouth before you walk out the front door,’ Long Liu Bao said.

The guard led Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun to a private room. Nan Gong Yuan was waiting inside the private room.

If Long Liu Bao knew Nan Gong Yuan was a beautiful man, she would have ran to the private room sooner.

Nan Gong Yuan thought the two little monkeys in front of him were loveable.

‘Miss,’ Nan Gong Yuan said.

‘My name is Long Liu Bao,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You can call me Bao Bao. Miss doesn’t suit me.’

‘My name is Nan Gong Yuan,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘You can call me uncle Gong Yuan.’

‘Uncle?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘I was about to call you little brother.’

‘I’m forty this year,’ Nan Gong Yan said. ‘Do you still want to call me little brother?’

‘Forty?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Uncle are you a demon? Why do you have such a youthful face?’

‘You’re a straight talker,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘Uncle is really forty.’

Nan Gong Yuan didn’t know why he felt a close connection to Long Liu Bao. As though he should love Long Liu Bao.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, can you adopt us orphans?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

Long Liu Bao didn’t know why she felt a close connection to Nan Gong Yuan. As though he would protect her.

Nan Gong Yuan was surprised Long Liu Bao wanted him to adopt her and Yuan Gun Gun after their first meeting.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, do you know how much loveable orphans like us suffer on the streets?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Uncle Gong Yuan, do you want to see orphans like us be robbed, raped, tortured and beaten to death on the streets? If our parents in heaven saw us die suffering, their hearts can’t RIP anymore.’

‘Alright,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘Uncle will adopt you two.’

Nan Gong Yuan didn’t know how Long Liu Bao’s parents’ raised such a sweet talker like Long Liu Bao.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, you only need to feed and shelter us,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You don’t need to give us an allowance.’

Nan Gong Yuan didn’t know whether to laugh or faint.

‘Bao Bao, I’m hungry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, my big sister is hungry,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Big sister?’ Nan Gong Yuan asked. ‘You’re her little sister?’

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Uncle Gong Yuan, don’t you know these days how smart kids are?’

Nan Gong Yuan had never seen such a big smart kid until he met Long Liu Bao.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, you can call me Bao Bao and call my big sister Gun Gun,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao felt like she hit the jackpot. She had a feeling Nan Gong Yuan was going to let her and Yuan Gun Gun live in paradise.

At the Nan Mansion, Long Liu Bao wondered where she would find a rich, handsome and gentle man like Nan Gong Yuan. Nan Gong Yuan treated his wife like gold.

In the guest room Long Liu Bao watched over Yuan Gun Gun while she slept.

‘Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep.

Long Liu Bao regretted taking Yuan Gun Gun to escape with her. The only times Yuan Gun Gun didn’t miss the monster Hao was during meal times.

Long Liu Bao shook her head. Those three monsters needed an incentive to change for the better.

Long Liu Bao went for a walk around the Nan Mansion garden then she returned to the bedroom.

‘Gun Gun, wake up,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Your home is on fire.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t wake up.

‘Gun Gun, wake up,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Your bottom is on fire.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t wake up.

‘Gun Gun, wake up,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘It’s meal time.’

‘Where?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Long Liu Bao was in awe of Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach.

After breakfast Nan Gong Yuan took three women out sightseeing and to watch live music concerts. A large group of guards followed them around Las Vegas. Nan Gong Yuan was a rich and famous man, he didn’t want anyone to

kidnap the three women under his protection.

‘Are you tired?’ Nan Gong Yuan asked Xiao Lu Zhu. He wiped sweat off his wife’s forehead. ‘We can go home and rest if you’re tired. Tomorrow I’ll take you out again.’

‘I still want to play,’ the three women said.

The guards knew their renowned ruthless boss was famous for doting on his wife. The guards were surprised their boss also doted on Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun like they were his and his wife’s daughters.

‘Piglet, your body health isn’t good,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘We need to go home and rest. I promise I’ll take everyone out again tomorrow.’

‘I want to play,’ Xiao Lu Zhu said.

Xiao Lu Zhu didn’t look like a thirty-five-year-old married woman. Strangers would have thought Xiao Lu Zhu and Nan Gong Yuan were young lovers.

Long Liu Bao was envious of her closest friends’ adorable names. Feng Du Du, Yuan Gun Gun and Xiao Lu Zhu’s names meant round ball, little chub and piglet.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, can you take us to one more place today?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Where do you want to go?’ Nan Gong Yuan asked.

‘The Stratosphere Tower,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Nan Gong Yuan took the three women to the Stratosphere Tower.

The Stratosphere Tower in Las Vegas was famous for its extreme rides, entertainment and dining.

Long Liu Bao dreamt of sitting on the ride at the top of the Stratosphere Tower for years.

‘Bao Bao, Che...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, I’m not going to give up going on this ride,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I didn’t say give up, I said Che. Look over there.’

Hao Yan Ming and Su An Luo went out together to search for Hao Yan Che’s

runaway wife. Hao Yan Ming could smell Hao Yan Che and the Long brothers' scents on Yuan Gun Gun and Long Liu Bao from a far distance. Hao Yan Ming was certain Yuan Gun Gun was Hao Yan Che's runaway wife, because Hao Yan Che only slept with his wife.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't stop herself from crying. It hurt her to see her husband with another woman.

Long Liu Bao didn't believe Hao Yan Che would let another person touch him who wasn't Yuan Gun Gun. Long Liu Bao looked closely at Hao Yan Che's lookalike's eyes. Instead of Hao Yan Che's violet eyes, the man had silver eyes. Heavens knew how to play a deadly joke, the man was Hao Yan Ming.

Hao Yan Ming and Su An Luo walked toward Yuan Gun Gun and Long Liu Bao. Hao Yan Ming was surprised to see them with Nan Gong Yuan, a renowned boss in Las Vegas.

'Uncle Gong Yuan, it's been a long time since we've seen each other,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'Uncle Gong Yuan, has your health been good?'

'Good,' Nan Gong Yuan said. 'What about you?'

Nan Gong Yuan smiled at Las Vegas' famous young boss Hao Yan Ming.

'Good,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'Uncle, are these two women yours and your wife's daughters?'

'No,' Nan Gong Yuan said. 'These two loveable little girls are my guests.'

'Yes,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'They are loveable.'

Yuan Gun Gun recognised the beautiful woman was the same woman Hao Yan Che slept with in their living room. Why did Hao Yan Che act like he didn't know who she was?

'Gun Gun, why are you crying?' Xiao Lu Zhu asked. 'Do you feel sick?'

'Che...' Yuan Gun Gun called sadly.

'Uncle Gong Yuan, Gun Gun is sick,' Long Liu Bao said. 'We should take aunty Lu Zhu and Gun Gun home. Let's go out another day.'

Long Liu Bao knew the three monsters would drag her and Yuan Gun Gun

home within twenty-four hours, because Hao Yan Ming recognised the three monsters' scents on their bodies.

'Bao Bao, there's no rush,' Nan Gong Yuan said.

Hao Yan Ming found the Gun Gun and Bao Bao who he was looking for.

'Kids these days are always in a rush,' Nan Gong Yuan said. 'You two have a goodnight.'

Nan Gong Yuan turned around and followed Long Liu Bao who looked like she was kidnapping his wife.

Hao Yan Ming smiled at Su An Luo.

'An An, looks like we'll get to see a good performance soon,' Hao Yan Ming said.

Su An Luo ignored her two faced husband. At home he bullied her, and on the streets he acted like a gentle husband.

'Oh,' Hao Yan Ming said. 'Is my little trouble maker still angry?'

'Someone call the cops!' Su An Luo said. 'There is a pervert on the prowl!'

'Little trouble maker, why are you so aggressive?' Hao Yan Ming asked.

'Aggressive?' Su An Luo asked. 'I'm not aggressive as you. You only know how to hit me. I hate you.'

'It's your fault for touching another man,' Hao Yan Ming said.

'So what if I like touching another man?' Su An Luo asked.

'If you like touching another man, you won't step a foot out of our home again,' Hao Yan Ming said.

End of Chapter 158

Related

Chapter 159



At the Nan Mansion, Long Liu Bao coaxed the crying Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun, don’t cry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘The man you saw isn’t your monster Hao.’

‘Bao Bao, do you know Hao Yan Ming?’ Nan Gong Yuan asked.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, it’s complicated,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll go take Gun Gun back to our room first. I’ll explain everything to uncle Gong Yuan later.’

‘Um,’ Nan Gong Yuan said.

In the guest bedroom Long Liu Bao patted Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘Gun Gun, the man you saw isn’t Che,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘He is Che’s little brother Hao Yan Ming. Didn’t you notice Ming’s eyes were silver instead of violet?’

‘Bao Bao, you don’t need to lie to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘They look identical.’

‘Gun Gun, look at my twin monsters,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘They are identical except their eye color is different.’

‘Twins?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘But Che never told me he has a twin brother.’

‘The man you saw sleeping with his wife in your living room last time was Hao Yan Ming,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Your monster Hao was angry at you for saying you want to divorce him so he let you misunderstand. Hao Yan Ming lived away from home since he was a little boy. I’m sorry I forgot to tell you that your monster Hao has a twin brother.’

‘Does that mean I misunderstood Che?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao used a wet towel to wash Yuan Gun Gun's face like she was Yuan Gun Gun's mother.

'Bao Bao, what do I do now?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I really miss Che. I want to go home.'

'It's OK,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Even if you didn't want to go home, at the latest the monsters will come here tomorrow morning and take us home.'

Long Liu Bao sighed. Yuan Gun Gun must be a masochist if she loved a sadist like Hao Yan Che.

'Gun Gun, your eyes will be puffy if you keep crying,' Long Liu Bao said. 'What if your monster Hao sees your puffy eyes and don't want to take you home?'

Yuan Gun Gun stopped crying, and she hugged Long Liu Bao. Yuan Gun Gun was happy she would see Hao Yan Che in the morning.

Long Liu Bao patted Yuan Gun Gun's back. Long Liu Bao didn't know if Yuan Gun Gun loved food or Hao Yan Che more.

At the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Che received a visit from Hao Yan Ming.

'My darling big brother, have you been well lately?' Hao Yan Ming taunted.

'If you have nothing to say then leave,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che held a glass of red wine and sat depressed on a chair. He hadn't seen Yuan Gun Gun for three days. She was gone for three days. Was she well? Did she drink a glass of milk in each morning? Did she fall into the hands of evil people? Did she kick the bedsheet at night? Did Long Liu Bao corrupt her? Where was his little chub? As long as she returned home, he would forgive and forget everything.

'Big brother why are you so cold toward your darling little brother?' Hao Yan Ming asked. 'I wasted my time coming here to visit you.'

'Hao Yan Ming if you're smart then you shouldn't come here to cause trouble at this time,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Ming leisurely poured a glass of champagne.

'Big brother, do you know who I saw today?' Hao Yan Ming asked.

‘Who else do your eyes see apart from Su An Luo?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Don’t mention my bad wife,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

Hao Yan Che silently drank his glass of red wine.

‘Big brother, stop looking like you lost your soul,’ Hao Yan Ming said. ‘Today I saw a dummy little round ball who has your scent on her body. Next to the little round ball was a beautiful woman with a fire tattoo on her forehead. Big brother, don’t you think it’s a small world?’

Hao Yan Che shot out of the chair, and aimed a punch at Hao Yan Ming’s face. Hao Yan Ming dodged Hao Yan Che’s punch, and he smiled.

‘Big brother, just because you’re not a person, it doesn’t mean you can bully me,’ Hao Yan Ming joked.

Hao Yan Che glared at his trouble maker little brother who deserved a beating.

‘Do you think you’re a person?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You knew long ago, why did you wait until now to tell me?’

‘Because I wasn’t certain she was your wife,’ Hao Yan Ming denied. ‘I was scared big brother would think I was lying to you if she wasn’t your wife, and I would be killed by you. Big brother, I know how unpredictable you can be if someone disappointed you.’

‘Tell me where you saw them!’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Las Vegas,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

Hao Yan Che vowed to kill Long Liu Bao for taking his wife to sin city.

‘Big brother, do you know who they are staying with?’ Hao Yan Ming asked.

‘Who?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Nan Gong Yuan,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

‘The famous boss in Las Vegas?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

At the biggest casino in Las Vegas, Long Liu Bao took Yuan Gun Gun out for their last outing as free women.

‘Bao Bao, why did you take me here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Today is our last day of freedom,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Do you think after tomorrow, you’ll ever get an opportunity to come here again?’

‘I don’t like being here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then do you want to go upstairs to find uncle Gong Yuan?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I like being with you.’

‘Alright,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Let’s play here a little longer then we’ll go home.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun watched Long Liu Bao win another card game. Neither of them saw a hidden killer aiming a gun at Long Liu Bao.

Gun shots were heard. Everyone in the casino screamed and scattered away from the sounds of the gun shots. Long Liu Bao pulled Yuan Gun Gun below a table. Long Liu Bao shielded Yuan Gun Gun, and took out a gun from under her dress. Another gun shot was heard, and the killer fell from an upper floor. Long Liu Bao regretted she didn’t get to shoot the killer herself. But Long Liu Bao didn’t understand why a foreigner wanted to kill her.

Long Liu Bao was at eye level with a tall man’s long legs. She couldn’t see his upper body, but she could see his big muscle between his legs. Was he a potential pet or someone who wore pants?

‘Come out,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Long Liu Bao thought it was her unlucky day.

Long Liu Bao pulled Yuan Gun Gun out from under the table.

‘Tell me this is just an illusion,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Bao Bao, what illusion?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Long Liu Bao prayed to every God from every religion under the sun.

‘Bao Bao, are you sick?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’m exorcising a demon,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Demon?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. She hugged Long Liu Bao’s waist. She didn’t want to die. ‘Where?’

‘Yuan Gun Gun, come here,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Long Liu Bao. Yuan Gun Gun was happy to see Hao Yan Che. Yuan Gun Gun ran to Hao Yan Che. Yuan Gun Gun didn’t care if Hao Yan Che looked coldly at her, she wanted to hug him.

Hao Yan Che slapped Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek.

Long Liu Bao ran to Yuan Gun Gun’s side, and she helped Yuan Gun Gun stand up.

‘Hey!’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Why did you hit Gun Gun? She didn’t do anything wrong. She utters your name every moment of the day except when she’s eating. Do you know how much she missed you? Do you have a conscience? How can you hit her the moment you see her?’

Hao Yan Che took no notice of Long Liu Bao. He pulled Yuan Gun Gun away from Long Liu Bao, and he hugged Yuan Gun Gun tightly.

‘Do you know how much danger you were in before?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You almost died.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know how scared Hao Yan Che was to see a gun aimed at her. He almost changed into a werewolf to save her. Why didn’t she understand that he couldn’t lose her? How could she put herself in danger time after time? Why did she smile at him like nothing happened?

Yuan Gun Gun cried uncontrollably. She didn’t know what she did wrong to be slapped on the face. Hao Yan Che never slapped her face before that day.

Long Liu Bao looked closely at the dead killer. The killer was the thief who she caught last time. She broke the thief’s arm, but the thief wanted to kill her. Suddenly she sensed a different kind of danger. She turned around, and saw the Long brothers. Her life was over.

The Long brothers looked coldly at Long Liu Bao who ran away to Las Vegas to gamble, and be acquainted with Nan Gong Yuan.

Long Liu Bao ran to Nan Gong Yuan, and hid behind his back.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, save me,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao hiding behind another man sealed her fate.

‘Long Liu Bao, come here,’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘No,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Even if someone beats me to death, I don’t want to go home.’

‘Did you say you’re not coming here even if someone beats you to death?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

Hao Yan Ming was the only one who dared to laugh out of the guards.

Nan Gong Yuan smiled at Long Liu Bao’s antics.

Hao Yan Che scoffed at Long Liu Bao. Then he checked Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek for swelling.

Long Liu Bao looked away from Long Liu Bo’s intimidating face.

‘Bao Bao, let’s go home,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Big brother Lang and big brother Bo can go home first,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll protect your backs.’

‘The Long Household’s little princess is a rarity,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

The Long brothers glared at the trouble maker Hao Yan Ming. Even Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t resist looking at the man who made her misunderstand her husband betrayed her.

‘Big sister Gun Gun, you have a loveable face that makes people want to bully you,’ Hao Yan Ming said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s waist. She was scared Hao Yan Ming would actually bully her.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun tighter, and he gave Hao Yan Ming a warning look.

Hao Yan Ming wasn’t scared. He turned his head to look at Long Liu Bao’s performance.

‘Bao Bao, if you don’t let go of uncle’s clothes, uncle’s clothes will be ripped,’

Nan Gong Yuan said.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, don’t worry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘If I rip uncle Gong Yuan’s clothes, I’ll buy you new clothes.’

Nan Gong Yuan could only pray to the heavens. The Long brothers looked like they wanted to take turns to kill Long Liu Bao.

A moment later, Long Fei Liu and Long Wu Mac walked toward their family, and they frowned at the dead killer who wanted to kill Long Liu Bao.

‘Where’s mummy’s Bao Bao?’ Long Wu Mac asked.

Long Liu Bao was happy to hear Long Wu Mac’s voice. She let go of Nan Gong Yuan and ran to Long Wu Mac.

‘Mummy, daddy,’ Long Liu Bao called.

Long Wu Mac pushed her husband away, and spread her arms to hug Long Liu Bao. But the Long brothers grabbed hold of Long Liu Bao’s dress collar, and stopped Long Liu Bao from escaping.

‘Bao Bao, it’s time to go home,’ Long Liu Bo said.

Long Liu Bao shook her head.

‘Bao Bao, be good and go home,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘When uncle and aunty are free, we’ll come visit you.’

Nan Gong Yuan felt like he was losing a daughter. But he and his wife couldn’t keep someone else’s daughter by their side.

‘Bao Bao, don’t you need mummy anymore?’ Long Wu Mac asked.

Long Wu Mac cried because her little girl didn’t need her anymore. Who else could she watch boy love movies with?

Long Liu Bao took a deep breath. She loved her mummy, and thought a beating was worth to see her mummy smile. Besides, it wasn’t the first time her body would be stretched.

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, you have to promise that you’ll bring aunty Lu Zhu to visit me when you’re free,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘The Long Mansion’s address is...’

Long Liu Bao whispered something else in Nan Gong Yuan’s ear, and the Long

brothers were tempted to hit Nan Gong Yuan.

‘Um,’ Nan Gong Yuan said. ‘Go home safely.’

‘Uncle Gong Yuan, thank you for taking care of Bao Bao,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘Uncle Gong Yuan and your wife are welcome to visit the Long Mansion anytime.’

The Long brothers dragged Long Liu Bao all the way home like she was a criminal.

Hao Yan Che also took Yuan Gun Gun home where a good talk awaited her.

End of Chaper 159

Related

Chapter 160



At the Hao Mansion, in the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun silently sat on the bed. She stopped missing Hao Yan Che since he slapped her cheek in Las Vegas. Long Liu Bao was wrong, Hao Yan Che wasn't gentler toward her and he didn't hit her bottom. She didn't think there was a day Hao Yan Che would raise his hand to hit her face.

Yuan Gun Gun wouldn't have ran away if Hao Yan Che wasn't so controlling and mean to her. She was scared about what he would do next.

'Go take a bath,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought she misheard Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che put Yuan Gun Gun's nightshirt and underwear on the bed.

'Go take a bath,' Hao Yan Che repeated.

Yuan Gun Gun picked up the nightshirt and underwear from the bed, and she walked to the bathroom.

Hao Yan Che took out soothing cream from a drawer, and waited on the bed for Yuan Gun Gun.

After Yuan Gun Gun came out of the bathroom, she was surprised Hao Yan Che was waiting for her on the bed.

'Come here,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun slowly walked to the bed. She sat on the bed, and Hao Yan Che applied soothing cream on her red cheek.

'Che, I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's OK,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You don't need to say anything.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know if Hao Yan Che wasn't angry or he was going to

punish her later.

‘Dry your hair and sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che put the soothing cream in the drawer, and walked to the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why Hao Yan Che suddenly behaved differently. She felt the distance between became wider.

Hao Yan Che soaked his body in the bathtub, and thought about Yuan Gun Gun. They were together for four years. She didn’t change. But he changed. Each day he loved her more. But she couldn’t see how much he loved her.

Hao Yan Che had hoped Yuan Gun Gun would be a little smarter after four years. He only wanted her to be a little smarter enough to understand he loved her. Was he overbearing? Was he a scary person in her heart? Did she feel suffocated by him? He didn’t want her to leave him. He was scared of losing her to Na Liu Ting Du.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know what he should do to change. What did Hao Yan Que do to make Qiu Li Luo love Hao Yan Que unconditionally? He used to look down at how much Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo loved each other. But after marrying Yuan Gun Gun, he wanted them to love each other like how deeply his parents loved each other. He wanted to be with Yuan Gun Gun every second and minute of the day.

Yuan Gun Gun forced herself to keep her eyes opened. She heard the bathroom door opened, and felt Hao Yan Che lie on the bed next to her. She was anxious about how he would punish her.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s nightshirt. He knew she was scared of him. It was his fault for being rough with her the first time he slept with her. He thought she would forget about the pain he caused her over time. He didn’t expect she would always be scarred from that day. He didn’t know what to do to make her more comfortable being with him. That night he felt like a failure.

Yuan Gun Gun felt Hao Yan Che hugged her waist from behind. She was anxious what he would do next.

Hao Yan Che felt Yuan Gun Gun’s body tensed. He missed her, and wanted to

sleep with her. But if she didn't want to sleep with him, he didn't want to be selfish and only held her that night.

Yuan Gun Gun waited for a long time. Then she heard Hao Yan Che sleeping. Why didn't he hit or curse her?

The next morning at half past eight, Mrs Chen was shocked to see Yuan Gun Gun eating breakfast at the dining table. Usually if Yuan Gun Gun did something to make Hao Yan Che angry, he would keep Yuan Gun Gun in bed all night and Yuan Gun Gun wouldn't wake up until the afternoon.

Mrs Chen didn't understand why Yuan Gun Gun running away was breaking a serious rule in Hao Yan Che's eyes, but Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun off the hook. What also gave Mrs Chen a shock was Hao Yan Che let Yuan Gun Gun sit on a chair instead of holding Yuan Gun Gun on his lap.

Mrs Chen wondered if it was an omen. Was it the calm before the storm?

End of Chapter 160

Related

Chapter 161



Yuan Gun Gun ate breakfast, and occasionally looked at Hao Yan Che's face. She didn't know why he let her sit on a chair to eat. It felt strange not sitting on his lap, and feeding each other when they sat at the dining table at home together.

Hao Yan Che acted calm even though he missed having Yuan Gun Gun sit on his lap. She was his wife. He didn't know why he stopped himself from hugging her if he wanted to. But he had to change and be gentler if he wanted her to stay with him. He was torn between giving her space to feel free, and holding onto her tightly. It was the most frustrating breakfast in his lifetime.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu exchanged a confused look with each other. They didn't understand why the atmosphere in the dining room felt odd.

After breakfast, Yuan Gun Gun stood to follow Hao Yan Che to work.

'You don't have to come to work anymore,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You're free to stay at home.'

Yuan Gun Gun asked Hao Yan Che to let her stay at home often, but he insisted she came to work with him because he hated being apart from her. He told himself the right thing to do was give her time to herself away from him so she wouldn't feel suffocated.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che not being affectionate with her, and wanting her to stay at home was his way of punishing her.

'I'm going to work,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che suppressed his desire to carry Yuan Gun Gun to work with him.

Yuan Gun Gun watched Hao Yan Che walk out the front door. Wasn't staying at home what she wanted? She didn't like hearing gossip at work, or dealing with

people who acted like her friend and stabbed her in the back. But she liked being with Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che returned home at seven in the evening. Yuan Gun Gun was eating potato chips, and watching TV in the living room. She put the chips down on the coffee table and waited for him to say something.

‘Did you eat dinner yet?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Not yet,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I...’

‘Then why are you eating junk food?’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘How many times have I said not to eat junk food before dinner?’

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to say she waited to eat dinner with Hao Yan Che. But she got hungry, and ate a bit of chips because she didn’t know what time he would be home.

Hao Yan Che saw Yuan Gun Gun fidgeting her fingers nervously, and he told himself he needed to give her freedom.

‘You can eat junk food,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll go eat dinner.’

Yuan Gun Gun thought she misheard Hao Yan Che. He didn’t pinch her ear or her bottom for eating junk food before dinner. She pinched her cheek. The pain showed her she wasn’t dreaming.

Two weeks later, at eleven at night in the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun watched Hao Yan Che sleep. For two weeks, he wasn’t intimate with her. In the past, he slept with her every day except for the days she had her period. Didn’t he desire her anymore?

Yuan Gun Gun had wanted Hao Yan Che to cut back on how often he was intimate with her. She didn’t know why his sudden change in behavior made her sad.

Hao Yan Che endured his desire for Yuan Gun Gun to give her space. For two weeks and five hours, he wasn’t intimate with Yuan Gun Gun. He avoided touching her, because he didn’t want to scare her by jumping onto to her body and compensating the days they weren’t intimate with each other. It was hard

for him to be patient, and wait for her to take the initiative when she wanted to be intimate with him.

Hao Yan Che wanted Yuan Gun Gun that night, but he didn't want to waste his efforts in the last fortnight.

That night Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun stayed up all night deep in their own thoughts.

In the morning, Hao Yan Che walked to the front door to leave for work.

'Che,' Yuan Gun Gun called and held onto Hao Yan Che's arm.

Hao Yan Che felt Yuan Gun Gun taking the initiative to approach him made all his efforts worth it.

'What is it?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Can I come to work with you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'You want to work?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun didn't like working.

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Why?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Didn't you say you don't like working?'

'I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to say she missed Hao Yan Che. But it felt like he avoided touching her, and being in the same room as her. Did she disappoint him by running away?

End of Chapter 161

Related

Chapter 162



‘If it’s troublesome, I’ll stay home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun let go of Hao Yan Che’s arm.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘Let’s go,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to say to Hao Yan Che that she loved him, and his sudden change made her insecure. She was used to him taking charge, and nagging her. But lately he stopped caring if she ate junk food and that she did nothing productive. Most of all she hated the distance between them. She felt like he didn’t need her. Was he still angry at her for running away, and didn’t want to forgive her?

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che hated when Yuan Gun Gun guarded her feelings, and kept her distance from him. It made him scared that any second she would say she wanted to divorce him, and she regretted marrying him. He didn’t expect the hardest person to hold onto was a simpleton. He didn’t understand what she thought about in her head like how she didn’t understand his thoughts. Should he let her know his feelings toward her directly?

‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che saw Yuan Gun Gun forced herself to smile at him, and he had enough. After work, he planned to tell her everything. He wanted to tell her how much he loved her. Tell her that he was willing to change to make her happy for the rest of her life. Then if she was willing, he wanted to sleep with her at night.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s hand holding her hand tightly. She didn’t want to lose his protectiveness. After work she wanted to say sorry to him

for running away. She wanted to tell him how much she loved him. Tell him about her insecurities. That she was scared he was forced to marry her, scared he didn't need her anymore and scared he didn't care about her anymore. There were too many other insecurities she bottled up. Like she was scared another woman would take him away from her. Then she would use the other seductive ways Long Liu Bao taught her on him. Would he desire her again?

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun silently planned their love declarations on the way to work.

Later that morning, one of Hao Yan Che's secretaries entered his office.

'Take these reports to the marketing department,' Hao Yan Che instructed.

'Yes CEO Hao,' the secretary said and left Hao Yan Che's office.

'Che, if you want I can help you at work like in the past,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You don't need to work,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you're bored, you can browse online or go shopping. I can ask Yi Tu to be your bodyguard.'

'I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che saying he didn't need her made Yuan Gun Gun want to cry.

'What's wrong?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'If you don't want to go shopping, I'll ask Yi Tu to buy desserts for you.'

'Nothing,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I want to go see big sister Feng.'

'Why do you want to see her?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun waited for Hao Yan Che to ask her to stay.

'Alright,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You can go see her.'

Yuan Gun Gun silently walked out of Hao Yan Che's office.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu exchanged another confused look at each other. They didn't understand why Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun were behaving oddly.

'Young master, I don't know why you suddenly behaving strangely,' Yi Tu said. 'Young master, can't you see how unhappy Gun Gun is by your sudden change? Did something happened between young master and Gun Gun?'

Hao Yan Che gave Yi Tu a disapproving look.

‘Young master, I’m sorry for overstepping my boundary,’ Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che thumped his desk.

‘I’m unhappier,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu closed his mouth. He was lucky he wasn’t Hao Yan Che’s desk.

Hao Yan Che took a deep breath, and silently worked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t go to look for Feng Ting. Yuan Gun Gun sat on the toilet seat in the women’s bathroom. She didn’t know when it became a habit for her to cry on the toilet seat at work. She hated hearing people gossip about her, but she felt better after crying on the toilet seat.

‘Have you heard CEO’s ugly and dumb wife hasn’t been coming to work with him for a long time?’ the first woman asked.

‘No,’ the second woman said. ‘But I wouldn’t be surprised if CEO Hao had enough of seeing her at work and at home. If he doesn’t let her come to work then he must be seeing his mistress at work.’

‘I heard CEO’s wife ran away,’ the third woman said. ‘Not only is she ugly and dumb, she’s also a burden. She ran away to get his attention. How laughable, even if she got his attention by running away, it would only make him hate her more.’

The three women laughed at Yuan Gun Gun’s expense.

Yuan Gun Gun heard enough. She opened the toilet door, and confronted the women who gossiped about her.

End of Chapter 162

Related

Chapter 163



‘Big sisters, tell me what have I done to you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Why must you always gossip about me behind my back?’

It didn’t matter if the distance between Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che was vast. Other people didn’t have the right to insult her unprovoked.

The three women were speechless.

‘It doesn’t matter if I’m ugly and dumb,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m the woman Hao Yan Che chose to marry. Big sisters, you can look down on me. But none of you have any right to bad mouth me behind my back unprovoked.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s tears contradicted the conviction in her voice.

The three women laughed coldly at the weakling Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Do you really think CEO Hao chose to marry you?’ the first woman asked. ‘If you won’t be the only one who can touch CEO Hao freely, CEO Hao would have chosen one of us to marry, not you.’

Yuan Gun Gun stumbled back a step.

‘You’re only born lucky,’ the second woman said. ‘Think about it. If he couldn’t stand your touch, do you think he would even take one glance at you? Don’t make us laugh. Look at yourself in the mirror. There is nothing appealing about you. You’re ugly, fat and dumb. Do you think CEO Hao married you because he loves you? Who knows what schemes you used to force CEO Hao to marry you?’

The women cornered Yuan Gun Gun to a wall.

‘Do you want to know why we insult you behind your back?’ the third woman asked. ‘Because we hate you. We have the right to talk about anyone we want to. What are you going to do? Find someone to sew our lips?’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the three women's scornful faces.

'Yuan Gun Gun, wake up,' the first woman. 'Do you know how many people hate you? Do you know how many people think you don't deserve to be CEO Hao's wife? If you have anything inside your dumb brain, you should leave CEO Hao so he can be with someone worthy.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to do. She could only swallow the women's insults.

The three women left the bathroom like nothing happened.

Yuan Gun Gun sat against the bathroom wall and cried.

At three in the afternoon Hao Yan Che couldn't wait for Yuan Gun Gun to come back to his office on her own. He didn't know why he couldn't shake off a bad feeling.

Hao Yan Che called Yuan Gun Gun's phone, but she didn't pick up.

'Yi Tu, go to Feng Ting's office and bring Gun Gun back here,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu bowed and went to Feng Ting's office.

A while later, Yi Tu returned alone to Hao Yan Che's office.

'Young master, Feng Ting said Gun Gun didn't come to her office,' Yi Tu reported.

'Where is Gun Gun?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No one knows,' Yi Tu said.

'Go find her,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che put on his jacket, and went to look for Yuan Gun Gun.

Yi Tu was worried Yuan Gun Gun ran away again.

Later at the Long Mansion, Hao Yan Che rang the doorbell. The Long brothers opened the door, and he walked past them to confront Long Liu Bao.

Long Liu Bao thought in that moment Hao Yan Che looked the scariest she had

ever seen him.

‘Long Liu Bao, where is Yuan Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Gun Gun?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Isn’t she at home?’

Hao Yan Che gripped Long Liu Bao’s neck, and lifted her feet off the floor.

The Long brothers saw Long Liu Bao choking, they ran toward her and fought with Hao Yan Che.

After Hao Yan Che released Long Liu Bao’s neck, she fell onto the floor and gasped for air. If the Long brothers weren’t home, she would have died.

Long Wu Mac rushed to Long Liu Bao.

‘Bao Bao, are you OK?’ Long Wu Mac asked.

Long Liu Bao shook her head.

Long Wu Mac thought Hao Yan Che was too cruel. How could he choke someone he grew up with? Long Wu Mac could see Long Liu Bao’s reddened neck, and she didn’t doubt Long Liu Bao’s neck would bruise for days.

‘Hao Yan Che, are you crazy?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

Long Liu Bo punched Hao Yan Che’s stomach, but Hao Yan Che deflected his punch.

Long Liu Lang wanted to kill Hao Yan Che for almost killing Long Liu Bao.

‘Hao Yan Che, why are you this crazy?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

Hao Yan Che took no notice of the Long brothers.

‘Long Liu Bao, where are you hiding Yuan Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t tell Long Liu Bao that Yuan Gun Gun planned to escape again. But Long Liu Bao believed Yuan Gun Gun must have had enough of Hao Yan Che’s bullying, and chose to leave.

‘Even if I die, I wouldn’t tell you,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Hao Yan Che was prepared to kill Long Liu Bao if she didn’t tell him where she hid Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Bao Bao!’ Long Liu Lang called. ‘Why are you lying? You haven’t been in

contact with Gun Gun.'

'Hao Yan Che, go ahead and kill me,' Long Liu Bo said.

'Do you think I wouldn't dare kill you?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Long Liu Bo pulled Long Liu Bao behind him.

'Che, don't believe Bao Bao,' Long Liu Lang said. 'I promise you Bao Bao hasn't been in contact with Gun Gun.'

'I'm not lying,' Long Liu Bao lied. 'I hate how you bully Gun Gun. I know where Gun Gun is. But I'll never tell you where she is.'

Long Liu Bao couldn't escape Long Liu Bo's hold.

'Long Liu Bao, be quiet!' Long Liu Bo said. 'Don't make me use force.'

Long Liu Bo held onto Long Liu Bao. Couldn't she see Hao Yan Che would kill her the moment she was unprotected?

'Did you say I bully my wife?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Long Liu Bao cried because she was worried how scared Yuan Gun Gun would be running away alone.

'Am I wrong?' Long Liu Bao asked.

Hao Yan Che knew Long Liu Bao was lying. Long Liu Bao wouldn't look worried about Yuan Gun Gun if she knew where Yuan Gun Gun was. If Yuan Gun Gun contacted Long Liu Bao then Long Liu Bao would have known that he hadn't bullied Yuan Gun Gun for a long time.

Hao Yan Che turned around, and walked outside the Long Mansion. He asked himself if it was too late for him to change. After he slapped Yuan Gun Gun's cheek in Las Vegas, he didn't hit her again. Because he didn't want her to be scared of him again. He gave her freedom to choose when she wanted to be intimate with him, what she wanted to eat and where she wanted to go. Yet she ran away again. Should he stop being stubborn, let her go and let her be happy without him?

End of Chapter 163

Related

Chapter 164



Hao Yan Che rushed home, and Mrs Chen opened the front door.

‘Did Gun Gun come home?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes young master,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Gun Gun said she came home to get work papers for you, and she went back to work.’

Mrs Chen thought Hao Yan Che wasn’t himself, and sensed something happened.

Hao Yan Che laughed at his himself, and walked to the study room.

Hao Yan Che sat on a chair, and looked at the locked drawer for a long time. He opened the drawer, it wasn’t locked and Yuan Gun Gun’s passport was missing. If the first time Yuan Gun Gun ran away was influenced by Long Liu Bao then the second time Yuan Gun Gun ran away meant Yuan Gun Gun truly wanted to leave him. Did he change too late?

Yi Tu knocked on the study room door.

‘Young master,’ Yi Tu called.

‘Come in,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu thought Hao Yan Che looked depressed like the first time Yuan Gun Gun ran away.

‘Did you find Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yi Tu said. ‘I even went to the Yuan Mansion. No one has seen her.’

‘Do you know why?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yi Tu didn’t know what to say.

‘Because she ran away,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che's voice sounded detached like he was talking about something that didn't involve him.

'Young master...' Yi Tu said.

'I'm tired,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I don't want to fall any deeper.'

Hao Yan Che said the words more to himself than Yi Tu. Hao Yan Che closed his eyes. If Yuan Gun Gun truly wanted to leave him, he should let her go. Letting her go was letting himself go. He was always meant to be alone. She was a short dream in his forever life. He needed to wake up and face his reality alone.

'Young master, you shouldn't say that,' Yi Tu said. 'Gun Gun...'

'Go outside,' Hao Yan Che said. 'In the future don't mention Yuan Gun Gun in front of me.'

'Young master...' Yi Tu said.

'Go outside!' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che's voice shook the room.

Yi Tu covered his ears, and left the room.

Hao Yan Che turned off the lights, and sat alone in the dark.

At Paris, Yuan Gun Gun walked around the airport. She was scared to be in a foreign place by herself. She regretted leaving home. Hao Yan Che didn't care about her, he wouldn't look for her. She wiped her tears, it was clear he didn't want to see her anymore.

Yuan Gun Gun held the phone Na Liu Ting Du gave her as a wedding gift, and contemplated whether to call Na Liu Ting Du.

In New York, Na Liu Ting Du was signing a contract with Chang Quan Rui.

'Mr Chang, I'm happy to collaborate with you,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I look forward to be the host next time.'

'It's my privilege,' Chang Quan Rui said. 'Next time you're in Beijing, come visit me.'

'I will,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I'll escort you out.'

Na Liu Ting Du opened the meeting room door for Chang Quan Rui.

‘Thank you,’ Chang Quan Rui said. ‘Bye.’

Na Liu Ting Du looked out the window. The New York City view was beautiful, but he felt lonely. He picked up his phone, and wanted to call Yuan Gun Gun but hesitated like usual. Suddenly he received a phone call from Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Na Liu Ting Du’s voice for the first time after she married Hao Yan Che. It was bitter sweet, and she sobbed.

‘Gun Gun, what happened?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘Don’t scare me. Why are you crying?’

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Na Liu Ting Du ran to the parking lot.

‘I’m here,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Don’t cry. Tell me what happened.’

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t cry,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I’m coming home now to help you.’

‘Big brother Du, where are you?’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’m in New York,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘But I’m not in New York,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Where are you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I’m in Paris,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘You’re in Paris?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t tell me you’re in Paris by yourself,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

End of Chapter 164

Related

Chapter 165



‘It’s OK,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Tell me where you are in Paris.’

Na Liu Ting Du drove toward the airport. He was both worried and happy to hear Yuan Gun Gun’s news.

‘I just landed in Paris,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m outside the airport.’

‘Where are you at outside the airport?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I don’t know... ah!’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun...’ Na Liu Ting Du called.

On Yuan Gun Gun’s end, she held onto her bag that a thief wanted to steal.

‘Let go of the bag!’ the thief said.

‘No!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You can’t take my bag.’

Yuan Gun Gun dug her fingernails into the thief’s hands. The thief cursed, and pushed Yuan Gun Gun onto the road, and a car hit her.

The airport security guards stopped the thief from running away.

Yuan Gun Gun laid on the road. She didn’t register her head was bleeding. The last thing she remembered was that she didn’t want anyone to steal her bag. Inside her bag was a photo she secretly took of Hao Yan Che. She didn’t need to be scared of losing Hao Yan Che, and didn’t need to be sad he didn’t love her if she was dying.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to die. She didn’t get to tell Hao Yan Che that she loved him. She didn’t get to have a baby with Hao Yan Che. She wanted their baby to have his eyes, nose, mouth... was it too late?

Na Liu Ting Du was grateful he was in the Luxembourg Garden looking at the Statue of Liberty replica of the original statue in New York instead of being

thousands of miles away from Yuan Gun Gun when she was in danger. Yuan Gun Gun's scream, and the sound of a car braking abruptly made his heart stopped.

Na Liu Ting Du parked at the airport where a crowd surrounded Yuan Gun Gun's body on the road.

Na Liu Ting Du got out of the car, and ran to Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, it's me,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Talk to me.'

'Sir, we need to take her to the hospital,' a paramedic said.

'I'm her family,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I want to stay with her.'

'Alright,' the paramedic said. 'You can stay with her in the ambulance.'

In the ambulance Na Liu Ting Du held Yuan Gun Gun's limp hand. Her head was bleeding.

'Gun Gun, you better wake up,' Na Liu Ting Du whispered in Yuan Gun Gun's ear. 'You can't cause trouble and disappear. Gun Gun, I promise nothing will happen to you.'

Later that day at the hospital, Yuan Gun Gun laid on a bed in the ICU.

'Gun Gun, you have to wake up,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun's doctor examined Yuan Gun Gun's body condition.

'Sir, you need to prepare yourself,' the doctor said. 'The patient suffered a serious head injury. There is a high chance that the patient will lose their memory after waking up or suffer permanent brain damage. The patient's physical condition is stable, and the patient's baby is healthy.'

'Baby?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Yes,' the doctor said. 'Did you know your wife is three weeks pregnant?'

'No,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'I can organise a counsellor to help you decide whether you want to prioritise your wife or the baby,' the doctor said.

'Who said I wanted to abort the baby?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'Sir, don't misunderstand,' the doctor said. 'No one is forcing you to abort the

baby.'

Na Liu Ting Du looked at Yuan Gun Gun's stomach.

'Sir, call a nurse if anything happens to the patient,' the doctor said. 'The nurse will call me to come here.'

The doctor left the ICU to examine another patient.

Na Liu Ting Du rubbed Yuan Gun Gun's stomach.

'Gun Gun, did you know inside your stomach is your baby with Hao Yan Che?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Na Liu Ting Du thought Yuan Gun Gun lived a happy life with Hao Yan Che. He didn't understand why she ran to Paris by herself if she was happy. Did she regret choosing Hao Yan Che over him? Or did she come to Paris to visit him? Why did he still hope she came to Paris to be with him?

The following morning Hao Yan Che visited Yuan Ting Liu at the Yuan Mansion.

'Did you abandon my daughter?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'Dad, your daughter abandoned me,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Why did you come find me instead of looking for Gun Gun?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

End of Chapter 165

Related

Chapter 166



‘Tell me why,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Dad, I’ve decided to give back your daughter,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Are you saying you want to divorce my daughter?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Yuan Ting Liu did expect to hear the word divorce come out of Hao Yan Che’s mouth. But it was still hard for Yuan Ting Liu to accept the situation.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to divorce Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Mr Hao, you have guts,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘My daughter is missing because of you. Yet you dare sit in front of me and tell me you want to give my daughter back. What reply do you want to hear from me? Have you forgotten I’m Gun Gun’s biological father? Do you think my daughter is a toy? Now that you played enough, you want throw my daughter away?’

‘Dad, you know that isn’t true,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Ting Liu opened a drawer, and took out divorce papers he prepared. He put the divorce papers and a pen on the table.

Hao Yan Che was startled to see the divorce papers.

‘If you want to give back my daughter, I’ll go look for my daughter myself,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Sign the return form, and you’re free.’

Hao Yan Che picked up the pen. He felt like time stopped for longer than a minute. Then he put the pen down.

‘Is there a problem?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked. ‘It’s stated clearly in black and white. Gun Gun doesn’t need anything from you. You don’t need to give her a divorce settlement or spousal support. All you need to do is sign, and your marriage to Gun Gun will end.’

‘Dad, did Gun Gun prepare this?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Is Gun Gun here?’

‘Gun Gun isn’t here,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I’ve sent people to look for Gun Gun. I prepared this myself.’

‘Dad, why?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Just sign,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘This is what you wanted.’

Hao Yan Che stood up from the chair.

‘Dad, I’ll wait until Gun Gun is found,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll sign after she comes to see me. Dad, when that day arrives, I’ll give her everything she wants.’

‘Yan Che,’ Yuan Ting Liu called.

Hao Yan Che hated hearing his father-in-law calling his name for the first time instead of son-in-law.

‘Yan Che, you still don’t know what Gun Gun wants most of all from you,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Dad, now I know what Gun Gun wants,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to let Yuan Gun Gun go. But if leaving him made her happy, he wanted her to be happy.

Yuan Ting Liu watched Hao Yan Che leave, and he sighed.

Feng Du Du came out of her hiding spot and sat on the sofa next to Yuan Ting Liu. He kissed her forehead.

‘You can ask all your questions,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Ting Liu, why did you prepare these divorce papers on their wedding day?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘Did you know this day would come?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Hao Yan Che is too cold and smart. Gun Gun is too warm and simple minded. It’s inevitable they’ll have misunderstandings. Hao Yan Che doesn’t want to say his true feelings, and Gun Gun is too scared to say her true feelings. Hao Yan Che wants to do everything for Gun Gun to show that he loves her. And Gun Gun wants to listen to Hao Yan Che to show that she loves him. If one person is too controlling and the other person is too submissive, misunderstandings will grow. Gun Gun is too scared to tell Hao Yan Che about

her insecurities, and too scared tell him that she's scared of disappointing him. Hao Yan Che is too dominant and stubborn. He's scared if he gives Gun Gun too much time away from him that she'll leave him. Now they're in this situation.'

'Ting Liu, if you knew this day would come, why did you give them your blessing for them to get married?' Feng Du Du asked.

'Did I have a choice?' Yuan Ting Liu asked. 'Firstly, we owe the Hao Household a favor for saving Gun Gun's life. If they didn't save Gun Gun's life, we would have lost Gun Gun when she was five. Secondly, if I didn't give my blessing, it'll make our daughter sad. Thirdly, even if I didn't give my blessing, Hao Yan Che will find a way to keep Gun Gun with him and stop us from seeing Gun Gun. Finally, I never said they wouldn't work out.'

'Are you saying there is still a chance for them to be together?' Feng Du Du asked.

'Let's leave it up to fate,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

'Ting Liu, if you know what's causing them to misunderstand each other, why aren't you intervening?' Feng Du Du asked.

'This is something they need to figure out on their own,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Like how I struggled to figure out what's most important to me years ago.'

Feng Du Du hugged Yuan Ting Liu. Remembering how they misunderstood each other in the past made her sad. She was grateful in the end they chose to work through their problems together.

'The truth is I want that cold little boy to suffer the same way I suffered,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'It's good to see the little boy is suffering a fate worse than death.'

End of Chapter 166

Related

Chapter 167



‘What if Hao Yan Che doesn’t figure out he and Gun Gun wants the same thing?’ Feng Du Du asked. ‘What will happen to Gun Gun?’

‘We should let them solve their own problems,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Then where is Gun Gun?’ Feng Du Du asked.

‘I don’t know where Gun Gun is,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘I’m not going to stop looking for Gun Gun until we find her.’

At the hospital in Paris, Na Liu Ting Du came out of the bathroom and sat on the chair next to Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes, and saw a beautiful man looking at her.

‘You’re beautiful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re finally awake,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You’re not allowed to scare me like this again. And you’re not allowed to go anywhere on your own again.’

‘Who are you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du’s smile disappeared.

‘My head hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Where am I? Who am I?’

Yuan Gun Gun hit her head.

‘Who am I?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Ting Du pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hands away from her head, and he hugged her.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I love you. You have me to protect you.’

Half an hour later, Na Liu Ting Du spoke in French with Yuan Gun Gun’s doctor.

‘Mr Na, your wife lost her memory,’ the doctor said.

‘Is there a way to get her memory back?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘There is a chance your wife will slowly regain her memory over time,’ the doctor said. ‘If you want to trigger your wife’s memory, take her to her favorite places and show her photos of your life together. But there is a higher chance your wife won’t get her memory back.’

‘When can I take her home?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Your wife needs to stay here for another two days for monitoring,’ the doctor said.

‘Thank you doctor,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

The doctor said bye to Na Liu Ting Du and walked outside Yuan Gun Gun’s hospital room.

Na Liu Ting Du took out his phone to call Yuan Ting Liu. He gripped his phone, and put it back in his pocket. He wanted to take his chance to be selfish.

Na Liu Ting Du looked at Yuan Gun Gun holding her head and crying on the bed.

‘Why can’t I remember anything?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Why can’t I understand what you and the doctor said?’

‘Because the doctor and I were talking to each other in French,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I can teach you how to speak French.’

‘Who are you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I’m your husband,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked suspiciously at Na Liu Ting Du.

‘My name is Na Liu Ting Du and your name is Na Liu Ling Yan,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘We’re married. You were robbed. The thief pushed you onto the road, a car hit you and you lost your memory. Don’t be scared, and trust me. I’ll protect you.’

Na Liu Ting Du hugged Yuan Gun Gun. She thought his scent was familiar like she grew up with him.

‘Ling Ling, you’re three weeks pregnant,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘You’ll be a mum soon.’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at her stomach.

‘Tell me, do you want our baby?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Baby?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her stomach.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s stomach too. ‘Do you want our baby?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want the baby.’

‘Alright,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘If you listen to me, you can keep our baby.’

End of Chapter 167

Related

Chapter 168



Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun's forehead. He wanted to hold onto his happiness.

After dinner, Na Liu Ting Du laid on the hospital bed next to Yuan Gun Gun. He patted her back to help her sleep.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes and smiled at Na Liu Ting Du.

'What's wrong?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'You're really beautiful,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du smiled and pinched Yuan Gun Gun's nose.

'I told you, a man is handsome not beautiful,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun's nose.

'Close your eyes and sleep,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes. She thought Na Liu Ting Du kissing her face felt familiar. She thought she had a good life. Her husband was a gentle man, and she believed their marriage must have been happy.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to regain her memory, because she felt like she had forgotten someone important. Was Na Liu Ting Du the important person she forgot?

Yuan Ting Liu rang Na Liu Ting Du's phone.

'Sleep,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I'll come back soon.'

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head and closed her eyes.

Na Liu Ting Du answered Yuan Ting Liu's phone call.

'Dad,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Ting Du, are you good?’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘Yes dad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘What about dad?’

‘I’m good but Gun Gun isn’t good,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘What?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked. ‘What happened to Gun Gun?’

‘Gun Gun is missing,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Hao Yan Che doesn’t want to find Gun Gun.’

‘What?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Are you surprised Gun Gun is missing or Hao Yan Che doesn’t want to find her?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Doesn’t he want Gun Gun anymore?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Right now he doesn’t want Gun Gun,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

‘I see,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Ting Du, is Gun Gun with you?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

Na Liu Ting Du knew his lies wouldn’t fool Yuan Ting Liu.

‘I see,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Take good care of Gun Gun.’

‘Dad, I promise I’ll take good care of Gun Gun,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘When you’re free, bring Gun Gun home to visit us,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Bye.’

Na Liu Ting Du believed it was the heavens giving him a chance to be happy. He didn’t want to tell Yuan Ting Liu about Yuan Gun Gun’s car accident, her lost memory or her baby with Hao Yan Che. He wasn’t going to let go of Yuan Gun Gun again.

At the Hao Mansion, Jia Tu and Yi Tu waited outside room eighty-five.

‘Yi Tu, what is young master doing inside?’ Jia Tu asked. ‘Do you think he’s going to kill them?’

‘Jia Tu, young master wouldn’t throw away anything that belongs to Gun Gun,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Young master loves Gun Gun. Gun Gun isn’t here, seeing her small friends gives him hope that one day she’ll come back.’

Inside room eighty-five Hao Yan Che frowned at the Yuan Gun Gun’s small

friends. They were scared of their king. Xiao Yuan was the only one who bravely walked to Hao Yan Che.

Xiao Yuan’s big round eyes made Hao Yan Che think about Yuan Gun Gun’s big round eyes. Yuan Gun Gun would cause trouble, and look at him with innocent eyes. Was Yuan Gun Gun living a happy life without him? Was he foolish for holding onto hope that Yuan Gun Gun would come back to him?

Hao Yan Che remembered how seeing the divorce papers choked him. It felt painful like thousands of nails hammered everywhere on his body. Why didn’t he sign? Why was he waiting like a fool for Yuan Gun Gun to come back?

End of Chapter 168

Related

Chapter 169



One year later.

‘Hao Hao, no,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

On a giant bed, a powerful little baby boy who had natural white hair was levitating objects in the air with his violet eyes.

‘Hao Hao, be good and mummy will read you a different story,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Suddenly all the flying objects fell onto the floor.

Yuan Gun Gun put down the Snow White book, and she picked up the Cinderella book.

The fallen objects flew around the room again.

‘Hao Hao, the books you want mummy to read are hard for mummy to read,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let mummy read you these stories for now.’

Na Liu Hao’s violet eyes looked stubbornly at his mummy.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled and kissed Na Liu Hao’s chubby cheeks.

‘Then wait for daddy to come home and he’ll read you the books you want to hear,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Hao let the objects fall onto the ground again.

‘Mummy’s Hao Hao is a good baby,’ Yuan Gun Gun praised.

Na Liu Hao looked at the door, and waited for Na Liu Ting Du to come home.

Yuan Gun Gun thought her son was a special baby. When her son was born, the doctor wanted to examine Na Liu Hao’s bottom. Na Liu Hao levitated a heavy object and knocked the doctor unconscious. It made the nurses scared to touch

Na Liu Hao.

Na Liu Ting Du was happy to take care of Na Liu Hao at the hospital. Yuan Gun Gun remembered how Na Liu Hao opened his beautiful violet eyes the moment he was born. Na Liu Hao was an otherworldly beautiful baby. But Na Liu Hao didn't look like Yuan Gun Gun or Na Liu Ting Du.

Yuan Gun Gun asked Na Liu Ting Du often why Na Liu Hao didn't look like them. Na Liu Ting Du would always answer because Na Liu Hao inherited genes from an older generation.

Na Liu Hao's violet eyes were beautiful when he was happy. If he was angry, his eyes would turn a different color. Yuan Gun Gun took him to see a paediatrician, but the paediatrician told her that he had healthy eyes.

Na Liu Hao was a stubborn baby. He only wanted Yuan Gun Gun or Na Liu Ting Du to hold him. If he was unhappy about something, he would levitate objects into the air. If he didn't get his way, he would make objects fly into walls or make the window glass shatter.

Na Liu Ting Du opened the bedroom door. Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the bed, ran to him and hugged him. He pecked her lips.

'I'm home,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Hao Hao hates the fairy tales I read to him,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He wants me to read the books you read to him. But those books are hard for me to read.'

Na Liu Ting Du smiled. He walked to the bed, picked up Na Liu Hao and kissed Na Liu Hao's chubby cheek.

'My darling son, daddy will give you a bath then daddy will read you the books you want to hear,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Hao smiled at Na Liu Ting Du, and made Yuan Gun Gun jealous of the father and son's harmonious relationship.

'I want to help bathe Hao Hao too,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Alright,' Na Liu Ting Du. 'Even though you make the bathroom messier every time you help bathe Hao Hao.'

Na Liu Hao nodded his head, because he agreed with Na Liu Ting Du.

‘You father and son pair are picking on me again,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

In the bathroom, the family of three laughed together while giving Na Liu Hao a bath.

At midnight, Na Liu Ting Du came out of the bathroom. Yuan Gun Gun was waiting for him on the bed.

‘Big brother Du, I made your side of the bed warm for you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du laid on his side of the bed, it was warm. He rolled onto Yuan Gun Gun and kissed her lips. She pushed his chest.

‘Big brother Du, no,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Ling Ling, let me love you,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘I promise I won’t hurt you.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t regain her memory. Na Liu Ting Du loved her, and she convinced herself she loved him. But she didn’t want to sleep with him. She felt guilty for always rejecting her husband. She knew her husband restrained himself since she was pregnant with Na Liu Hao. But her heart always hurt at the thought of sleeping with Na Liu Ting Du.

End of Chapter 169

Related

Chapter 170



Yuan Gun Gun felt Na Liu Ting Du's hands touched her fuller breasts after giving birth to Na Liu Hao. She clenched her hands and cried. She turned her head to the side so Na Liu Ting Du wouldn't see her tears.

Na Liu Ting Du left kiss marks on Yuan Gun Gun's neck.

'Ling Ling,' Na Liu Ting Du called.

Yuan Gun Gun felt Na Liu Ting Du pull down her underwear for the first time, and more tears flowed down her cheeks.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips, and tasted her salty tears. He turned on the light, and she covered her face.

'I'm sorry big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm scared.'

Na Liu Ting Du pulled Yuan Gun Gun's hands away from her face, and wiped her tears.

'I know a husband and wife sleeping together is normal,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'But I lost my memory. I'm scared.'

'You don't have to explain,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I understand. You can relax.'

Na Liu Ting Du adjusted Yuan Gun Gun's clothes and hugged her.

A faint memory flashed past Yuan Gun Gun's mind. She was sad she couldn't hold onto that faint memory long enough to remember something about her past.

'It's my fault,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'I shouldn't have pressured you when you don't want to. I'll wait until you're ready. I'm sorry for scaring you. Don't cry.'

'I'm just scared,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ling Ling, I don't want you to force yourself to do anything you don't want to

when you're with me,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Do you understand I love you, and I'm willing to wait for you?'

Yuan Gun Gun avoided looking at Na Liu Ting Du's eyes. She felt guilty she couldn't make herself want to sleep with him.

'Ling Ling, I love you,' Na Liu Ling Yan said.

'I love big brother Du too,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du laughed at himself. He knew the way he and Yuan Gun Gun loved each other was different. She always loved him like a big brother. She lost her memory, but her subconscious didn't forget Hao Yan Che and told her to protect her innocence.

At the Hao Mansion, Hao Yan Che stared at the bathroom ceiling. Etched on the ceiling corner was the word DOVE. Yuan Gun Gun wrote DOVE under his shirt collars, on towels, on the corners of ceilings, he lost count of how many items she wrote DOVE on. For a year he thought about what Yuan Gun Gun wanted to tell him. Did Yuan Gun Gun wanted to tell him that she wanted to fly free like a dove? Or did she graffiti when she was upset with him every time he didn't let her eat dessert like dove chocolate?

Hao Yan Che got out of the bathtub, dried himself and dressed. What was he doing thinking about Yuan Gun Gun? Yuan Gun Gun left him for a year. Why couldn't he forget Yuan Gun Gun?

Hao Yan Che laid in bed. He closed his eyes, and told himself to forget Yuan Gun Gun.

At the Long Mansion, Long Liu Bao was packing her belongings into a suitcase.

'Long Liu Bao, I said you're not allowed to go,' Long Liu Bo said.

'I don't care,' Long Liu Bao said. 'It took me a long time to find one clue about where Gun Gun disappeared to. I'm going.'

'How many times have I told you to stay out of Che and Gun Gun's business?' Long Liu Bo asked.

Related

Chapter 171



‘I don’t care about that monster,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I only want to see if Yuan Gun Gun is living a good life. I want to ask her what happened. If that monster did something to betray her, I’ll make him pay.’

Long Liu Lang played peacekeeper before Long Liu Bo and Long Liu Bao teared each other apart.

‘Bao Bao, you have one month,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘Not one day more than one month.’

Long Liu Bao accepted Long Liu Lang’s offer.

‘You don’t need to bring anything,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘You can buy everything you need there.’

Long Liu Bao kissed Long Liu Lang’s cheek.

‘Let’s go,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘Are you two coming with me too?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Is it a problem?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘No problem,’ Long Liu Bao said sweetly.

Long Liu Bao linked arms with Long Liu Bo and Long Liu Lang. She was happy to fly to Paris to see Yuan Gun Gun.

Paris, midday, at Na Liu Ting Du’s home, Na Liu Ting Du held Yuan Gun Gun on his lap.

‘Is Hao Hao napping?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun always felt shy after breast feeding Na Liu Hao.

‘I hired someone to teach you pottery,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. He popped a chocolate in Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth. ‘Because I remembered you said you wanted to learn.’

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Is my teacher a man or a woman? But you said you didn’t want me to go to school.’

‘Your teacher is a woman,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘She’s the same age as you. I’m happy for you learn at home. I don’t want you to go to school outside, because I don’t want anything to happen to you.’

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to experience the outside world. But she was happy to stay at home to take of Na Liu Hao, watch TV and browse online.

‘I need to go back to work,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Take your teacher to the room on the third floor I converted into a pottery room. If you injure yourself then I won’t let you learn pottery anymore.’

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s cheek.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du put Yuan Gun Gun on the sofa. He stood and adjusted his work suit.

‘Your teacher’s name is Long Liu Bao,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘She speaks Mandarin too.’

‘Long Liu Bao,’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled.

Yuan Gun Gun’s head hurt. She felt like she should know Long Liu Bao.

‘I prepared two meals in the fridge for you and your teacher to eat together,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘This is a good opportunity for you to make a friend.’

‘Thank you big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Bye Ling Ling,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead, and he returned to work.

‘Long Liu Bao... why does her name sound so familiar?’ Yuan Gun Gun mumbled to herself.

Yuan Gun Gun turned off the TV after she heard the doorbell.

Long Liu Bao smiled when she saw Yuan Gun Gun opened the door. Then Long Liu Bao was speechless. Why did Yuan Gun Gun's round body turned into a stick body? Long Liu Bao recognised Yuan Gun Gun's pure eyes. Did someone bully Yuan Gun Gun to turn into a stick body?

'Big sister, you must be Long Liu Bao,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'My name is Na Liu Ling Yan. It's a pleasure to meet big sister Long. Big sister Long, you can call me Ling Ling.'

'Our first meeting?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'Am I wrong?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Long Liu Bao looked shocked.

'No,' Long Liu Bao denied. 'Ling Ling looks like a model I've seen on TV.'

Yuan Gun Gun took Long Liu Bao to the kitchen.

'Big sister Long, what do you want to drink?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Anything,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Ling Ling, you can call me Bao Bao.'

End of Chapter 171

Related

Chapter 172



Long Liu Bao showed Yuan Gun Gun how to make a vase.

‘Bao Bao, you’re amazing,’ Yuan Gun Gun praised.

‘Ling Ling, if you practice, your vases will look beautiful too,’ Long Liu Bao encouraged.

Yuan Gun Gun became fast friends with Long Liu Bao.

Mrs Zhang knocked on the door.

‘Big sister Zhang, is Hao Hao awake?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes mistress,’ Mrs Zhang said. ‘Young master is awake.’

‘Thank you big sister Zhang,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big sister Zhang, go take a break. I’ll take care of Hao Hao.’

Long Liu Bao couldn’t believe what her ears heard.

‘Bao Bao, I’m sorry I have to cut our lesson short today,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My son is awake. He’s a mischievous baby.’

‘Ling Ling, you have a son?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

Long Liu Bao followed Yuan Gun Gun to the bathroom, and they washed their hands.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My son is more than two months old now.’

‘Can I meet your son?’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’s OK if you don’t want me to,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘It’s not that,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘My son is different to other babies.’

‘Ling Ling, I don’t mind,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I love all babies.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll take you meet Hao Hao.’

Long Liu Bao walked into Na Liu Hao’s bedroom, and she froze. Na Liu Hao was the monster Hao’s son.

‘Hao Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Yuan Gun Gun carried Hao Hao in her arms. She patted his back, and the flying objects fell onto the ground.

‘Hao Hao, don’t be angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy loves Hao Hao.’

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Na Liu Hao’s cheek. He turned his head away from her.

‘Ling Ling, I need to go home,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll come back tomorrow to continue the lesson.’

‘Bao Bao, thank you for today,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘See you tomorrow.’

‘See you tomorrow,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Take care of your loveable son.’

Long Liu Bao walked to the car. She didn’t know what to do. Should she tell Hao Yan Che that Yuan Gun Gun lost her memory, and gave birth to his son? Hao Yan Che would go crazy if he found out another man deceived Yuan Gun Gun into believing Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Hao were another man’s wife and son.

Later at the Long brothers’ home in Paris.

‘Baby?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘Big brother Bo, calm down,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘It’s not your baby.’

‘What did you say?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

Long Liu Bo knocked Long Liu Bao’s head. She slid off Long Liu Bo’s lap, and sat on Long Liu Lang’s lap.

‘We need to tell Che,’ Long Liu Lang said.

‘No,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘If anyone tells him, I’ll run away from home again.’

‘Do you want to see what happens if you run away again?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘I don’t care,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘It was Hao Yan Che who said he didn’t want Gun Gun anymore. It’s his fault for being heartless. He didn’t even look for Gun

Gun, and he doesn't let anyone mention Gun Gun in front of him. If he turned his back on Gun Gun then he doesn't deserve to know. Even if he knew Gun Gun gave birth to his son, he wouldn't care. Gun Gun made the right decision to leave him. Gun Gun is living a happy life without him.'

'Bao Bao, stop lying to yourself,' Long Liu Lang said. 'You know Che loves Gun Gun deeply. Can you honestly say that Gun Gun is truly happy right now even if she lost her memory? Bao Bao, you know if Gun Gun regained her memory, she would want to see Che.'

Long Liu Bao frowned.

'Bao Bao, you need to reunite Gun Gun and Che,' Long Liu Bo said.

'Wasn't it you who said I should stay out of Gun Gun and Che's business?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'Bao Bao this is a serious matter,' Long Liu Bo said. 'Do you know how powerful Che's son is? Che's son needs to be with him before Che's son turns five. Like how Che needed to be by his mum's side before he turned five.'

End of Chapter 172

Related

Chapter 173



‘Bao Bao, you can only see Che is heartless,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘You can’t see how much he is suffering. If Lang and I lost you, we would go crazy.’

‘Hao Yan Che is the one who abandoned Gun Gun,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bo looked sternly at Long Liu Bao.

‘Alright,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’ll bring Gun Gun back to Hao Yan Che. Satisfied?’

Long Liu Bo nodded his head.

‘But not now,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Bao Bao, what do you want to do?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

‘I want Hao Yan Che to suffer a little longer,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘It’s his fault for declaring Gun Gun has no relation to him.’

‘No,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘Don’t cause trouble.’

Long Liu Bao used tears to sway the Long brothers.

‘I wished my birth parents didn’t abandon me when I was a little girl,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘If they didn’t abandon me then I wouldn’t have met you two. And you two wouldn’t take me to the Long Mansion and raise me. If you two didn’t meet me, you two wouldn’t love me and bully me. If you two didn’t hit my bottom into a round ball then I wouldn’t run away. If I didn’t run away then I wouldn’t know how much I loved you two, and I wouldn’t be here bullied by you two...’

‘Be quiet,’ Long Liu Bo said. He covered Long Liu Bao’s mouth. ‘Don’t think if you cry, you can have your way.’

Long Liu Lang wiped Long Liu Bao’s tears.

‘Alright,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘We’ll listen to you on this occasion.’

‘Lang...’ Long Liu Bo said.

‘Do you have a better solution?’ Long Liu Lang asked.

Long Liu Bo didn’t want to see Long Liu Bao cry. Long Liu Bo stood and walked to the bathroom.

Long Liu Bao hugged Long Liu Lang.

‘Thank you big brother Lang,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘Bao Bao, how can you watch Che suffer?’ Long Liu Lang asked. ‘You grew up with Che. Look how good Che was to you when you were a little girl.’

‘I won’t make Hao Yan Che suffer for much longer,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Several days past, Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun’s bond was strong as before Yuan Gun Gun lost her memory.

‘Ling Ling, why do you write DOVE on all the pottery pieces you make?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Does it have a special meaning to you?’

Long Liu Bao was proud of the vase and teapot Yuan Gun Gun made that day.

‘I don’t know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Du took me to see a doctor. The doctor said it must be something important from my past.’

‘Do you know what that something important could be?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Big brother Du thinks it’s DOVE chocolate,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He said I love eating DOVE chocolates.’

Long Liu Bao thought chocolates were something important to Yun Gun Gun.

‘Ling Ling, do you like black?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Do you like red?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Do you like Che?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Huh?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Long Liu Bao asked strange questions that day.

‘Forget it,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Continue carving your pot.’

Long Liu Bao was exhausted trying to trigger Yuan Gun Gun’s memories.

‘Bao Bao, is there something you want to tell me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Ling Ling, haven’t you noticed that Hao Hao and Na Liu Ting Du look nothing alike?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Big brother Du said he has an ancestor that has white hair and violet eyes.’

End of Chapter 173

Related

Chapter 174



Long Liu Bao wanted to hit her head against the wall. Sometimes talking to Yuan Gun Gun was like talking to a hot dog.

‘Bao Bao, what’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, do you love Na Liu Ting Du?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘I... I think I love big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I must have loved him. He’s my husband, and Hao Hao’s daddy. If I didn’t love him in the past then I wouldn’t have a baby with him.’

In that moment Long Liu Bao didn’t know if she should tell Yuan Gun Gun the truth.

‘Bao Bao, can you imagine how you would feel if you lost your memory like me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I’m lucky to wake up and see big brother Du. He’s gentle and caring. Apart from asking me to stay at home, he gives me freedom. He loves me, and he loves Hao Hao. I think he is the most caring husband in the world. I should love him. But losing my memory makes me anxious. I always feel like I lost something important to me like how I carve DOVE on the pots I make. Not knowing what that something important to me is makes me anxious. Bao Bao, every day I feel anxious.’

Long Liu Bao hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Ling Ling, I believe one day you’ll remember,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Yuan Gun Gun cried on Long Liu Bao’s shoulder. Yuan Gun Gun didn’t show how scared she was in front of Ba Liu Ting Du.

Long Liu Bao cried too. She was sad to see Yuan Gun Gun hurting because Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t remember Hao Yan Che.

In the evening, Yuan Gun Gun massaged Na Liu Ting Du’s shoulders. Suddenly

he pulled her onto his lap.

‘Ling Ling, it’s over a year now,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘Do you want to meet your parents?’

Yuan Gun Gun was scared to meet her parents.

‘Ling Ling, are you still not prepared to meet your parents?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

‘I don’t remember my parents,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want them to be sad because I can’t remember them.’

‘Your parents will be sad you can’t remember them,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘But they love you unconditionally.’

‘I don’t know,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘If you avoid them for the rest of your life, it’ll make your parents really sad,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘I don’t want them to be sad,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then come with me to see your parents this weekend,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘The truth is the person who doesn’t want you to visit your parents’ home the most is me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because I’m scared after you meet your parents then you won’t need me anymore,’ Na Liu Ting Du lied.

‘I’ll always need big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Really?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Na Liu Ting Du closed his eyes. The real reason he didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to visit the Yuan Mansion was that she would remember Hao Yan Che. He knew he had to take a gamble. If Yuan Gun Gun didn’t regain her memory after visiting the Yuan Mansion then he wouldn’t need to worry anymore, and he could be with Yuan Gun Gun for the rest of her life. He didn’t mind if Hao Yan Che was important in Yuan Gun Gun’s subconscious as long as she didn’t remember Hao

Yan Che.

The following afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun told Long Liu Bao about her weekend plans.

‘Do you remember your parents?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But big brother Du said my parents miss me.’

Long Liu Bao didn’t know if it was the right time to tell Hao Yan Che the truth.

‘Bao Bao, I won’t be gone long,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re my only friend. You can stay here, and wait for me to come back.’

‘Ling Ling, the truth is I’m in Paris on a holiday,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘My home is near your parents’ home.’

‘What?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Ling Ling, you don’t need to worry that you’ll be separated from me,’ Long Liu Bao said.

‘What a coincidence,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘We’re born to be friends.’

End of Chapter 174

Related

Chapter 175



A year flew by.

‘Ling Ling, is Hao Hao sleeping?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Bao Bao, where do you want to take me? If big brother Du comes home and doesn’t see me, he’ll be angry.’

‘Don’t you want to out?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘I want to go out,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then let’s go,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘We’ll come home early.’

Long Liu Bao thought making Hao Yan Che suffer another year was enough revenge on behalf of Yuan Gun Gun. Long Liu Bao decided to take Yuan Gun Gun to see Hao Yan Che that day.

‘Big brother Du will be angry if he finds out,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘If you don’t want to go out today then we don’t need to be friends anymore,’ Long Liu Bao said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Long Liu Bao and held her hand. Long Liu Bao took Yuan Gun Gun to Hao Yan’s company.

At Hao Yan’s company, Hao Yan Che didn’t know what the Long brothers were doing drinking wine in his office.

‘Che, why are you looking suspiciously at us?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘We promise when Bao Bao is here, we’ll leave.’

‘Why do you two need to meet her here?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No reason,’ Long Liu Bo said. ‘We only want to show off our deep love.’

Hao Yan Che ignored the Long brothers, and continued to work.

Long Liu Lang looked at Hao Yan Che's clueless face. Then Long Liu Lang looked at the clock on the wall, Long Liu Bao would arrive with a surprise for Hao Yan Che soon.

Downstairs in the lobby, Yuan Gun Gun was confused why Long Liu Bao took her to a work building.

'Bao Bao, where are we?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Why did you take me here? Didn't you say you're taking me out today?'

'We're meeting big brother Bo and big brother Lang upstairs then we'll all go out together,' Long Liu Bao said.

'Bao Bao, this place...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun felt like the building was familiar.

'What about this place?' Long Liu Bao prompted.

'It's a tall building,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'How many floors does this building have?'

'One hundred floors,' Long Liu Bao said and sighed.

'Bao Bao, where are we going later?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Do you want to go to a pet cafe?' Long Liu Bao asked.

'Yes!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Then we should go upstairs,' Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun took an elevator to Hao Yan Che's office.

A while later, one of Hao Yan Che's secretaries announced Long Liu Bao and Yuan Gun Gun's arrival.

'CEO Hao, Miss Long and her friend are here to see you,' the secretary said.

'Let them in,' Hao Yan Che said.

Long Liu Bao ran to the sofa, and she hugged the Long brothers. The Long brothers almost spilt wine on their clothes.

'Bao Bao, you're not a little girl anymore,' Long Liu Bo said.

Long Liu Bao kissed the Long brothers cheeks. Then she went outside to bring

Yuan Gun Gun into Hao Yan Che's office.

'Hello big brother Bo, big brother Lang,' Yuan Gun Gun greeted.

Hao Yan Che let go of his pen. He thought he heard Yuan Gun Gun's voice.

'Big brother Che, this is my friend Na Liu Ling Yan,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Isn't she loveable?'

Hao Yan Che looked at the face he dreamt of every night. Why did Yuan Gun Gun look too skinny? Did Yuan Gun Gun come back to be with him?

'Ling Ling, do you remember who this man is?' Long Liu Bao asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't know what game Yuan Gun Gun and Long Liu Bao were playing.

'I remember this man,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn't understand why Yuan Gun Gun needed to confirm she knew him.

'He's CEO Hao,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I've seen him on TV. I remembered he has violet eyes like Hao Hao.'

'You're right,' Long Liu Bao said. 'What else do you remember?'

'I remembered I told big brother Du that CEO Hao looked like Hao Hao and big brother Du got angry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ling Ling, you remembered enough,' Long Liu Bao said. 'Let's go to the pet cafe. Big brother Che, you can work in peace now. We're leaving.'

'Stop!' Hao Yan Che said.

'Big brother Che, what's the matter?' Long Liu Bao asked.

End of Chapter 175

Related

Chapter 176



Hao Yan Che stood in front of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Long Liu Bao.

‘Bao Bao, he insulted me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The Long brothers thought seeing Hao Yan Che’s stunned face was priceless.

‘Ling Ling, just ignore him,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Let’s go.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t let Yuan Gun Gun leave. He looked at Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes. She looked like she didn’t recognise him. Why did she say her name was Na Liu Ling Yan? If big brother Du was Na Liu Ting Du then who was Hao Hao?

For two years Hao Yan Che failed to forget Yuan Gun Gun. He wanted to hug Yuan Gun Gun, hit her bottom for leaving him and love her more.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared of Hao Yan Che. She didn’t know why he was staring at her.

‘Big brother Che, is there something you want?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Tell me what is going on,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Nothing,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘I’m just taking my friend out.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and pulled her away from Long Liu Bao.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, tell me who I am,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re the fat round ball,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

The Long brothers and Long Liu Bao resisted laughing.

Yuan Gun Gun's answer made Hao Yan Che speechless.

'Let go of my hand,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know why she thought Hao Yan Che would bully her, but she didn't hate him.

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun and like in the past, she closed her mouth.

After a tensed silence, Yuan Gun Gun spoke softly.

'If you don't let go of my hand, I'll tell big brother Du to hit you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che's violet eyes changed color.

'Your eyes change color like Hao Hao too,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Na Liu Hao's eyes were the only eyes in the world that changed color.

Hao Yan Che deduced from Yuan Gun Gun's odd behavior that she lost her memory. Her eyes didn't lie. She had forgotten him, and even forgot who she was. Thinking about her forgetting their life together made him crazy. How could she forget him?

'What do you want?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. She turned to look at Long Liu Bao. 'Bao Bao, I want to go home. I don't want to go out anymore.'

Long Liu Bao wanted to live. If she saved Yuan Gun Gun, she wouldn't live.

'Big brother Che, can you let go of Ling Ling's hand?' Long Liu Bao asked softly. 'You're scaring her.'

'She's staying with me,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You can all go home.'

'Ling Ling is someone else's wife,' Long Liu Bao said softly.

'Say it again,' Hao Yan Che said. 'What do you mean someone else's wife?'

Long Liu Bao stepped closer to the Long brothers.

'Even if she's not someone else's wife, she's precious to them,' Long Liu Bao said. 'What am I supposed to say to her boyfriend?'

‘Did you find a new man this quick?’ Hao Yan Che asked Yuan Gun Gun.

‘I don’t know what you’re talking about,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t know you. I want to go home.’

‘Home?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Where is your home?’

‘Big brother Che, let go of Ling Ling’s hand,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘You’re going to make her cry. She needs to go home. Her son is waiting for her at home.’

Hao Yan Che heard son. He felt like lightning struck his heart. Did Yuan Gun Gun had a son with another man?

Long Liu Bao knew if she didn’t clear Hao Yan Che’s misunderstanding then no one would leave his office alive.

‘Yes,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘Ling Ling’s loveable son is older than one year. He has white hair and violet eyes.’

Hao Yan Che jumped from hell to heaven. White hair and violet eyes meant he was the father of Yuan Gun Gun’s son. He was happy and angry at the same time. Why did Yuan Gun Gun leave him if she was pregnant with his son? Why did Yuan Gun Gun take their son to live with another man?

‘Bao Bao, I want to go home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looking coldly at Yuan Gun Gun made her cry.

‘Ling Ling, don’t cry,’ Long Liu Bao said. ‘He is...’

‘Bao Bao, let’s go home,’ Long Liu Lang interrupted.

End of Chapter 176

Related

Chapter 177



Long Liu Bao worried about Yuan Gun Gun on the way home.

‘What if Hao Yan Che kills Gun Gun?’ Long Liu Bao asked.

‘Isn’t it too late to feel guilty now?’ Long Liu Bo asked.

‘What guilt?’ Long Liu Bao asked. ‘Hao Yan Che needs to suffer so he doesn’t take Gun Gun’s love for granted.’

‘Bao Bao, call Na Liu Ting Du,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘After today, we can’t interfere in their business anymore.’

Long Liu Bao called Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Hello,’ Na Liu Ting Du greeted.

‘Big brother Du, you need to go to Hao Yan’s company,’ Long Liu Lang said. ‘Hao Yan Che kidnapped Ling Ling.’

Na Liu Ting Du immediately hung up. Long Liu Bao didn’t doubt he rushed to Hao Yan’s company to save Yuan Gun Gun.

Long Liu Bao pitied Na Liu Ting Du. Na Liu Ting Du loved Yuan Gun Gun who didn’t love him. Long Liu Bao thought there was nothing wrong with Yuan Gun Gun living with Na Liu Ting Du except she knew Yuan Gun Gun’s heart was always with Hao Yan Che even if Yuan Gun Gun forgot everyone.

At Hao Yan’s company, Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun to the bedroom and dropped her on the bed.

‘Tell me, did you run away to be with Na Liu Ting Du?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed and held Yuan Gun Gun’s shoulders.

‘You dare take my son away to live with him?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You dare leave me when you were pregnant with my son? Tell me, what were you

thinking?’

‘Don’t,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che wanted to calm himself down. But Yuan Gun Gun looking at him like they were strangers made it hard for him to calm down.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, tell me you’re lying,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Tell me that you remember me, and remember us.’

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. She couldn’t stop crying.

‘How can you forget me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You’re not allowed to forget me!’

‘Big brother Du...’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘You’re not allowed to call him!’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her ears, and avoided looking at Hao Yan Che’s eyes.

Hao Yan Che felt Yuan Gun Gun shaking. He hugged her and stroked her back.

‘Little rice ball, I’m sorry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s all my fault.’

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed Hao Yan Che’s body. She pressed her body closer to him. Why did his body smell so familiar?

Hao Yan Che thought it was too long since the last time he hugged Yuan Gun Gun, and smell her body scent. In his dreams, if he held her hand, she would disappear. It was painful to wake up, and spend every second and minute of the day without her. His heart and soul left him the day she left him. Why did he do something foolish like letting her go? He should have patiently waited for her to love him. Why did he waste two years? It was one sad joke on him. She came back to him, but she forgot him.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes. She listened to Hao Yan Che’s heartbeats, felt relaxed like she was sleeping and forgot that he raised his voice at her.

Na Liu Ting Du slammed the door opened. He caught Hao Yan Che in bed with Yuan Gun Gun. They were holding onto each other tightly, and looked like a beautiful painting of a pair of lovers’ reunion.

‘Ling Ling,’ Na Liu Ting Du called.

Yuan Gun Gun heard Na Liu Ting Du's voice, and she realised she was hugging Hao Yan Che. She pushed Hao Yan Che away from her, and looked at Na Liu Ting Du.

'Big brother Du,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du felt like he lost Yuan Gun Gun again.

Hao Yan Che's calmness disappeared after Yuan Gun Gun pushed him away because of Na Liu Ting Du.

'Big brother Du, I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say. She willingly hugged Hao Yan Che.

'Come here,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Let's go home.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know why she wanted to hug someone like Hao Yan Che who suddenly looked coldly at her again. She wanted to go home.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun tightly again.

'Your home is here,' Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 177

Related

Chapter 178



Na Liu Ting Du walked to the bed, and held Yuan Gun Gun's arm.

'Mr Hao, let go of my wife's hand,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'You're scaring her.'

'Your wife?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Mr Na, don't you feel guilty calling another man's wife, your wife?'

'Why should I feel guilty?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'I live with my wife, sleep with my wife and have a son with my wife. When you didn't want her anymore, I protected and loved her. You're the one who abandoned her. Now you want her back, how shameless can you be?'

Hao Yan Che looked resentfully at Na Liu Ting Du for lying to Yuan Gun Gun and stealing Yuan Gun Gun and their son from him.

'Mr Hao, let go of my wife's hand,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Our son is waiting for his mum at home.'

'Your son?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'He's my son. He has my violet eyes and white hair. He also has my powers. Did my son with my wife inherit his genes from you or my wife?'

Na Liu Ting Du knew it was over, Hao Yan Che knew the truth.

'Mr Na, do you not feel guilty deceiving a woman who lost her memory?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'A woman who is another man's wife? Now you're standing in front of her husband and still denying the truth, how shameless can you be?'

'I protected and loved my wife and son who you didn't want,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'It was you who let her go. Where were you these two years? You didn't care about her. You didn't look for her. Where were you while she lost her memory? I was with her when she lost her memory, and I held her hand when she had a difficult labour. I was the first dad our son saw, and the man who our

son calls dad. What right do you have to ask me if I feel guilty?’

‘You...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Stop!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You’re all liars!’

Yuan Gun Gun pulled her arm out of Na Liu Ting Du’s hold, and she pushed Hao Yan Che away from her.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the bathroom. She locked the door, and cried in the bathroom. Na Liu Ting Du lied to her. She wasn’t his wife, and Na Liu Hao wasn’t his son. If everything was a lie then who was she? She couldn’t remember anything. How could she believe all the lies? Everyone lied to her.

Na Liu Ting Du and Hao Yan Che glared at each other, and they knocked on the bathroom door.

‘Ling Ling, come out and I’ll explain everything,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, come out and I’ll tell you the truth,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re all liars!’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Stay away from me!’

‘Ling Ling,’ Na Liu Ting Du called.

‘Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

‘I only want my parents,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Stay away from me!’

Yuan Gun Gun hit her head against the door. Lies! Why couldn’t she remember her past?

‘I’ll call dad and mum to come here right now,’ Na Liu Ting Du pleaded. ‘Don’t hurt yourself.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s wrenching cry answered Na Liu Ting Du’s plea.

Hao Yan Che was scared Yuan Gun Gun would do something crazy if she didn’t open the door.

Twenty minutes later, Yuan Ting Liu arrived at Hao Yan Che’s office. Yuan Ting Liu was displeased to see his son and son-in-law.

‘Where is Gun Gun?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

A year ago, Na Liu Ting Du brought Yuan Gun Gun to the Yuan Mansion. Yuan

Ting Liu wanted to kill Na Liu Ting Du for not telling him about Yuan Gun Gun's lost memory, and about his grandson. If Na Liu Ting Du wasn't his son, he would have killed him for deceiving Yuan Gun Gun and deceiving him.

Yuan Ting Liu knew Na Liu Ting Du loved Yuan Gun Gun, but he didn't approve of Na Liu Ting Du's deceit. It hurt him to see his daughter anxious, and scared of him and Feng Du Du. He missed his daughter. The situation escalated, he didn't want his daughter to live a lie.

'Dad, did you know long ago that Gun Gun lost her memory and gave birth to my son?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu's priority was Yuan Gun Gun. He would explain everything to Hao Yan Che later.

'Dad, why didn't you tell me?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Gun Gun is my wife. I'm the father of her son.'

'You're wrong,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Two years ago you said to me you want to return my daughter. In other words, you and my daughter are strangers.'

Hao Yan Che's father-in-law's words stung.

'Dad, Gun Gun locked herself in the bathroom,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Dad, convince Gun Gun to come home with me. Hao Hao is waiting at home for her.'

'Bring Hao Hao to the Yuan Mansion,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Starting from today, Gun Gun and Hao Hao will live at the Yuan Mansion.'

'Dad...' Na Liu Ting Du said.

'Ting Du, do you remember what you did two years ago?' Yuan Ting Liu asked. 'I called you, and you didn't tell me Gun Gun lost her memory. You fed lies to Gun Gun while she lost her memory. One year ago, you brought Gun Gun back to me. I didn't curse you because I knew you loved Gun Gun. But it doesn't mean I approve of your deceit, and it doesn't mean I forgive you. Ting Du, do you understand?'

Na Liu Ting Du understood he disappointed Yuan Ting Liu.

'Both of you have hurt Gun Gun,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'I know both of you love

Gun Gun. But I'm using my status as Gun Gun's father to ask both of you not pressure Gun Gun. Give her space to calm down. Give her space to decide who she wants to be with. I'll support her decision. If she decides she doesn't want to be with any of you then both of you need to respect her decision. Mr Hao, let me take my daughter home.'

End of Chapter 178

Related

Chapter 179



Hao Yan Che sat on the sofa to give Yuan Ting Liu and Yuan Gun Gun privacy.

‘Ting Du, if you love Gun Gun, do the right thing,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Don’t make me use force.’

Na Liu Ting Du saw the disappointment in Yuan Ting Liu’s eyes. It was time he woke up, and let go of Yuan Gun Gun. He loved Yuan Gun Gun, but Yuan Gun Gun didn’t love him. He should cherish the last two years with Yuan Gun Gun like a precious dream. He couldn’t keep lying to himself, Yuan Gun Gun didn’t belong with him.

Na Liu Ting Du knew he lost. He sat on a chair.

Yuan Ting Liu knocked on the bathroom door.

‘It’s daddy,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Open the door for daddy.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what to believe anymore.

‘Ling Ling, are you there?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked. ‘Talk to daddy.’

Yuan Gun Gun opened the door, and the three men were relieved.

‘Daddy?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘Daddy is here to take you home.’

Yuan Gun Gun hesitated to accept Yuan Ting Liu’s hand.

‘Are you really my daddy?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘We can have a DNA test, and it wouldn’t change the truth. I’m your daddy.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know if she should believe Yuan Ting Liu.

‘Look at your eyes,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘You have your mummy’s eyes. You

have my mouth, your mummy's eyebrows, my eyelashes, your mummy's nose and my ears. Don't doubt that you were born out of Feng Du Du and my love.'

Yuan Ting Liu squeezed Yuan Gun Gun's nose.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Yuan Ting Liu.

'Daddy,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'Don't cry,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Let's go home.'

'Um,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Ting Liu wrapped an arm around Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder, and led her outside.

Hao Yan Che didn't want Yuan Gun Gun to leave.

'Gun Gun,' Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun was scared of the men who lied to her.

Yuan Ting Liu ignored his son and son-in-law. He only wanted to take his daughter home safely.

Hao Yan Che slammed his hand on his marble desk and it broke in half. He wasn't going to let go of Yuan Gun Gun again. He wanted her to remember him, and remember their life together.

Later at the Yuan Mansion, Yuan Gun Gun laid on a giant pink bed. She wanted to remember the past, and remember herself.

Yuan Ting Liu and Feng Du Du knocked on Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom door.

'Daddy, mummy,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Feng Du Du sat on the bed, hugged Yuan Gun Gun and stroked Yuan Gun Gun's hair.

Yuan Ting Liu sat on the chair in front of the bed.

'You're awake,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Do you want daddy and mummy to tell you the truth about your past?'

'Yes,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Your name isn't Na Liu Ling Yan,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Your big brother Du

changed your name on his own. You're not married to Na Liu Ting Du. Your name is Yuan Gun Gun. You're Feng Du Du and my daughter. You're Hao Yan Che's wife. To be exact, you're Hao Yan Che's runaway wife.'

'Runaway wife?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'At eighteen you married Hao Yan Che. At twenty-two you ran away to Paris to find your big brother Du. The day you arrived in Paris, you were hit by a car and lost your memory.'

'Daddy, why did I runaway?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Why did I look for big brother Du? What is my relationship with big brother Du? Daddy, if I'm married to Hao Yan Che, why did I go to look for big brother Du?'

'Gun Gun, calm down,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'It's not what you think.'

Yuan Gun Gun was scared she was a bad wife who ran off to be with her lover.

'Gun Gun, you grew up with your big brother Du,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'Since you were a little girl, you always saw your big brother Du as your big brother. But your big brother Du always loved you. After you chose to marry Hao Yan Che, your big brother Du chose to live in Paris. Daddy doesn't know why you ran away. But daddy can promise you, you weren't unfaithful to Hao Yan Che.'

'Daddy, you knew big brother Du gave me a false identity,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Daddy, why didn't you tell me big brother Du lied to me? Daddy, why are you a liar too?'

'Gun Gun, think about it,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'If in the past you didn't runaway then you wouldn't be in this situation today. Do you think you're the only one who was deceived, the only one who is hurting? Gun Gun, after you married Hao Yan Che, you knew your big brother Du loved you and left for Paris because of you. Why did you choose to go look for your big brother Du in Paris, and gave him hope? The car accident was unexpected. Think about it, if you were in your big brother Du's shoes, and the woman you love lost her memory, wouldn't you be tempted to use it as an opportunity to be with the woman you love? Gun Gun, you're in this situation today is because of the choices you made in the past. Daddy didn't tell you the truth, because daddy wanted to protect you. Daddy didn't want to cause you more pain.'

Feng Du Du patted Yuan Gun Gun’s trembling back.

‘Ting Liu...’ Feng Du Du said.

‘Gun Gun, daddy only wants you to be happy,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘It’s up to you to decide what will make you happy, and how you want to live your life. Whoever you choose to be with or not to be with, daddy and mummy will support your decision. If you don’t want to be with Na Liu Ting Du or Hao Yan Che, it’s OK. Daddy only hopes that you can learn from this situation, make the right choice for you and take responsibility for the choices you make.’

End of Chapter 179

Related

Chapter 180



At night, Na Liu Ting Du brought Na Liu Hao to the Yuan Mansion.

Na Liu Ting Du held Na Liu Hao in his arms, and knocked on Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom door.

'Ling Ling, it's me,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Open the door.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to open the door. She didn't want to see Na Liu Ting Du.

'Ling Ling, even if you don't want to see me, don't you want to see Hao Hao?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Na Liu Ting Du didn't care Na Liu Hao had violet eyes and white hair. He loved Na Liu Hao like his son, because half of Na Liu Hao was a part of Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun opened the door, and she looked at Na Liu Ting Du like he was a stranger.

Na Liu Ting Du's heart hurt to see Yuan Gun Gun's indifference toward him. He put Na Liu Hao on the pink bed.

'Ling Ling, can't you forgive me?' Na Liu Ting Du asked.

'I'm not Ling Ling,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I'm Yuan Gun Gun.'

'If Gun Gun loved me, I wouldn't have lied to you that you're Na Liu Ling Yan,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Yuan Gun Gun's heart received another punch by Na Liu Ting Du.

'Even if I lied that you're Na Liu Ling Yan, you still didn't love me,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Whether you're Yuan Gun Gun or Na Liu Ling Yan, in the last two years I couldn't live in your heart. Even if you were separated from Hao Yan Che, and you couldn't remember Hao Yan Che, your heart didn't allow room for me. You'll

always see as your big brother, someone you turn to if you're hurting. But you gave your body and soul to Hao Yan Che. Gun Gun, if you love me a bit of how much you love Hao Yan Che, I wouldn't have lied to you. I wouldn't worry every day that you'll remember. I lied to myself every day that one day you'll love me. I couldn't escape how much I love you. Gun Gun, can you forgive me?'

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't remember the past. But looking at Na Liu Ting Du suffering made her think she had seen him suffer in the past. She cried because he was hurting too.

Na Liu Ting Du hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'Why can't you live without Hao Yan Che?' Na Liu Ting Du asked. 'I met you first. I protected and lived with you from when you were five to eighteen. Why didn't you choose me?'

Na Liu Hao elevated the objects in the room. He was unhappy Na Liu Ting Du and Yuan Gun Gun neglected him.

Na Liu Ting Du let go of Yuan Gun Gun. He walked to the bed, and coaxed Na Liu Hao.

Yuan Gun Gun walked the bed, and held Na Liu Hao in her arms.

Na Liu Hao's small hands wiped the tears off Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'Ugly mummy,' Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose, and she kissed Na Liu Hao's chubby cheek.

'It's late,' Na Liu Tin Du said. 'You and Hao Hao should sleep.'

'Big brother Du, what about you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'I'll sleep in the guest room,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Na Liu Ting Du turned around and walked slowly to the door.

'Big brother Du, I don't blame you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Ting Du turned around and looked at the mother and son.

'Thank you,' Na Ling Ting Du said.

'Daddy, kiss,' Na Liu Hao said.

Na Ling Ting Du felt a knife stabbed his heart. He walked to Na Liu Hao and kissed Na Liu Hao's cheek.

'Goodnight Hao Hao,' Na Ling Ting Du said. 'Hao Hao needs to listen to mummy.'

'Goodnight,' Na Liu Hao said.

Na Liu Hao let the flying objects fall onto the ground. He was happy Na Liu Ting Du and Yuan Gun Gun said goodnight to him.

Na Liu Ting Du rubbed Na Liu Hao's cheeks. He turned around and walked outside.

Yuan Gun Gun considered continuing to live with Na Liu Ting Du because he loved her and Na Liu Hao. Since she couldn't remember the past, perhaps she could start a new life with Na Liu Ting Du and Na Liu Hao. But she remembered Hao Yan Che's violet eyes looked at her like she betrayed him, and made her heart break.

At the Hao Mansion at midnight, Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's nightshirt. He looked at the DOVE she wrote on her nightshirt collar. He wanted to take Yuan Gun Gun home, and ask her if she remembered what DOVE meant.

Mrs Chen knocked on the door.

'Young master, Na Liu Ting Du is here to see you,' Mrs Chen said.

'Let him in,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes young master,' Mrs Chen said.

End of Chapter 180

Related

Chapter 181



Na Liu Ting Du sat in the living room, and waited for Hao Yan Che.

‘You have guts to come see me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why wouldn’t I dare to come here and see you?’ Na Liu Ting Du asked.

Hao Yan Che choked Na Liu Ting Du’s neck.

‘Na Liu Ting Du, I can kill you faster than swallowing saliva,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Go ahead and kill me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t hesitate to choke Na Liu Ting Du’s neck until Na Liu Ting Du’s face turned blue. A second before Na Liu Ting Du would have died, Hao Yan Che remembered a day from years ago Yuan Gun Gun begged him not to hurt her big brother Du and he let go of Na Liu Ting Du’s neck.

Na Liu Ting Du coughed a few times, and took deep breaths. But his calmness hid his thoughts.

‘Disappear,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t let me see your face again.’

Hao Yan Che turned around, and walked to the stairs.

‘Two years ago, Gun Gun called me,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘She was crying on the phone like she was in a lot of pain, and told me she landed in Paris. Before I could get to the airport, she was hit by a car. By the time I arrived at the airport, she was lying on the ground bleeding. I stayed with her in the ambulance, and at the hospital.’

Hao Yan Che stood at the foot of the stairs.

‘The doctor said Gun Gun and Hao Hao were healthy,’ Na Liu Ting Du said. ‘That was when I found out Gun Gun was three weeks pregnant with your son. After she woke up, she forgot me, you, her parents and herself. I thought it was

a gift from the heavens. I accepted the gift. I gave her a false identity, Na Liu Ling Yan.'

Hao Yan Che turned around and glared at Na Liu Ting Du.

'You asked me if I feel guilty,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'At the start I felt guilty deceiving Gun Gun. Then dad called me and tested me if I heard news of Gun Gun's disappearance. Dad told me that you didn't want to look for Gun Gun. Dad told me to take good care of Gun Gun, and bring her to visit them when I'm free. I didn't tell dad about the car accident, Gun Gun's lost memory and Gun Gun being pregnant with your son. On that day I felt like the heavens were on my side. You didn't want Gun Gun anymore. You gave me an opportunity to be with Gun Gun, and I stopped feeling guilty.'

Hao Yan Che's face darkened.

'After the car accident, Gun Gun slowly became skinner,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Every day she looked out the window like she was waiting for you to come find her. I knew she was depressed. But she acted like nothing was wrong. She ate everything I gave her because she was pregnant with your son. But she didn't have an appetite, and her body frame slowly shrunk. She had a difficult labour.'

Hao Yan Che fisted his hands.

'After she gave birth to Hao Hao, she acted a little brighter,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'But every day not remembering her past made her anxious. One year ago, I took her and Hao Hao to the Yuan Mansion. Because I knew I couldn't hide her from you and her parents for the rest of her life.'

Na Liu Ting Du smiled bitterly. He took out a photo from his pocket, and put it on the coffee table.

'Two years ago, Gun Gun only carried one bag with her,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Inside her bag was her purse. She didn't put any money in her purse, there was only this photo inside her purse. I don't know what happened between you and her. But I hope you won't make her cry anymore. I lived with her from when she was five to eighteen. It's her habit to come to me when she's hurting. I lied to myself if she forgot you, and if you don't want her anymore then one day she'll love me. The last two years was only a beautiful dream.'

Hao Yan Che walked to the coffee table. He picked up the photo. It was a photo of him sleeping on his and Yuan Gun Gun's bed. When did Yuan Gun Gun secretly take a photo of him? Why did she carry a photo of him in her purse, and not carry money? What happened to make her runaway? Did she leave to escape him?

'In the last two years, I lied to Gun Gun that I was her husband and Hao Hao's dad,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'Gun Gun and I shared the same bed, but nothing happened between us.'

Hao Yan Che looked suspiciously at Na Liu Ting Du.

'I've told you everything that happened in the last two years,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'If you don't believe me, go find your wife and ask her to tell you what happened in the last two years. A lot happened each day in two years. You can slowly ask your wife to give you detailed recounts of her daily life in the last two years. If you don't want to waste another day being apart from her, learn to be patient and stay with her. I hate you and I envy you because she loves you.'

Hao Yan Che watched Na Liu Ting Du walk alone to the front door.

'Thank you,' Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Ting Du stood rigid at the front door.

'You don't need to thank me,' Na Liu Ting Du said. 'If Gun Gun loved me a little, I wouldn't have let her go. Hao Yan Che, you're lucky MF.'

Suddenly Na Liu Ting Du appeared in front of Hao Yan Che and punched Hao Yan Che's face.

'I'm evening the score because you dared choke me,' Na Liu Ting Du said.

Hao Yan Che stumbled a few steps back, and wiped blood off his face. He pitied Na Liu Ting Du instead of being angry.

Na Liu Ting Du walked away, and Hao Yan Che smiled at the photo in his hand.

End of Chapter 181

Related

Chapter 182



Yuan Gun Gun woke up from a dream. She wiped her forehead. She didn't know why she dreamt of Hao Yan Che who was a stranger to her.

Yuan Gun Gun turned to look at Na Liu Hao sleeping soundly. She kissed his forehead. He inherited his violet eyes and white hair from Hao Yan Che. He also inherited Hao Yan Che's mood swings and impatience.

At breakfast, the Yuan family ate together in the dining room.

'Gun Gun, mummy made your favorite rice balls,' Feng Du Du said. 'Look how skinny you are. You should eat more.'

Feng Du Du put a lot of food into Yuan Gun Gun's bowl.

'Thank you mummy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun ate and gaged Yuan Ting Liu's mood.

Yuan Ting Liu poured a glass of chocolate milk, and put the glass in front of Yuan Gun Gun.

'Daddy isn't angry at you,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'You don't have to keep glancing at me.'

Yuan Gun Gun was embarrassed she got caught. Yuan Ting Liu smiled and she buried her head in her bowl and ate.

'Is big brother Du still sleeping?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'He's gone and left you a letter,' Yuan Ting Liu said.

Yuan Ting Liu put a rice ball into Yuan Gun Gun's bowl.

'The letter is on your bedside table,' Yuan Ting Liu said. 'You can read it after breakfast.'

Yuan Gun Gun lost her appetite. She forced herself to swallow the food in her bowl. Then she walked to her bedroom and read the letter.

My dearest Gun Gun,

Your past is with Hao Yan Che and your future is in your hands.

If you want to remember your past, go to Hao Yan Che because your most precious memories are with him. I know remembering your past is important to you. Take good care of yourself.

You can't always let Hao Hao have his way if you don't want him to grow up rotten.

I'll visit you and Hao Hao when I'm free.

Bye from your big brother Du.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the bed next to the sleeping Na Liu Hao. Her tears smudged the words on the letter.

At midday, Hao Yan Che visited the Yuan Mansion.

'Mr Hao, didn't you hear what I said yesterday?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

'Dad, I heard everything you said yesterday,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I'm not here to pressure Gun Gun to make a decision. I came here to see Gun Gun and see our son.'

Yuan Ting Liu and Hao Yan Che heard Yuan Gun Gun's sob and they ran to her bedroom.

In Yuan Gun Gun's bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was crying in a corner. Na Liu Hao shattered the window glass and broke most of the furnishings in the bedroom.

Hao Yan Che leapt to Yuan Gun Gun. He protected her, waved his hand and the flying objects fell onto the floor.

Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Hao looked curiously at Hao Yan Che who had powers like Na Liu Hao.

Yuan Gun Gun was the first to react. She pushed Hao Yan Che off her, and looked at Yuan Ting Liu for answers.

'What happened?' Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Hao Hao is angry because he couldn’t find big brother Du,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che looked at his son who looked exactly like him. He regretted letting Yuan Gun Gun go. If he went to find her and take her back home, their son wouldn’t call another man dad and wouldn’t be angry because their son couldn’t see Na Liu Ting Du.

‘Mummy hug,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Na Liu Hao was scared to see a man who looked exactly like him and had his powers too.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the pink bed and hugged Na Liu Hao.

Na Liu Hao pointed a chubby finger at Hao Yan Che like a little king.

‘Mummy walk to him,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun carried Na Liu Hao to Hao Yan Che, and she avoided looking at Hao Yan Che’s eyes.

Na Liu Hao pointed at Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘Uncle, you look like me,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun felt embarrassed Na Liu Hao called his father uncle.

‘Son you should say you look like your dad,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Rubbish,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Na Liu Hao was unhappy his subject dared to talk back to him. Na Liu Hao levitated the objects in the bedroom again.

Hao Yan Che waved his hand and the flying objects fell down on the floor again.

‘Little boy, don’t make a mess,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao made objects smash into the walls.

‘Hao Hao, stop breaking things,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Hao ignored Yuan Gun Gun, and continue to smash objects into the walls.

Hao Yan Che lost his patience. He levitated Na Liu Hao and Na Liu Hao suspended in the air upside down.

End of Chapter 182

Related

Chapter 183



Yuan Gun Gun jumped up and down to reach Na Liu Hao.

Na Liu Hao cried because it was the first time someone dared to punish him.

Hao Yan Che saw how worried Yuan Gun Gun looked. He waved his hand and Na Liu Hao sat on the pink bed.

Yuan Gun Gun ran to the bed. She hugged Na Liu Hao, patted his back and he pouted his lips.

Yuan Ting Liu let the family of three have privacy. He silently walked outside the bedroom.

‘Gun Gun, we need to talk privately,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked wearily at Hao Yan Che.

‘I won’t hurt you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Na Liu Hao and hesitated.

‘Let’s go,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘What about Hao Hao?’

‘Our son needs to calm down,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’re not allowed to coddle him!’

Yuan Gun Gun bit her lips.

Hao Yan Che took a deep breath.

‘I mean when our son does something wrong, we need to give him a befitting punishment according to what he did wrong,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was persuaded by Hao Yan Che’s awkward smile, and nodded her head.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. He held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand. ‘Let’s go.’

Na Liu Hao thumped his chubby hands on the pink bed. He was still angry. Hao Yan Che had made all the objects in the bedroom disappear so there was nothing for Na Liu Hao to vent his anger on.

Outside the bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun’s hands tensed.

‘Am I that scary?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then why do you look like you’re scared of me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m scared of strangers,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Strangers?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘We lived together for four years, and we have a son together. How can you say we’re strangers?’

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to accept Yuan Gun Gun forgot him and their life together.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che calmed himself down. He reminded himself Yuan Gun Gun lost her memory because she was hit by a car.

‘Gun Gun, come home with me,’ Hao Yan Che pleaded.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know what to do.

‘Gun Gun, do you want to remember the past?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘I can help you remember.’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I want to remember why you didn’t need me two years ago,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Who said I didn’t need you?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘It’s you who didn’t need me and left me!’

Yuan Gun Gun moved to a corner of the sofa. Hao Yan Che moved to her and held her on his lap.

‘I’m sorry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why she didn’t want to escape Hao Yan Che.

‘Gun Gun, I don’t why you left me two years ago,’ Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun’s ear. ‘I didn’t know you lost your memory and you don’t remember why you left me. You’re not allowed to say I don’t need you. I never stopped needing you.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s ears turned red.

‘Gun Gun, come home with me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Everyone misses you, and all your small friends misses you too.’

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s face away from her ear.

‘It tickles,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Come home with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun hesitated going to Hao Yan Che’s home.

‘Gun Gun, our rotten little demon son needs me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s dangerous if he isn’t by my side before he turns five.’

‘Our son isn’t called little demon,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Our son’s name is Hao Hao. Are you a demon? How come you and Hao Hao have powers? Why does Hao Hao need to be by your side before he turns five?’

‘If you come home with me then I’ll explain everything,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If you explain everything then I’ll come to your home,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

End of Chapter 183

Related

Chapter 184



‘Come home with me first,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Tell me first,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Home first,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Tell me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Why won’t you listen to me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun pouted her lips, and Hao Yan Che stroked her hair.

‘Come home with me,’ Hao Yan Che pleaded.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Go pack your suitcase, and I’ll take you home.’

Hao Yan Che’s beautiful face made Yuan Gun Gun blushed.

‘Do you want me to help you pack?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun jumped off Hao Yan Che’s lap.

‘I can pack on my own,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun to leave his embrace. But his priority was taking Yuan Gun Gun home. They had forever to be together.

Hao Yan Che smiled at Yuan Gun Gun, and she ran to her bedroom. She was still his Yuan Gun Gun, her eyes couldn’t hide her feelings.

One hour later, Yuan Gun Gun carried the angry Na Liu Hao to the living room.

‘Gun Gun, is this your decision?’ Yuan Ting Liu asked.

‘Dad, I didn’t force Gun Gun to come home with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Ting Liu waited for Yuan Gun Gun’s answer.

‘Daddy, I want to remember my past,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Gun Gun, if this is what you want then you have daddy’s blessing,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘Dad, I’m taking Gun Gun home,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘When I’m free, I’ll bring her here to visit you and mum.’

Yuan Ting Liu didn’t fight with Hao Yan Che to keep Yuan Gun Gun with him and Feng Du Du, because Hao Yan Che never signed the divorce papers. Most importantly Yuan Gun Gun chose to go home with Hao Yan Che.

‘Bye dad,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy isn’t home. I want to say bye to mummy.’

‘Gun Gun, I’ll tell your mummy your decision,’ Yuan Ting Liu said. ‘You’ll see your mummy another day.’

‘Yes daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Bye daddy.’

‘Bye,’ Yuan Ting Liu said.

Hao Yan Che quickly led Yuan Gun Gun and their son to the car before she changed her mind.

Yuan Ting Liu watched Hao Yan Che bolted outside and he smiled. No matter how dominant Hao Yan Che was, Yuan Gun Gun controlled Hao Yan Che’s heart.

In the car, Yuan Gun Gun took out a chocolate.

‘Hao Hao, mummy has a chocolate for you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Hao looked outside the window. He didn’t accept Yuan Gun Gun’s chocolate.

Yuan Gun Gun unwrapped the chocolate. She noticed Hao Yan Che was staring at the chocolate so she held it in front of his mouth.

‘Do you want to eat chocolate?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s hand and swallowed half the chocolate. He hated sweets but he loved her.

‘The chocolate will melt if you keep holding it,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled shyly. She put half the chocolate in Na Liu Hao’s mouth.

Na Liu Hao contemplated spitting the chocolate at Yuan Gun Gun’s face.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Na Liu Hao.

‘Hao Hao, mummy will read you a story at night,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No mummy,’ Na Liu Hao said.

‘Hao Hao is mummy’s loveable son,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Na Liu Hao’s chubby cheek.

Na Liu Hao ignored his dummy mummy.

Hao Yan Che loved seeing Yuan Gun Gun smile. But he didn’t want Yuan Gun Gun smile because of another person even if that person was their rotten little demon son. He vowed his and Yuan Gun Gun’s second child was going to be a girl.

End of Chapter 184

Related

Chapter 185



At the Hao Mansion, Mrs Chen was overwhelmed to see Yuan Gun Gun return home with a little boy who looked exactly like Hao Yan Che.

‘Gun Gun, why are you so skinny?’ Mrs Chen asked.

Yuan Gun Gun hid behind Hao Yan Che. She didn’t recognise Mrs Chen.

‘Gun Gun, what’s wrong?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘Don’t you recognise aunty Chen?’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand.

‘Aunty Che, Gun Gun lost her memory,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Lost her memory?’ Mrs Chen asked.

‘Aunty Chen, prepare meals and bring it to the master bedroom,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t want Mrs Chen to cry in front of Yuan Gun Gun and scare Yuan Gun Gun.

Mrs Chen understood, and walked to the kitchen.

Yuan Gun Gun was disappointed she couldn’t remember Mrs Chen.

‘Gun Gun, don’t worry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’ll slowly remember everything.’

‘Um,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I’ll take you to your room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun and their son to the master bedroom.

In the master bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun stared at the wedding portrait on a wall. The bride in the portrait had her face, but a rice ball body unlike her stick body. The rice ball bride was smiling and hugging the groom’s neck. The groom kissed the rice ball bride’s forehead. The warm wedding portrait moved her

heart.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun's waist from behind.

'This is evidence you married me,' Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun's ear.

Yuan Gun Gun escaped Hao Yan Che's embrace.

'I didn't know I was that round before I gave birth to Hao Hao,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che was unhappy Yuan Gun Gun was scared of being close to him.

'Mummy, put me down,' Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun put Na Liu Hao down on the giant bed.

Na Liu Hao looked at the wedding portrait for a while. Then he and Hao Yan Che had a glaring match.

'Is there a bedroom for Hao Hao?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Hao Hao likes having his own bedroom.'

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Do you want to take Hao Hao to his bedroom?'

'Later...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Mummy, I want to go now,' Na Liu Hao said.

'Hao Hao, do you want sleep?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Hao didn't take his eyes off Hao Yan Che.

'Alright,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Let's go.'

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to carry Na Liu Hao. But Na Liu Hao jumped off the bed, and followed Hao Yan Che outside. She signed and followed the father and son.

A while later, Hao Yan Che opened a bedroom that was nearby the master bedroom.

'Son, this is your bedroom,' Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao walked into his bedroom, and locked the door.

Outside Na Liu Hao's bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun smiled apologetically to Hao Yan

Che.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Hao Hao is upset because he wants to see big brother Du.’

‘Gun Gun, do you need to be this courteous with me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t remember my past. I don’t you. Right now you’re a stranger to me. I came here to remember my past. I want to know what happened two years ago. That way I can make a decision that is fair for me, you and big brother Du.’

Hao Yan Che clenched his hands.

‘You don’t need to remind me that we’re strangers,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che turned around, walked away from Yuan Gun Gun and she walked back to her bedroom.

On the way downstairs, Mrs Chen stopped Hao Yan Che.

‘Young master, where are you going?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘I’m bringing the meals to the master bedroom.’

‘Aunty Chen, you don’t need to bring the meals to the master bedroom anymore,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘We’re only strangers to Gun Gun.’

‘Young master, Gun Gun didn’t want to lose her memory,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘If you stay this angry then you’ll scare Gun Gun away.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t answer Mrs Chen.

‘Young master, right now we’re strangers to Gun Gun,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Knowing Gun Gun, she’ll adjust to her new environment quickly. Young master needs to be patient. She’ll slowly warm up to young master.’

‘Do you think so?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 185

Related

Chapter 186



‘Young master, have you forgotten six years ago you were a stranger to Gun Gun too?’ Mrs Chen asked. ‘It didn’t take long for Gun Gun to become close to everyone, and the Hao Mansion became her home.’

‘It’s not the same situation,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘She doesn’t listen to me anymore.’

‘Young master, if you want Gun Gun to feel close to you again then you need to give her time and be gentle toward her,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Young master, you can’t stay angry like this unless you want her to be scared of you and see you as a stranger forever.’

Hao Yan Che creased his brows.

‘Young master, don’t bully Gun Gun,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘She’s anxious right now because she lost her memory.’

‘Aunt Chen, do you think I mistreated Gun Gun in the past?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Mrs Chen didn’t answer, and Hao Yan Che stormed off. Mrs Chen shook her head. The little boy Hao Yan Che needed to learn how to be patient.

At night, Yuan Gun Gun took a bath, laid in bed and stared at the wedding portrait. Did Hao Yan Che love her in the past? Did she love him? If they loved each other and had a happy marriage, why did she leave? She didn’t know if he loved her but looking at her younger self, she felt like she must have loved him deeply.

‘What are you thinking about?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was startled to see the groom from the wedding portrait appear in front of her.

‘Am I that scary?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun sat up on the bed.

‘How did you come in here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Of course I’ll be scared if you suddenly appear out of nowhere.’

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Let’s talk,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun sat like a diligent student listening to her teacher’s lecture.

‘I’m half werewolf and half vampire,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I would have lived up to seven hundred years. But my father is the vampire king. His blood flows through my veins so I’ll live forever. I won’t age or die. You were born an ordinary person. But you’re my soulmate, my wife and my queen. My blood is in your body, you’ll live forever too. You won’t age or die either. Our rotten little demon son has my blood running through his veins. When he turns five, he’ll change into a werewolf for the first time. He needs me to stay by his side to watch over him while he transition into his werewolf form. Changing into a werewolf for the first time is painful, and the only time he could lose his life. My powers will save him if anything happens.’

‘Didn’t you say we can’t age or die?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘If our son lives past five years then he won’t age or die,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What do we do now?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Will anything happen to Hao Hao?’

‘As long as our son stays by my side before he turns five, nothing will happen to him,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was jealous Yuan Gun Gun was worried about someone else.

‘Lucky Hao Hao and I met you before Hao Hao turned five,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Since I told you a secret, shouldn’t you tell me something too?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘What do you want to know?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Will you answer honestly if I ask you?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did you and Na Liu Ting Du sleep on the same bed?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned red.

‘Yes or no?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Were you intimate with him?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Did he kiss your lips?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yes or no?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun avoided Hao Yan Che’s eyes.

Hao Yan Che scoffed, and laid on the bed with his back facing Yuan Gun Gun.

A while later Yuan Gun Gun poked Hao Yan Che’s shoulder.

‘Don’t sleep here,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You should go to your room and sleep.’

Hao Yan Che turned around, and looked coldly at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘This is my room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che pulled the bedsheet over his body.

‘But you said this is my room,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled the bedsheet off Hao Yan Che’s body and covered her body.

‘We’re husband and wife,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Of course we share the same room. Pass me the bedsheet.’

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I like this room. You should go sleep in a different room.’

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun from behind, and tickled her.

‘I’m sleeping here,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I like this room too.’

‘Hehe... don’t... I’m ticklish,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che covered Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

‘If you cry out this loudly, you’ll wake up our rotten little demon son,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 186

Related

Chapter 187



Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che's beautiful face. She didn't register she was lying underneath him.

'Little Chub,' Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che's finger brushed Yuan Gun Gun's lips. His lips slowly moved toward her lips. She closed her eyes, and felt like the beautiful face in front of her would disappear if their lips touch.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun's lips. She opened her eyes, and pushed his shoulders.

'Just one kiss,' Hao Yan Che pleaded. 'One kiss is enough.'

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know why her heart hurt hearing Hao Yan Che's desperate plea. It was like he waited forever to kiss her lips.

Hao Yan Che's gentle kiss became rougher. His tongue wouldn't let Yuan Gun Gun's tongue rest. She liked him kissing her unlike when Na Liu Ting Du kissed her.

A long time later, Yuan Gun Gun's head spun and Hao Yan Che let go of her lips.

'Your kissing skills are still poor,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You need more practice.'

Yuan Gun Gun was too lost in Hao Yan Che's kiss to register his words.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun's face. When did he fall in love with her? Was it when she held a plunger in front of his bed? Or when she fell onto him and touched his chest? Perhaps it was when she risked her life to stop him from taking painkillers. Could it be when she sweetly bickered with him? Maybe it was when she cried and asked him why he must bully her. He didn't know when he fell in love with her. He only knew the moment he realised he loved her, it was

too late to late to escape.

‘It’s late,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You should go to a different room and sleep.’

‘Where do you want me to sleep?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘This is my room.’

‘Alright,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll go sleep in Hao Hao’s bedroom. Tomorrow you can choose another room for me.’

‘Remember this is our room,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t let Yuan Gun Gun leave the bed.

‘That was in the past,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Get off me.’

‘Do you want to see what happens if you move again?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun laid frozen underneath Hao Yan Che.

‘You can’t remember what we did together on this bed,’ Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun’s ear. ‘But I remember everything. If you don’t want me to help you remember right now then listen to me.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand why Hao Yan Che was gentle one moment, and turned into someone unreasonable the next moment.

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun’s neck.

‘Do you want me to help you remember right now?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun cried and made Hao Yan Che want to tease her.

‘On this bed we loved each other,’ Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun’s ear. ‘There wasn’t a part of our bodies that didn’t touch. Our rotten little demon son is proof of our love.’

Hao Yan Che wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s tears.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, even if you lost your memory, you can’t deny the truth,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You’ll always be my wife.’

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face and cried. Hao Yan Che pulled her hands away from her face.

‘I love seeing you cry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If you keep crying, I’ll show you how we conceived our rotten little demon son.’

‘You’re a perverted monster,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’s good you know the truth,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t provoke a monster like me, because I won’t show you mercy.’

End of Chapter 187

Related

Chapter 188



Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose. Hao Yan Che kissed her forehead, hugged her and pulled the bedsheet over their bodies.

‘Goodnight,’ Hao Yan Che said and turned off the light.

Yuan Gun Gun closed her eyes. She found a comfortable spot on Hao Yan Che’s chest and slept.

Hao Yan Che kissed the top of Yuan Gun Gun’s head. After two years, he finally got to have a goodnight sleep.

In the morning Hao Yan Che reached for Yuan Gun Gun. He sat upright, because she wasn’t lying next to him.

In Na Liu Hao’s bedroom, Yuan Gun Gun was feeding Na Liu Hao breakfast.

‘Mummy, I can eat breakfast on my own,’ Na Liu Hao said.

‘Hao Hao, why did you grow up so fast?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘You can talk and walk.’

Na Liu Hao grabbed the bowl and spoon from Yuan Gun Gun’s hands and fed himself.

‘Hao Hao if you’re unhappy then mummy is unhappy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I know you miss big brother Du. Mummy doesn’t know where big brother Du went or if he’s coming back. We need to learn to live without big brother Du.’

Na Liu Hao ignored Yuan Gun Gun and continued eating.

‘Hao Hao, mummy thought big brother Du was your daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Now mummy knows big brother Du lied to mummy. Mummy is hurting. But we need to learn to accept the truth. Hao Hao, you look exactly like your daddy. We can’t deny the truth. You’re his flesh and blood...’

The bedroom door slammed open. Hao Yan Che strode to Yuan Gun Gun, and he pulled her up.

‘If you’re going to leave the bed, why didn’t you say something?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che was scared Yuan Gun Gun left him again.

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t know why Hao Yan Che was angry.

Na Liu Hao’s bowl of food fell on top of Hao Yan Che’s head.

‘Ah... Hao Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was too scared to look at Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘Uncle is not allowed to bully mummy!’ Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know if he should praise his son’s bravery or strangle his son.

Yuan Gun Gun brushed the food off Hao Yan Che’s head.

‘I’m really sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Hao Hao is young and doesn’t understand the situation. You should go take a bath.’

Hao Yan Che walked to his son, and they silently glared at each other.

Na Liu Hao’s violet eyes glared at Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes like he was calling Hao Yan Che a hateful man.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want Hao Yan Che and Na Liu Hao to fight. She walked to Hao Yan Che and pulled his shirt sleeve.

‘Hao Hao is your son,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t be angry at him.’

Hao Yan Che’s mood brightened after he heard Yuan Gun Gun acknowledged he was the father of her son.

Hao Yan Che picked up his son, and wiped the food stains on his head onto his son’s clothes. Then he put his son down, and happily walked to the bathroom.

Na Liu Hao glared at Hao Yan Che’s back, and fisted his small hands.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t believe what happened.

Na Liu Hao held a fist up.

‘I hate that old man!’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun laughed at Na Liu Hao’s antics. She picked up Na Liu Hao and kissed his chubby cheek.

‘Hao Hao, don’t be angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy will give you a bath. Then mummy will cook you delicious food.’

Later Hao Yan Che returned to his son’s bedroom.

‘Little demon, daddy is taking mummy to eat breakfast,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Do you want to come too?’

Na Liu Hao ignored Hao Yan Che, and let Yuan Gun Gun dry his white hair with a towel.

‘Can we eat here?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun turned on the hair dryer and blow dried Na Liu Hao’s hair.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said. He frowned at the gentle way Yuan Gun Gun took care of their son. ‘We need to eat in the dining room.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll finish drying Hao Hao’s hair. I’ll see you in the dining room.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t want to leave without Yuan Gun Gun. He sat on the bed and waited for her.

Yuan Gun Gun let Hao Yan Che sit on the bed. When she was about to turn off the hair dryer, Hao Yan Che opened his mouth.

‘My hair needs drying too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 188

Related

Chapter 189



Yuan Gun Gun blow dried Hao Yan Che's hair. He looked in the mirror and smiled smugly at their son.

'Mummy, my hair is still wet,' Na Liu Hao said.

'When your mummy first dried daddy's hair, you won't born yet,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Stinky little boy.'

'Uncle is a stinky old man,' Na Liu Hao said.

'What did you say?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'You need to speak louder. You sound like a mosquito.'

'Uncle is a deaf old man,' Na Liu Hao said.

'Stinky little demon...' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun suddenly turned off the hair dryer and stood in between the duelling father and son.

'I'm hungry,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che scoffed and held Yuan Gun Gun's hand.

'Wait,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled her hand out of Han Yan Che's hand. She walked to the bed, picked up Na Liu Hao and put him down next to Hao Yan Che. She wrapped Hao Yan Che's big hand around Na Liu Hao's small hand, and held Na Liu Hao's other small hand.

'We can go now,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che held his son's chubby hand. He was scared if he held too tight, his son's hand would break.

Na Liu Hao couldn't deny how warm and protective the old man's hand was. He thought the old man was hateful, but he felt safe holding the old man's hand.

In the dining room, Yuan Gun Gun was used to feeding Na Liu Hao on her lap.

Hao Yan Che picked up his son from Yuan Gun Gun's lap and put his son on a chair.

'You can't coddle our son forever,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You should let him sit on his own chair.'

'It's OK,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I like feeding Hao Hao.'

'No,' Hao Yan Che said. He took the spoon out of Yuan Gun Gun's and gave it to their son. 'He can eat on his own, and you should eat more.'

Yuan Gun Gun saw Na Liu Hao eat on his own so she didn't say anything.

Hao Yan Che put a lot of food into Yuan Gun Gun's bowl. Then he put some food into their son's bowl.

Na Liu Hao looked at his small mountain bowl and at Yuan Gun Gun's big mountain bowl. Then he scoffed at Hao Yan Che.

'Son, what are you looking at?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'You should eat your food, and you'll grow stronger.'

Na Liu Hao quietly ate his small mountain bowl.

Yuan Gun Gun put a hand above her big mountain bowl.

'Enough,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I can't eat it all.'

'You need to put more food in your stomach,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che grabbed Yuan Gun Gun's bowl and put more food into her bowl.

'I don't need to eat that much,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun sighed and accepted her bowl from Hao Yan Che.

'Quickly eat everything,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know where to start eating.

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun was too skinny. He missed his little rice ball.

Yuan Gun Gun began eating the biggest mountain bowl she had seen.

Na Liu Hao finished eating his small mountain bowl. Then he picked up his glass of milk and watched Yuan Gun Gun battle the big mountain bowl.

‘Hao Hao, do you want me to take you back to your room to sleep?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Sit and finish eating,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I need to take Hao Hao back to his room to sleep,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Our son isn’t a pig,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘He doesn’t need to sleep after eating.’

‘Hao Hao, do you want to sleep?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked sweetly.

‘No,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che was unhappy Yuan Gun Gun only ate half her bowl.

‘Eat more,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I’m full,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che slammed the dining table, and startled Yuan Gun Gun. He smiled, and held the bowl in front of her mouth.

‘Open wide,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her mouth a bit, and Hao Yan Che fed her food.

Suddenly faint memories flew past Yuan Gun Gun’s mind. She wanted to hold onto the faint memories, but couldn’t remember anything.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was sad she couldn’t remember.

Hao Yan Che touched Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead.

‘Do you feel sick?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 189

Related

Chapter 190



‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Are you really full?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Drink the soup, and I won’t force you to finish your bowl of food.’

Yuan Gun Gun gulped down the soup, and wiped her mouth.

‘You’re too skinny,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You need to eat more every day so you don’t look like a malnourished chicken.’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Go change your clothes and we’ll go out,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao let the old man hold him, and he pulled the old man’s white hair that looked like his white hair.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at the father and son who looked exactly like each other. Although Hao Yan Che was a stranger to her, she couldn’t deny their blood ran through their son’s veins.

‘Don’t pull daddy’s hair,’ Hao Yan Che said and pinched Na Liu Hao’s round bottom.

Na Liu Hao bit Hao Yan Che’s face.

‘Hao Hao is kissing you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘He rarely kisses anyone.’

Hao Yan Che pushed his son’s face away, and he pointed at his son’s teeth mark on his face.

‘Look at my face,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Does it look like our son kissed me? Our

son bit me.'

Yuan Gun Gun laughed awkwardly. She wanted to hold the mischievous Na Liu Hao but Hao Yan Che wouldn't let her.

Hao Yan Che wiped his son's saliva off his face.

'Go change your clothes,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I'll change our little demon son's clothes.'

'No need,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You can go change your clothes. I'll change Hao Hao's clothes.'

'I'll change our son's clothes,' Hao Yan Che said.

Since Na Liu Hao didn't protest, Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head and went to change her clothes.

Hao Yan Che carried his son to his son's bedroom. He put his son on the bed, and chose a black outfit for his son.

Hao Yan Che struggled to unbutton his son's small shirt buttons.

'Don't move,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Dummy,' Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che waved his hand and his son's clothes were teared to pieces.

Na Liu Hao put his hands in front of his underwear, and his face turned angry violet.

'Daddy is sorry he forgot to take off your underwear,' Hao Yan Che teased.

'Go outside!' Na Liu Hao said.

'I'm not going,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che crossed his arms and smiled at his son's violet face.

Na Liu Hao ignored the old man.

Hao Yan Che opened a drawer and took out black underwear.

'Do you want daddy to help you change your clothes or do you want to do it yourself?' Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’ll do it myself,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che shrugged his shoulders, and politely turned around.

Na Liu Hao’s face changed back to his natural complexion. He changed his clothes quickly, sat on the bed and glared at the old man’s back.

Hao Yan Che turned around and played with his son’s chubby cheeks.

‘Little boy, remember daddy’s advice,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘When we’re outside, you can’t use your powers or turn your face violet when you’re angry. The world isn’t tolerant of different people like us. Understand?’

Na Liu Hao turned his face away from the old man, and the old man walked outside.

A while later, Hao Yan Che carried his son downstairs where Yuan Gun Gun was waiting for them.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at Hao Yan Che. Hao Yan Che held her hand and carried their son in his other arm. She thought she must have loved Hao Yan Che deeply in the past, because she liked being with him.

‘Little demon, where do you want to go?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Anywhere,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che turned to look at Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Do you want to go shopping?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Perhaps you want to go to the zoo or the amusement park.’

‘I want to go to the places we went together in the past,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘We’ve been to many places together,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Where do you want to go?’

‘Mmm... I want to go to the places we went together the most in the past,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘We were usually at home together or we were at work together the most,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Let’s go to your company.’

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘First we’ll go for a walk to help you digest food so you can eat more later.’

Hao Yan Che put his son on the floor, and held his son’s hand.

‘Son, you need to walk and digest your food too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao was happy to walk on his own two feet.

Mrs Chen silently cried happy tears to see Hao Yan Che walk with his wife and son. Mrs Chen hoped the little boy Hao Yan Che would learn to be a good husband and a good father, and that he would always be happy together with his family.

End of Chapter 190

Related

Chapter 191



At Hao Yan's company, Yuan Gun Gun thought the heavens must have played a joke on her. The first time she visited Hao Yan's company she was a guest. The second time she visited Hao Yan's company, she found out she was CEO Hao's wife.

Hao Yan Che's employees were flabbergasted their CEO Hao held a woman's hand and a little boy's hand who looked exactly like him. They remembered since CEO Hao's wife left him, he was never seen with another woman. But suddenly CEO Hao appeared in front of them with a beautiful young woman and his son. It was a miraculous sight.

Na Liu Hao was unhappy strangers were staring at him and his parents. Especially women who glared at his mummy.

Hao Yan Che looked coldly at his employees. His employees quickly looked away and they acted busy.

Hao Yan Che wrapped an arm around Yuan Gun Gun's shoulder. She hid her head on his chest, because she was scared of strangers.

'Did I really come to work with you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Why?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Because you were my secretary,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Secretary?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'That sounds shady.'

Hao Yan Che knocked Yuan Gun Gun's head.

'Dummy, what are you thinking about?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her head, and smiled shyly.

Hao Yan Che took his wife and son to the one hundredth floor. His secretaries bowed and greeted him.

‘CEO Hao,’ the secretaries greeted.

‘Um,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che opened his office door, and took his wife and son inside.

Hao Yan Che put his son on the sofa next to his wife. Then he opened the pig fridge.

‘Why are there less employees on this floor compared to the other floors?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘They are my secretaries,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘All of them?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said and looked inside the pig fridge.

‘But aren’t you supposed to only have one secretary?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che closed the fridge. He turned around and looked sadly at Yuan Gun Gun. He remembered Yuan Gun Gun asked him the same question when he first took her to his company. He remembered everything about their life together, but she forgot him and their life together.

‘What’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Did I say something wrong?’

‘Six years ago you asked me the same question,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You were eighteen at the time.’

‘You have a good memory,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You can remember something that happened six years ago.’

‘I... can’t forget,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun heard her heart racing. She couldn’t remember the past, but she didn’t fight her attraction to Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che sat next to Yuan Gun Gun on the sofa. He caressed her face.

‘Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Yuan Gun Gun felt like her heart would jump out of her mouth in the next

second.

Hao Yan Che's lips moved toward Yuan Gun Gun's lips. When his lips were a millimetre apart from her lips, their son waved his chubby hand in front of the faces.

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che away, and she coughed awkwardly.

Hao Yan Che regretted he couldn't kiss Yuan Gun Gun. He took out his phone and called Yi Tu.

'It's me,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Buy fresh milk and pudding.'

'Young master, is it you?' Yi Tu asked.

'What do you think?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, did you say you want me to buy fresh milk and pudding?' Yi Tu asked. He looked confusedly at Jia Tu. 'Where do you want me bring them to?'

'To my office at my company,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Young master, is it for you to eat?' Yi Tu asked.

'When did you start being long winded?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'But young master, we haven't found master and mistress yet,' Yi Tu said.

'You don't have to anymore,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If they want to appear, they'll appear.'

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said. 'Jia Tu and I will return right away.'

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Remember to buy fresh milk and pudding at Yuan Gun Gun's favorite shop.'

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone.

'Hello?' Yi Tu asked. 'Young master?'

Yi Tu looked confusedly at his phone.

'Yi Tu, what happened?' Jia Tu asked.

'I don't know,' Yi Tu said. 'Young master asked us to buy fresh milk and pudding from Gun Gun's favorite shop to bring to his company.'

Jia Tu was speechless.

On the other end, Yuan Gun Gun felt shy.

‘You should work,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’ll take Hao Hao around your company.’

‘I’ll come with you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun avoided Hao Yan Che’s hand.

‘It’s OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Hao Hao and I will come back soon.’

Yuan Gun Gun carried Na Liu Hao, and escaped Hao Yan Che’s office.

End of Chapter 191

Related

Chapter 192



Yuan Gun Gun carried Na Liu Hao to the elevators. Out of the one hundred floors, she didn't know why she chose to visit floor fifty-three. She felt like she visited that floor in the past.

News of CEO Hao bringing a beautiful young woman and his son to his company spread throughout the building within minutes.

Yuan Gun Gun held onto Na Liu Hao tightly. She hated hearing the strangers gossiping. She considered going back to Hao Yan Che's office, but she felt shy around him. So she carried Na Liu Hao and continued walking around floor fifty-three.

Suddenly a woman's scream was heard. Yuan Gun Gun turned around. The heavy files fell onto the woman's feet and blood oozed out of the woman's high heels.

Na Liu Hao's violet eyes looked coldly at the drag queen woman sitting on the floor. No one doubted he was his father's son.

'You demoness, you dare throw objects at me!' the woman said.

Yuan Gun Gun looked innocently at the woman. She didn't know what the woman was talking about.

'Slut!' the woman said.

The woman picked up a glass vase and threw it at Yuan Gun Gun's face. The glass vase froze when it was a few centimetres away from Yuan Gun Gun's face. Then it was flung back to the woman's face, and the woman's forehead bled.

'Ah!' Yuan Gun Gun cried out. She put Na Liu Hao on the floor, and ran to the woman. 'I'm sorry.'

Only Yuan Gun Gun knew Na Liu Hao had powers on that floor.

The woman pushed Yuan Gun Gun away. The woman raised an arm, Yuan Gun Gun covered her face, and the woman slapped Yuan Gun Gun's head.

Yuan Gun Gun cried out, and a knife flew toward the woman's heart.

'Hao Hao, no!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun leapt onto Na Liu Hao's body. The knife fell onto the woman's hand.

The woman screamed, and the employees around her panicked.

'Hao Hao, how can you do this?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Na Liu Hao scoffed. It was the woman's fault for wanting to harm his mummy.

Feng Ting pushed through the crowd. She helped Yuan Gun Gun stand up.

'Heavens!' Feng Ting said. 'Gun Gun, is it really you? Are you OK?'

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head.

Feng Ting hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'Gun Gun, it's really you,' Feng Ting said. 'I'm so happy you're back. Dummy, why did you leave?'

Yuan Gun Gun's body tensed. She didn't know what to say to the strange woman hugging her.

'Director Feng, there's a woman injured,' an employee said and pointed at the woman bleeding on the floor.

Feng Ting let go of Yuan Gun Gun and she looked coldly at the woman on the floor.

'Call the ambulance,' Feng Ting said.

'Get out of the way!' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'CEO Hao,' the employees greeted.

Hao Yan Che walked to Yuan Gun Gun. She saw him and wanted to cry. He hugged her and stroked her back.

The employees were scared of Hao Yan Che's gentleness.

‘What happened?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

The woman on the floor cried.

‘CEO Hao, look what Yuan Gun Gun did to me,’ the woman lied.

Hao Yan Che only cared if Yuan Gun Gun was safe.

‘What about all the things you did?’ Feng Ting asked coldly.

‘Big sister, what are you talking about?’ the woman asked.

‘You don’t know?’ Feng Ting asked. ‘Miss Yang, don’t you have a good memory?’

Feng Ting didn’t want to waste her breath talking to Yang Wen.

Yang Wen’s tears smudged her thick makeup.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che covered Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

‘Why would Yuan Gun Gun do this to you?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘How did Yuan Gun Gun injure you?’

‘I don’t know,’ Yang Wen said. ‘CEO Hao, believe me, Yuan Gun Gun did this to me.’

‘Did anyone see Yuan Gun Gun injure this woman?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 192

Related

Chapter 193



The employees shook their head. They didn't want to offend CEO Hao, and they also didn't see Yuan Gun Gun injure Yang Wen. But they witnessed flying objects hitting Yang Wen.

'They're all lying!' Yang Wen said. 'Yuan Gun Gun injured me!'

'I saw what happened,' an employee said. 'Miss Yang wanted to push Yuan Gun Gun. But the files on the desks fell onto Miss Yang's feet, and Miss Yang fell onto the floor. Miss Yang picked up a glass vase and threw it at Yuan Gun Gun. Then I don't know how the glass vase flew backward and hit Miss Yang's forehead. Yuan Gun Gun wanted to help Miss Yang stand up, but Miss Yang hit Yuan Gun Gun.'

'Gun Gun, did she hit you?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Where did she hit you?'

'It doesn't hurt anymore,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che looked like he wanted to kill someone.

Hao Yan Che smiled coldly at Yang Wen.

'You dare hit my wife?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'No,' Yang Wen said. 'CEO Hao, I...'

'Throw her outside,' Hao Yan Che ordered. 'Make a public announcement that anyone who hires her is my enemy.'

Yang Wen crawled to Hao Yan Che.

'CEO Hao, I'm begging you not fire me,' Yang Wen said.

The only woman in the world Hao Yan Che cared about was Yuan Gun Gun.

Yang Wen grabbed onto Hao Yan Che's pants. He kicked her into the air, and she fell onto the floor.

‘Don’t touch me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Don’t hurt her,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re not allowed to help her,’ Hao Yan Che said. He held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and carried their son in his other arm. ‘Come with me.’

Hao Yan Che took his wife and son to the elevators.

The security guards dragged Yang Wen outside like she was a rubbish bag.

The employees saw the trail of blood on the floor and winced.

‘What is everyone standing idle for?’ Feng Ting asked coldly. ‘Get back to work.’

The employees wisely returned to their desks, and acted like nothing happened.

Feng Ting walked to her office, and thought about what delicious food to buy to entice her dummy friend to come see her so they could catch up on old times.

In Hao Yan Che’s office, Yuan Gun Gun stood in front of Na Liu Hao.

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Hao Hao didn’t mean to harm anyone.’

‘Move away,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che couldn’t believe Yuan Gun Gun was scared of him that much.

Yuan Gun Gun refused to move away from Na Liu Hao.

Hao Yan Che easily picked up his son.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘We can slowly talk about this.’

‘Son, you did a good job,’ Hao Yan Che praised. ‘Next time if anyone bullies your mummy, you have daddy’s permission to kill them.’

Na Liu Hao was surprised by the old man’s words.

Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth opened wide. She couldn’t believe Hao Yan Che would teach their son to kill people.

Hao Yan Che gently poked Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead.

‘Why aren’t you as smart as our son?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘How can you say this?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked and rubbed her forehead.

‘What do you want me to say?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘How can you be a dummy, and let anyone bully you? Yuan Gun Gun when will you understand how important your status is? You can bully other people, but other people are not allowed to bully you.’

Hao Yan Che put his son down on the floor, and continued to poke his wife’s forehead.

‘Aren’t you bullying me right now?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Apart from me,’ Hao Yan Che said and pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s ear.

Na Liu Hao let the old man pinch his mummy’s ear.

‘Ow... it hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun’s ear, and he rubbed her ear.

‘I’m not injured,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Spare Yang Wen. If you fire her, no other company will dare hire her. If she doesn’t have a job, how is she going to make a living to support herself?’

‘If you know what’s good for you, don’t ask me to spare her,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Do you think she would be grateful toward you?’

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Stop,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I don’t want to fight with you over someone insignificant.’

End of Chapter 193

Related

Chapter 194



Hao Yan Che carried his son, held his wife's hand and took them to the bedroom. He put his son on the bed, and turned on the TV.

'Stay here for a bit,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I need to take care of something. Then I'll come back and take us home.'

Yuan Gun Gun ignored Hao Yan Che. He didn't make a fuss, and walked outside the bedroom.

'Hao Hao, when you grow up don't be unreasonable like your daddy,' Yuan Gun Gun said sternly.

Na Liu Hao was lazy to argue with his mummy. He levitated the remote control to his hand.

Yuan Gun Gun laid on the bed, and sighed helplessly. Her husband and son were two of a kind.

Outside the bedroom, Hao Yan Che called a security guard.

'Call director Feng to come to my office,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes CEO Hao,' the security guard said.

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone, sat on the sofa and thought deeply.

A while later, Feng Ting knocked on the door.

'Come in,' Hao Yan Che said.

'CEO Hao, you wanted to see me?' Feng Ting asked.

'Sit,' Hao Yan Che said.

Feng Ting sat opposite to Hao Yan Che.

'What you said before,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Do you mean that people dared to

bully Gun Gun in the past?’

‘CEO Hao, it’s better if you talk to Gun Gun about this,’ Feng Ting said.

‘Gun Gun lost her memory,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What?’ Feng Ting asked.

‘You heard me,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Gun Gun lost her memory. I want you to answer my question.’

‘Gun Gun made me promise not to tell you,’ Feng Ting said.

‘Two days ago, Gong Shao Jie returned to the city,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Do you want to go and give Gong Shao Jie a hand?’

Feng Ting clenched her hands.

‘Tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Feng Ting took a deep breath.

‘The truth is even if CEO Hao didn’t use Gong Shao Jie to threaten me, I would have told you eventually,’ Feng Ting. ‘It was frustrating for me to keep this promise to Gun Gun.’

Hao Yan Che listened for the answer he wanted to hear.

‘CEO Hao, think about it,’ Feng Ting said. ‘You sit high on a pedestal, and you’re exceptionally beautiful. Yet you chose to marry a simple minded and ordinary woman like Gun Gun. Although Gun Gun also has CEO Yuan’s protection, it’s inevitable for Gun Gun to be the target of other women’s envy.’

‘When did it start?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It started on the first day CEO Hao brought Gun Gun here,’ Feng Ting said. ‘Inside most women’s hearts, you’re an immortal that ordinary people are not allowed to touch. Gun Gun’s appearance broke their hearts. They didn’t hurt Gun Gun physically, but they hurt her mentally. Gun Gun is a genuine dummy. No matter what hurtful things they said to her, she smiled and told them that they only spoke the truth. She would always act like it didn’t hurt her, and go back to you. But you were oblivious. CEO Hao, I’m not someone who likes to interfere in another person’s business. This is an exception. Tell me, were you

oblivious or you didn't care?'

'You're her friend,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You saw her being bullied, but why didn't you come to me and tell me?'

'Yes,' Feng Ting said. 'I'm Gun Gun's friend. But you're her husband. It's your job to protect her. Why do you expect me to report to you if she is being bullied? Why didn't you protect her, and find out for yourself if anyone bullied her?'

It was Hao Yan Che's turn to clench his hands.

'I wanted to tell you but Gun Gun made me promise not to tell you,' Feng Ting said. 'This is between you and your wife. You live with your wife every day. Didn't you see the signs? Didn't you see how anxious your wife was every day coming to work?'

Hao Yan Che thought about Feng Ting's words.

'CEO Hao, the truth is I don't know if it's a blessing or a curse for Gun Gun to marry you,' Feng Ting said.

'What do you mean?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'CEO Hao, you should think about it yourself,' Feng Ting said. 'I have work to do. Don't use Gong Shao Jie to threaten me again. Right now Gun Gun lost her memory. But one day she'll regain her memory, and she'll be angry at you if she found out you threatened me. I'll let today slide, because I know you care about her. I assume a smart person like CEO Hao can understand my warning.'

Feng Ting stood and walked outside Hao Yan Che's office.

Feng Ting was lucky she was Hao Yan Che's wife's friend. If Feng Ting wasn't, he would have killed Feng Ting for threatening him.

Outside Hao Yan Che's office, Feng Ting's body shivered. She didn't pity the women who were nasty toward Yuan Gun Gun in the past.

A while later, Yi Tu and Jia Tu carried bags of fresh milk and pudding into Hao Yan Che's office.

'Young master,' Yi Tu and Jia Tu greeted and bowed.

'Um,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu put the fresh milk and pudding into the pig fridge. They both could smell Yuan Gun Gun's body scent on Hao Yan Che's body.

'Young master, is Gun Gun back?' Yi Tu asked. 'Is that why you asked us to buy fresh milk and pudding?'

End of Chapter 194

Related

Chapter 195



‘Yi Tu, is your nose broken?’ Hao Yan Che asked sarcastically.

Yi Tu looked confusedly at Jia Tu.

‘Gun Gun lost her memory,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Don’t scare her when you see her.’

Hao Yan Che stood, he walked to the pig fridge, grabbed fresh milk and puddings and walked to the bedroom.

Yi Tu and Jia Tu were both speechless.

Hao Yan Che walked into the bedroom. His wife was holding their son on the bed and watching TV. It made him jealous of their son.

Yuan Gun Gun saw Hao Yan Che, and she immediately looked away.

Hao Yan Che put the fresh milk and puddings on the table. He poured a glass of milk, and gave it to his son. His son gulped down the glass of milk.

‘Don’t fight with me,’ Hao Yan Che said and gave Yuan Gun Gun a pudding.

Yuan Gun Gun accepted the pudding.

‘Why do I need to fight with you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I’m no one to you.’

‘Do you need me to remind you that you’re my son’s mother?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t dare continue to fight with Hao Yan Che, and she began eating the pudding.

‘Do you want to go anywhere?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘I’ll take you there.’

‘Anywhere,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Besides, my opinion doesn’t matter since CEO Hao makes all my decisions for me.’

‘Then we’ll go home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che kicked the door open.

Na Liu Hao ignored his dummy mummy, and silently drank another glass of milk.

Yi Tu knocked on the door, and stood like a dummy.

‘Did something happened?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Gun Gun, it’s been a long time since we saw each other,’ Yi Tu said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t recognise Yi Tu.

‘I’m Yi Tu,’ Yi Tu said. ‘In the past you used to call me big brother Yi Tu. Come with me, and I’ll take you home.’

‘Big brother... Yi Tu?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun felt like she knew Yi Tu.

‘Yes,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Do you remember?’

‘I’m sorry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t remember.’

‘It’s OK,’ Yi Tu said. ‘One day you’ll remember. Let’s go.’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun carried Na Liu Hao, and Yi Tu finally notice Na Liu Hao.

‘Who is this?’ Yi Tu asked.

‘This is my son Na Liu Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘He’s a handsome boy,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu wanted to ask the heavens what happened in the last two years. Why did Yuan Gun Gun lose her memory and suddenly popped out Hao Yan Che’s son?

At the Hao Mansion at night, Hao Yan Che returned to the master bedroom after exercising. His anger reappeared after he couldn’t see his wife on their bed.

Hao Yan Che went to the study room to look for Yi Tu and Jia Tu.

‘Where’s Gun Gun?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yi Tu thought it was unfair innocent bystanders were caught in the crossfire

every time Hao Yan Che's wife went missing.

'Gun Gun is staying in a guest room,' Yi Tu said.

'What room?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Room seventy-four,' Yi Tu said.

If Yuan Gun Gun wanted to rebel then Hao Yan Che was going to make the next move.

'Young master, wait,' Yi Tu said.

'What is it?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, Jia Tu and I agreed that young master should let Gun Gun take the initiative to come to young master,' Yi Tu said. 'It's better than young master going to see Gun Gun now and fight with her.'

'What's your plan?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yi Tu explained his plan to Hao Yan Che and Jia Tu. They looked at Yi Tu like his plan would fail.

'Isn't my plan a good plan?' Yi Tu asked.

Hao Yan Che and Jia Tu got goose bumps.

End of Chapter 195

Related

Chapter 196



‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Jia Tu, follow Yi Tu’s plan.’

‘Yes young master,’ Jia Tu said.

‘Yi Tu if your plan fails...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said. ‘If my plan fails, I deserve young master’s punishment.’

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Go.’

Yi Tu and Jia left the room, and Hao Yan Che returned to bed.

Hao Yan Che laid on the bed alone. When would Yuan Gun Gun understand how much he loved her? He was willing to go through an embarrassing plan to get Yuan Gun Gun to pay attention to him.

Two nights later, there was a soft knock on the master bedroom door. To Hao Yan Che it was a loud knock he anticipated.

Outside the door was Yuan Gun Gun. She hugged a pillow, her feet were bare and the wind sounds scared her.

Hao Yan Che opened the door, it was his scared little rabbit wife. He forced himself to look indifferent.

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che’s coldness made Yuan Gun Gun sad.

‘It’s the middle of the night,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘What’s the problem?’

Yuan Gun Gun hesitated to open her mouth.

‘Tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che sounded like he wanted a nuisance like

her to leave.

‘Nothing,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m going back to my room.’

Yuan Gun Gun turned around and walked away.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun take each step away from him. He wanted to pull her back, but he was worried he would scare her and chase her away.

The sounds of a woman crying were heard. Yuan Gun Gun turned around, and ran to Hao Yan Che. She jumped into his arms, hugged his neck and wrapped her legs around his waist.

‘There’s a demon crying,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Can you hear it?’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s round bottom, and acted like he was unaffected by her.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che denied.

‘Listen carefully,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Can you hear it now?’

Yuan Gun Gun cried on Hao Yan Che’s shoulder.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun into their bedroom, he closed the door and smiled.

Hao Yan Che put Yuan Gun Gun on the bed. He wanted to kiss her.

‘Why are you crying?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘You’re really ugly.’

‘Demon...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che wiped Yuan Gun Gun’s endless tears.

‘Where?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Did you watch too many horror movies?’

‘How did you know I watched horror movies?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s obvious,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘How can you watch rubbish?’

‘Everyone asked me to watch with them,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Auntie Chen, big brother Yi Tu, big brother Jia Tu, big sister Jia Ting, big sister Jia Wen and everyone else watched too.’

‘Do you want to argue about watching rubbish with me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun looked adorably vulnerable in that moment.

‘Aren’t you supposed to be giving me the cold shoulder?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Why did you come find me for?’

‘I didn’t want to look for you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I went to look for auntie Chen and everyone else. But I don’t know where they went out tonight. They even took Hao Hao to go out with them.’

Hao Yan Che’s good mood was broken by Yuan Gun Gun’s words.

‘Who do you think I am?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Did you come to see me because there was no one else around?’

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun. Even though he knew it was a plan, he hated hearing he meant nothing to Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I want to sleep.’

‘I want to sleep with you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I don’t need you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then you can sleep with me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun got out of bed, and walked to the door.

Hao Yan Che laid on the bed. He opened his mouth when Yuan Gun Gun was close to the door.

‘I forgot to warn you,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘If in the middle of the night you hear someone calling your name, don’t answer them. If you answer them, I don’t know what will appear in front of you.’

Yuan Gun Gun froze on the spot.

‘I remembered someone died in room seventy-four,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I think it was a maid. She used to be responsible for cleaning room seventy-four. No one knew why she hung herself from the ceiling. I forgot about it because no one dares to go in room seventy-four. Tomorrow I’ll ask Yi Tu to find someone to get rid of the blood stains on the carpet.’

End of Chapter 196

Related

Chapter 197



Yuan Gun Gun sat on the floor and cried.

Hao Yan Che was confident Yuan Gun Gun wouldn't dare leave their bedroom.

'You're so noisy,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you want to cry, go outside and cry.'

Yuan Gun Gun cried louder. Hao Yan Che got out of bed, pulled her up and wiped her tears of fear.

'Do you still want to give me the cold shoulder?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't say anything.

'Talk,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you don't talk, you can go outside.'

'I wasn't giving you the cold shoulder,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Not giving me the cold shoulder?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Then why did you move to a different room? In the last two days, why did you act like I'm invisible if you see me?'

Yuan Gun Gun sniffed her nose, and blinked her eyes.

'I was taking revenge for you because someone bullied you but you got angry with me,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che gently pinched Yuan Gun Gun's cheeks.

'Do you still want to fight with me?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say.

'Alright,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Since you don't want to talk, go outside.'

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che's neck.

'I don't want to go outside,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then talk,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Why do you bully me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I gave birth to your son, and you still bully me. You’re going to be punished for bullying me.’

‘I received my punishment a long time ago,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Why else would I marry you?’

Hao Yan Che didn’t know why he chose to love a trouble maker like Yuan Gun Gun.

Yuan Gun Gun hit Hao Yan Che’s chest.

‘Then let’s divorce,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Since I don’t remember anything, let’s divorce.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hands.

‘Don’t fight with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Who wants to fight with you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. She freed her hands, and hit Hao Yan Che’s shoulders. ‘I want to divorce you!’

Hao Yan Che captured Yuan Gun Gun’s hands again.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, if you know what’s good for you then know your limits,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Didn’t you say marring me is your punishment?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Then let’s divorce. After we divorce, I don’t want anything from you. I only need Hao Hao.’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand why her heart was breaking.

The veins on Hao Yan Che’s forehead popped. He held Yuan Gun Gun close to him, and he hit her round bottom.

‘Ah... you... you hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Is one not enough?’

Yuan Gun Gun looked at Hao Yan Che’s cold face, and rubbed her hot bottom.

Hao Yan Che’s hand felt hot.

‘Does it hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Didn’t I say not to fight with me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘When did you start not listening to me?’

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom.

‘It’s your fault for saying marrying me is your punishment,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You are the one who always wants to fight with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I don’t care,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You hit me so you’re in the wrong.’

Hao Yan Che wiped tears off the loveable demoness’ face, who bewitched him.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s my fault. Don’t cry.’

‘You’re not sincere,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘How do I show my sincerity?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Should I let you hit my bottom?’

Yuan Gun Gun saw Hao Yan Che’s rare smile and she blushed.

‘No,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘How about this?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. All his playful teasing disappeared. He nibbled her lips, she gasped and his tongue mingled with her tongue. His desire was dormant since the day she left him. She was back, and reawakened his desire.

End of Chapter 197

Related

Chapter 198



Note: Chapter 198 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 198.

Chapter 198

Hao Yan Che laid together with Yuan Gun Gun on the bed.

‘Wait... um...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun felt she was a poor kisser compared to Hao Yan Che. She couldn’t match up to him.

‘Gun Gun,’ Hao Yan Che called.

Hao Yan Che calling Yuan Gun Gun’s name made her bones tingle. She didn’t expect the cold man in front of her would ever call her name sweetly.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun while undressing her.

‘No...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her chest. She felt shy being naked in front of Hao Yan Che said.

‘I want you,’ Hao Yan Che said. He took off his clothes. ‘And you want me too.’

Hao Yan Che spread Yuan Gun Gun’s legs, and his fingers stroked the hot flesh between her legs.

‘Not there...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to pull Hao Yan Che’s fingers outside her body, because she didn’t know why his fingers stroking inside her body gave her a strange sensation.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips, and his free hands kneaded her soft

breasts.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned inside Hao Yan Che’s mouth.

Yuan Gun Gun’s body felt hot all over. She felt like Hao Yan Che’s kisses and restless hands scorched her body.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s beautiful neck and collar bone. Then he sucked her nipples. He wanted to kiss every part of her body. He dreamt of her every night she was gone, and every day he woke up cold and lonely. Her hot body let him know she was back, she wasn’t a dream.

Yuan Gun Gun felt like water under Hao Yan Che’s touch. Suddenly she felt a piercing pain, she screamed and closed her eyes tightly.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom. He opened his eyes, and looked at her beautiful crying face. His hardness was midway inside her, he remembered she was scared of pain.

‘Don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che coaxed.

‘It hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You’re still this weak,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s crying face.

‘It really hurts,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t feel that much pain anymore. She loved Hao Yan Che’s gentleness so she embellished her pain.

‘Where does it hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘I’ll rub where it hurts.’

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. He thrust deeper inside her, she whimpered and he slowly moved in and out of her.

‘Wait,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t move.’

Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che’s shoulders and he held her hands.

‘I won’t move if you don’t move,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che licked Yuan Gun Gun’s hardened nipples.

‘Um...’ Yuan Gun Gun moaned.

Yuan Gun Gun felt something burning at the bottom of her stomach. She wondered if it was lust.

‘Does it still hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes. She saw the anticipation in Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes, it made her want to tease him.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun lied. ‘It really hurts.’

Hao Yan Che looked suspiciously at the gleam in Yuan Gun Gun’s eyes.

‘Where does it hurt?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘It hurts everywhere,’ Yuan Gun Gun said sternly.

‘Oh?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Everywhere?’

‘Yes,’ Yuan Gun Gun lied.

‘Then endure the pain,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che withdrew and thrust hard into Yuan Gun Gun’s wet passage. She gripped his back, and he moved faster in and out of her. Her body was pleased and tormented from night to dawn.

In the morning, Yuan Gun Gun laid limp in bed. She couldn’t believe she was alive.

In contrast Hao Yan Che felt reenergised like he sucked someone’s blood. He happily walked to the dining room.

Mrs Chen saw Hao Yan Che’s smile, and she understood why. The Hao Mansion was cold since the day Yuan Gun Gun left. Mrs Chen was happy the Hao Mansion was finally given a breath of fresh air.

Yi Tu put a wedding invitation on the dining table.

‘Young master, the Long brothers want to invite you and Gun Gun to the wedding,’ Yi Tu said.

End of Chapter 198

Related

Chapter 199



Hao Yan Che opened the wedding invitation. He smiled and ate breakfast.

‘Young master, Gun Gun is back with your son,’ Mrs Chen said. ‘Shouldn’t you look for master and mistress? Perhaps master can give Gun Gun her memory back.’

‘If my dad doesn’t want to be found, who can find him?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Mrs Chen didn’t answer.

‘Auntie Chen, let nature takes its course,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che stood, and walked to the master bedroom. He was happy as long Yuan Gun Gun was by his side. They had forever together for her to slowly remember their past.

At ten at night, Yuan Gun Gun opened her eyes and stretched her body on the bed.

‘You’re awake,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You must have slept well.’

Hao Yan Che put his work papers on a table, and walked to the bed.

‘Go wash up and eat a meal,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun crawled under the bedsheet, and wished she was invisible.

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed. Yuan Gun Gun refused to come out from under the bedsheet.

‘Are you still upset with me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che ran out of patience, and ripped the bedsheet in half.

Yuan Gun Gun coughed out feathers from the ripped bedsheet, and Hao Yan Che brushed feathers off her face.

‘Wake up and eat a meal,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered last night, she covered her face and Hao Yan Che pulled her hands away from her face.

‘Tell me what’s wrong,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn’t hide her blushing face.

‘Are you embarrassed?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun’s face turned a brighter red.

Hao Yan Che poked Yuan Gun Gun’s red cheeks and laughed.

‘Gun Gun, there is nothing for you to be embarrassed about,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s normal for a husband and wife to sleep together.’

Yuan Gun Gun covered Hao Yan Che’s mouth.

‘You’re not allowed to say it,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun’s hand away from his mouth, and smiled.

‘Why can’t I say it?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted to bite Hao Yan Che’s smug face, and he wanted to kiss her face.

‘Are you looking at me because you want to kiss me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled Hao Yan Che onto the bed, she laid on top of him and covered his mouth.

‘You’re not allowed to say nonsense,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che smiled at Yuan Gun Gun’s angry face, and he caressed her bottom.

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che rolled on top of Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Why do you look like you want to cry?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che gently kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips.

‘Because you’re bullying me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her face, and cried softly.

‘No crying,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che grabbed half the bedsheet, covered Yuan Gun Gun’s naked body and he hugged her.

‘Little Chub, don’t cry,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re the chub,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Your family is the chub family.’

‘My family includes you,’ Hao Yan Che teased.

Yuan Gun Gun ignored Hao Yan Che. He kissed her cheek.

‘I want to tease you because I like you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You like me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

End of Chapter 199

Related

Chapter 200



‘Do you like me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Only Yuan Gun Gun could make Hao Yan Che nervous.

Yuan Gun Gun felt shy to say yes. She nodded her head.

‘Tell me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes seduced the words out of Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth.

‘I like you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wrapped her arms around Hao Yan Che’s neck, and he kissed her breathless.

‘Do you love me?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn’t answer Yuan Gun Gun, and she felt disappointed.

‘Is it hard to answer?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘It’s not hard to answer,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che gently pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks.

‘When you remember the past, I’ll answer your question,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun nodded her head, and Hao Yan Che kissed her nose.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Get up and eat a meal.’

Hao Yan Che knew Yuan Gun Gun was shy about being naked in front of him so he grabbed a dress for her.

‘Change quickly,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’ll wait for you in the dining room.’

‘OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged her dress, watched Hao Yan Che walk to the door and

smiled. She was happy he liked her.

A month past quickly. Hao Yan Che became famous in the Hao Mansion for doting on his wife.

On the Long brothers' and Long Liu Bao's wedding day, Hao Yan Che took Yuan Gun Gun to the wedding. Hao Yan Che was the best man and Yuan Gun Gun was the matron of honor.

Long Liu Bao hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'Give me something to eat,' Long Liu Bao said.

'Bao Bao, you can't eat yet,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ling Ling, it's good you have flesh on you,' Long Liu Bao said.

Long Liu Bao pinched Yuan Gun Gun's rounder cheeks.

'What did you call my wife?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's hand, and pulled her away from Long Liu Bao.

'I mean Gun Gun,' Long Liu Bao said.

Unlike most of the wedding guests, Yuan Gun Gun was deeply moved by how happy Long Liu Bao looked standing between the Long brothers at the altar. Yuan Gun Gun cried happy tears, because her closest friend got to marry the two men who loved Long Liu Bao the most.

At the wedding reception Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun.

'No crying,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You always cry whether you're happy or sad.'

'Bao Bao is really happy,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Are you saying that you're not happy?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'That's not what I mean,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Let's go home,' Hao Yan Che said.

'We can't leave before the bride and grooms,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Right now they're greeting their wedding guests,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Later they'll be in honeymoon mode. They won't remember you exist.'

Yuan Gun Gun blushed. Hao Yan Che took her for a walk. She rubbed her full stomach, and felt lazy to walk.

‘I’m full,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I don’t want to walk.’

‘You need to walk to digest food,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘That way you can eat a midnight meal at home.’

‘Do I look like your pet pig?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s nose. ‘But pigs are better listeners than you.’

A plane flew past Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che. She raised her arms, and framed the plane with her fingers.

‘What is my dummy doing now?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I’m not being a dummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said sternly. ‘This is called capturing a plane.’

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Haven’t you heard if you capture one thousand planes, your wish will come true?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘What’s your wish?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

End of Chapter 200

Related

Chapter 201



Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's wind swept hair. His gentleness always made her flustered.

'If I tell you my wish, it won't come true,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che wanted to make Yuan Gun Gun's face turn a brighter red. His lips moved closer to her lips. When she couldn't tilt her head back any further, his lips moved to her ear.

'How many planes have you captured?' Hao Yan Che whispered in Yuan Gun Gun's ear.

'I...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was disappointed Hao Yan Che didn't kiss her. He carried her in his arms like how he carried their son.

'Little Chub, if you want your wish to come true,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Tomorrow I'll take you to the Hao Household's airport, and you can capture one thousand planes.'

'That won't count,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You ask for too much,' Hao Yan Che teased.

'Hey,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Can I ask you something?'

'I'm not hey,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Call me by my name.'

'Hao Yan Che,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

'I see,' Hao Yan Che said. 'I didn't satisfy you last night, and you forgot what I said to you.'

Yuan Gun Gun hit Hao Yan Che's shoulder.

‘Stop teasing me like this,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Then say my name,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Good,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Ask me anything.’

‘Do you know what DOVE means?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Why do you ask?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Because the doctor told me if I remember DOVE then it must be something important to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che took off his jacket and draped it around Yuan Gun Gun’s shoulders.

‘The truth is after you left, I discovered you embroidered and wrote Dove everywhere around our home,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You wrote it on my clothes, your clothes, towels, the ceilings and even on the rugs. Every day I thought about what DOVE meant to you. I thought perhaps you love DOVE chocolates. Because I don’t let you eat chocolates every day, it was your way of saying you want to eat chocolates every day.’

‘That’s what big brother Du said too,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t tell me in everyone’s eyes I’m someone who loves eating.’

‘You do love eating,’ Hao Yan Che said.

In the past Hao Yan Che would be angry to hear Yuan Gun Gun mention Na Liu Ting Du’s name. But he knew he shouldn’t be too greedy. He was a thousand times more blessed than Na Liu Ting Du, because Yuan Gun Gun chose him.

‘I’m sleepy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I want to go home and sleep.’

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘We’ll go home and sleep.’

Several days past, Yuan Gun Gun was happier each day living with Hao Yan Che. But no one expected their son would stir up their blissful life together instead of Na Liu Ting Du.

‘I want daddy,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Na Liu Ha turned his face violet and looked coldly at his mummy.

‘Hao Hao, didn’t mummy say that daddy left us?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I want daddy,’ Na Liu Hao said.

‘Mummy knows you miss daddy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy miss daddy too. If daddy left us, how can mummy find him?’

Yuan Gun Gun was sad Na Liu Ting Du left without saying goodbye to her and Na Liu Hao.

‘Hao Hao, don’t cause trouble,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Uncle Hao will be unhappy if he hears you.’

Na Liu Hao made a wardrobe topple between him and his mummy.

‘I want daddy!’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun covered her ears. Na Liu Hao’s booming voice shattered the window glass and mirrors in the room.

Hao Yan Che kicked open the door, walked to his son and slapped his son’s cheek.

Yuan Gun Gun’s heart broke to see her husband hit their son’s cheek. She ran to their son, and hugged him.

‘Son, how old are you?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Don’t tell me that you don’t know you can’t use your powers to harm your family members. You could have injured your mummy.’

End of Chapter 201

Related

Chapter 202



Na Liu Hao looked coldly at the old man.

‘Old man, I don’t need you to lecture me,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun was shielding Na Liu Hao’s face so Hao Yan Che could only hit Na Liu Hao’s back.

‘Hao Hao is still little,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘How can you use force to hit your son?’

‘Is he my son?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘If I remember correctly, a couple of minutes ago you and he called Na Liu Ting Du his daddy and called me his uncle.’

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Isn’t it true you miss his daddy?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Who knows what you and his daddy did in bed together for two years?’

‘You’re right,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I miss Hao Hao’s daddy. At least when Hao Hao and I lived with his daddy, his daddy didn’t do anything to hurt us. Hao Hao’s daddy is a gentle man unlike Mr Hao.’

‘You’re right,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’m not a gentle man like his daddy. You chose to crawl onto my bed. What does that make you?’

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t expect Hao Yan Che’s words would cut her heart deeply.

Na Liu Hao didn’t understand what the old man’s words meant, but he understood it made his mummy sad. He levitated a chair and aimed it at the old man’s head.

Hao Yan Che waved a hand and the chair flung against a wall. Then he picked up his son from Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

‘You exist because of me and I can take away your life too,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che choked his son's neck. But his son didn't beg him to spare his life.

'Are you crazy?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'Let go of your son!'

Hao Yan Che heard Yuan Gun Gun's anxious voice, and he immediately let go of their son's neck. He looked at their son gasping for air, and regretted using force on their son.

Yuan Gun Gun held Na Liu Hao in her arms. She stroked his small face.

'Hao Hao, don't be scared,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Mummy will take you back to grandpa Yuan's home.'

Hao Yan Che stood in front of Yuan Gun Gun, and she moved a few steps back.

'What do you want?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't want Yuan Gun Gun to be scared of him and runaway.

'Where do you think you are?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Do you think you can come here and leave anytime?'

'Mr Hao, where my son and I go is none of your business,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Didn't you say you're not my son's father?'

Yuan Gun Gun sounded calm, but her heart panicked. She hugged Na Liu Hao tightly.

'Good,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It looks like we understand each other.'

'I wish Hao Hao and I were still living in Paris and never met you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Say it again,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I said...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che grabbed Na Liu Hao from Yuan Gun Gun's arms again, and he pulled her dress collar.

'I wish I killed you the first time I met you six years ago,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to believe the cruel man in front of her was the same gentle man she lived with for weeks.

'Yuan Gun Gun, you should know what happens if you provoke me,' Hao Yan

Che said.

Hao Yan Che raised his arm, Na Liu Hao closed his eyes and Yuan Gun Gun hit Hao Yan Che's chest.

'What are you doing?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yuan Gun Gun, starting today, you'll never see Na Liu Ting Du and your son again,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che carried his son, held Yuan Gun Gun's hand and took them outside the room.

'Young master,' Yi Tu and Jia Tu called.

Hao Yan Che pushed Yuan Gun Gun toward Yi Tu and Jia Tu like he was throwing away rubbish.

'Lock her up in the master bedroom,' Hao Yan Che said. 'No one is allowed to open the master bedroom without my permission.'

Yuan Gun Gun fought to free her arms from Yi Tu and Jia Tu's hold.

'Hao Yan Che, you have no right to treat me like this,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'You should know under my roof there is nothing I can't do,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che carried his son away from Yuan Gun Gun. He wished he was capable of being drunk and forgetting about his son and Yuan Gun Gun's existence. They couldn't hurt him if they never existed.

Jia Tu and Yi Tu didn't know what happened. A moment ago, Hao Yan Che, Yuan Gun Gun and Na Liu Hao were a happy family together. Why did they suddenly turn their backs on each other?

End of Chapter 202

Related

Chapter 203



In the master bedroom Yuan Gun Gun laid on the bed and cried. She didn't understand why a night ago Hao Yan Che held her in his arms and stroked her hair, but the next moment he threw hurtful words at her.

Yuan Gun Gun hated seeing Hao Yan Che hit their son. She thought their son was still little, and she wanted to explain the situation to their son when he was older. If Hao Yan Che was angry because their son was too young to understand the situation, Hao Yan Che could vent his anger on her instead of their innocent son. How could Hao Yan Che forget he was the father of her son?

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't believe the man who hit Na Liu Hao was the same gentle man she thought she lived with. Was Hao Yan Che's gentleness a mirage? If it wasn't a mirage, how could Hao Yan Che be so cruel toward her and their son?

At night, Hao Yan Che returned to the master bedroom after drinking bottles of wine. He wasn't surprised to see Yuan Gun Gun cried herself to sleep. He laid on the bed next to her. He gently wiped tears off her face.

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun slept the same way she used to in the past. But she was different to her past self, she dared to talk back to him and raise her voice. Why did she take their rotten little demon son's side over him? Was it because he hit their son, and her maternal instincts took over? He regretted hitting their son. Even though their son was a genius the moment their son was born, their son was still only a bit older than a one-year-old. He was angry at their son for almost injuring her, but he should have reasoned with their son and shouldn't have punished their son using force.

'Hao Yan Che,' Yuan Gun Gun murmured in her sleep.

Hao Yan Che wondered if Yuan Gun Gun dreamt of him in her sleep. He didn't

care if she was having a nightmare about him as long as she didn't dream of Na Liu Ting Du. He hated himself for saying hurtful things to her out of anger. He would understand if she hated him. It was his fault for destroying their peaceful life together.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, and went to watch over his son.

Na Liu Hao opened his eyes the moment he sensed the old man sitting on the chair in front of his bed.

Hao Yan Che ignored his son's glare. He gently rubbed soothing cream on his son's red cheek.

Na Liu Hao didn't understand what the old man wanted. He silently let the old man rub cream on his cheek.

'Little boy, you should know I'm your daddy,' Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao stayed silent.

'Daddy hit you because you almost injured your mummy,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Daddy won't let anyone harm your mummy, including you.'

Hao Yan Che continued to rub the cream on his son's cheek.

'Little boy, remember you can only use your powers to protect your mummy,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You can't injure your mummy, not even accidentally. Don't use your powers carelessly before you know how to control your powers.'

'Stinky old man,' Na Liu Hao said.

Na Liu Hao pointed at the old man's hand print on his neck.

'Your neck doesn't need cream,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It'll disappear after two days.'

'I want cream on my neck,' Na Liu Hao insisted.

Hao Yan Che gently rubbed cream on his son's neck.

Na Liu Hao was happy the old man listened to him.

'I'm hungry,' Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che put the soothing cream in a drawer, and held out his arms.

‘Daddy will take you to eat,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Na Liu Hao stood up on the bed, and let the old man carry him to eat.

‘Son, do you really miss Na Liu Ting Du?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Yes,’ Na Liu Hao said.

‘Daddy will find him for you,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘It’s daddy’s way of compensating you for choking you.’

‘Really?’ Na Liu Hao asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Then I forgive daddy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che was unhappy to let his son see Na Liu Ting Du.

Na Liu Ting Du hugged the old man’s neck. He thought at least he and the old man wanted to protect the same person, his mummy.

Hao Yan Che hated himself for not bringing Yuan Gun Gun home when she ran away. If he brought her home, his relationship with their son wouldn’t be strained. He hoped one day their son would trust him and feel safe under his watch like how he used to feel safe under Hao Yan Que’s watch.

After Hao Yan Che fed his son, he put his son to bed and slept in the master bedroom.

The following morning, Yuan Gun Gun woke up in the arms of Hao Yan Che. For a moment her hand hovered over his angelic sleeping face.

‘Little Chub, don’t cause trouble,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered how Hao Yan Che treated her and their son a day ago, and retrieved her hand.

End of Chapter 203

Related

Chapter 204



Yuan Gun Gun pushed Hao Yan Che's arms off her. Then she got out of bed and walked to the bathroom.

Hao Yan Che felt Yuan Gun Gun leave the bed. He woke up and followed her to the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun quickly brushed her teeth, and ignored Hao Yan Che brushing his teeth next to her. He knew she didn't want to be in the same room as him.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun's elbow.

'Do you not want to see me this much?' Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked at the ceiling like she couldn't hear Hao Yan Che.

'About yesterday...' Hao Yan Che said.

'It's my mistake,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Hao Hao and I shouldn't have come to your home. Right now I only want to take Hao Hao to my daddy's home. Mr Hao, I know you're the king of your world. But I'm only an ordinary woman. As an ordinary woman, I'm begging you to let go of me and Hao Hao.'

Hao Yan Che wanted to say sorry to Yuan Gun Gun, but she threw water back at his face. In the last two years, she became more stubborn than him.

'What are you going to do if I don't let you go?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'You...' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Yuan Gun Gun, I'm not going to let you leave me again,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If you listen to me, I'll let you see our son. If you keep opposing me then I can make you suffer.'

Hao Yan Che put his and Yuan Gun Gun's toothbrushes down. He held her chin and kissed her lips that she bit.

Hao Yan Che's rough kiss made Yuan Gun Gun's heart hurt. He bit her lips hard, let go of her lips and he wiped blood off his lips.

'If you keep opposing me, you'll only end up being injured,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che suppressed his desire to hug Yuan Gun Gun and comfort her. He turned around and left the bathroom.

Yuan Gun Gun sat on the bathroom floor. She wiped blood and tears off her face. She realised Hao Yan Che was capable of being cruel or gentle on a whim. He knew how to make her live in hell. But why didn't she hate him?

Two days past, and the atmosphere inside the Hao Mansion was tensed like when Yuan Gun Gun was gone.

In the study room Hao Yan Che knocked everything off the desk. He didn't know who taught Yuan Gun Gun to be stubborn and unreasonable.

'Young master, if you want to reconcile with Gun Gun, I have a way,' Yi Tu said.

'Who said I want to reconcile with her?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I mean Gun Gun wants to reconcile with young master,' Yi Tu said. 'She needs young master to give her a ladder to climb down.'

'What do you want to say?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Young master, why don't you use Gun Gun's fear of ghosts to your advantage again?' Yi Tu asked.

Hao Yan Che thought it was embarrassing for everyone to know he would resort to childish tactics to get Yuan Gun Gun to pay attention to him again.

'Go prepare everything,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

At night a full moon shone through the master bedroom window. Yuan Gun Gun thought she saw a reflection of a white dress on the TV screen. She told herself it was only the moon's reflection.

Hao Yan Che sat on a chair and pretended to read reports. He was unhappy Yuan Gun Gun didn't jump into his arms. When did she become stronger? He missed the Yuan Gun Gun who used to rely on him.

Yuan Gun Gun chanted to herself, it was the moon’s reflection and not the dead maid from room seventy-four.

End of Chapter 204

Related

Chapter 205



Yuan Gun Gun jumped off the bed. Someone was blowing air into her ears, and thought she heard someone calling her name. She covered her ears.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked innocently.

‘I...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun stopped herself from running into Hao Yan Che’s arms. She remembered how cruelly he treated her, and reminded herself she was nothing to him.

Yuan Gun Gun heard someone calling her name again, ‘Yuan Gun Gun, my face hurts. Yuan Gun Gun, give me your face.’

Yuan Gun Gun felt like someone was pulling her face. She looked at Hao Yan Che’s cold face, and wanted to ask him if he heard someone calling her name too.

Hao Yan Che could clearly see Yuan Gun Gun’s body shaking. He wanted to ask her why she didn’t want to come to him when she was scared.

Yuan Gun Gun laid back in bed. She hid under the bedsheet, and pretended she couldn’t hear someone crying.

Hao Yan Che lost his patience. He stood, walked to the bed and pulled the bedsheet off Yuan Gun Gun’s body.

‘Why are you this stubborn?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was more scared of Hao Yan Che than the crying sounds.

Hao Yan Che sat on the bed and held her chin.

‘Do you hate me?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Is that why you don’t want to come to me when you’re this scared?’

Yuan Gun Gun didn't know what to say.

Hao Yan Che didn't want to be patient anymore.

'If you want to be stubborn then I'll show you how stubborn I can be too,' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che took off Yuan Gun Gun's nightshirt, and he cupped her breasts.

'Stop!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun dug her fingernails into Hao Yan Che's hands.

'What sort of a man are you?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'You make me sick! I hate you!'

'If I'm not a man then who is a man?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Na Liu Ting Du? You'll never see him again!'

Hao Yan Che gripped Yuan Gun Gun's wrists.

'You... let me go,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun hated she couldn't win a fight against Hao Yan Che's physical strength.

'You're mine!' Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che hated Yuan Gun Gun ignoring him and not talking to him. He missed her smile and her warmth.

'Stop!' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Suddenly a bright violet light shone from Yuan Gun Gun's stomach and protected her body.

Hao Yan Che let go of Yuan Gun Gun's wrists. He was confused why there was a violet light shining from Yuan Gun Gun's body.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled the bedsheet over her body.

'I hate you!' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I hate you...'

Yuan Gun Gun's head spun, and she fainted.

Hao Yan Che hugged Yuan Gun Gun. He was relieved her body was warm. He thought it was too soon for her to have powers, which meant she was pregnant

with their second child.

Hao Yan Che dressed Yuan Gun Gun, he tucked her in bed and called Yi Tu's phone.

'Bring a doctor here right now,' Hao Yan Che ordered.

'Yes young master,' Yi Tu said.

Hao Yan Che hung up the phone, and Yi Tu called a doctor immediately. Yi Tu was worried his plan backfired, and Yuan Gun Gun fainted out of fear.

Twenty minutes later, a female doctor smiled at the anxious Hao Yan Che.

'Mr Hao, it's good news,' the doctor said. 'Your wife is pregnant.'

'What should I do?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I'll give you a pamphlet of nutritious meal recipes for you to prepare for your wife,' the doctor said. 'During the first and third trimester don't let your wife over exert herself. You can sleep with your wife during the second trimester, but you need to be gentle with your wife. Don't cause your wife any stress. It's not good for your baby. Apart from that you have nothing to worry about. Your wife and baby are healthy.'

End of Chapter 205

Related

Chapter 206



‘Doctor, I’ll escort you out,’ Jia Tu said.

The doctor smiled at the dazed Hao Yan Che, and she followed Jia Tu outside. She thought Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun’s baby was going to grow up loved by Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Young master,’ Yi Tu called.

Yi Tu knew as long Yuan Gun Gun was by Hao Yan Che’s side, everyone living at the Hao Mansion had Yuan Gun Gun to control Hao Yan Che’s mood swings.

‘Young master, you heard the doctor,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Gun Gun is pregnant with young master’s second child. Young master needs to be patient with Gun Gun, and not fight with her.’

‘It’s Gun Gun who always picks fights with me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Young master, you know it wasn’t easy for Gun Gun to come back to you,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Young master, if you don’t compromise then you’ll lose Gun Gun again.’

‘If she dares runaway again, I’ll break her legs so she can’t run,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu sighed. In front of Hao Yan Che’s subjects, he was the invincible werewolf king. In front of Yuan Gun Gun, Hao Yan Che was a clueless puppy. Yi Tu thought love could drastically change a person.

‘Yi Tu,’ Hao Yan Che called.

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

‘Tell me what I should do to make Gun Gun happy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yi Tu smiled at the way Hao Yan Che failed to hide his embarrassed face. Yi Tu thought love could make a smart person turn into a fool too.

‘Young master, you should tell Gun Gun the good news that she is pregnant with your second child,’ Yi Tu said. ‘Secondly, young master should let Gun Gun see your son again. Thirdly, young master needs to say sorry to Gun Gun, sweet talk her and let her know you care about her. I remember Gun Gun said in the past that she loves seeing you in your werewolf form, but you rarely change into a werewolf for her. If young master change into a werewolf for Gun Gun, you’ll make her happy.’

‘It looks like you and my wife have a good relationship,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘She tells you everything.’

‘Hehe... Jia Tu knows too,’ Yi Tu said.

If Yi Tu had to drown, he wanted to pull Jia Tu into the deep end with him.

‘Go outside,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Yes young master,’ Yi Tu said.

Yi Tu quickly left the jealous Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che laid on the bed next to Yuan Gun Gun. He stroked her hair, and waited for her to wake up.

Three hours later, Yuan Gun Gun woke up.

‘You’re awake,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned her back to Hao Yan Che, ignored him and he hugged her from behind.

‘Little Chub, let’s call a truce,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun pretended she couldn’t hear Hao Yan Che. He rubbed her stomach.

‘You’re pregnant,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Inside your stomach is our baby.’

‘Where?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Hao Hao is mine and big brother Du’s son. Hao Hao isn’t Mr Hao’s son.’

Hao Yan Che remembered the doctor’s advice, and suppressed his anger.

‘Don’t say nonsense,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It’s the truth,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, don’t spit lies on my face,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned around to face Hao Yan Che.

‘What are you going to do?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Force yourself on me like before? Better yet, why don’t you kill us?’

‘I’m saying I’m sorry,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘What more do you want?’

‘Do you call this saying sorry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che and Yuan Gun Gun bickered like children on the playground.

Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun’s angry face was adorable like her crying face.

Yuan Gun Gun was angry and tired. Suddenly she burst into tears.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know Yuan Gun Gun’s mood swings could change faster than his mood swings.

End of Chapter 206

Related

Chapter 207



Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's back.

'Little Chub, don't cry,' Hao Yan Che said.

'I don't need you to care,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun bit Hao Yan Che's chest. He felt like everything was his fault.

'Little Chub, that day I hit our son because he could have injured you,' Hao Yan Che said. 'If he keeps using his powers carelessly, it'll be hard for him to control his powers in the future and he'll end up hurting other people accidentally.'

'You shouldn't have choked Hao Hao and shouldn't have said you wanted to kill Hao Hao,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'You hate Hao Hao, and you said hurtful things to me.'

'Do you think I can be calm after I heard you call Na Liu Ting Du our son's daddy and call me our son's uncle?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Hao Hao is still little,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I wanted to wait for Hao Hao to be older to explain the situation to him. How can you be angry over this?'

'I'm not just angry over this,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Don't forget you said you miss Na Liu Ting Du too.'

'Why are you angry over something trivial?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Trivial?' Hao Yan Che asked. 'Can you honestly say you don't miss him?'

'I'm wasting my breath talking to you,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun turned her back to Hao Yan Che again. She pushed his hand away from her waist.

'Don't touch me,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che hesitated for a moment then he got out of bed.

Yuan Gun Gun felt something heavy jumped onto the bed. Then it licked her ear. She turned around and was happily surprised to see a snow white werewolf with violet eyes.

Hao Yan Che was worried Yuan Gun Gun hated his werewolf form.

Yuan Gun Gun thought Hao Yan Che looked adorable in his werewolf form. She was torn between ignoring him and hugging him.

Hao Yan Che was sad Yuan Gun Gun rejected his werewolf form. He didn't know what to do. She wasn't the same Yuan Gun Gun from two years ago who accepted all of him.

Yuan Gun Gun couldn't hold back anymore. She rubbed Hao Yan Che's soft furry back.

Hao Yan Che sighed in relief. He was happy Yuan Gun Gun could accept all of him even if she lost her memory.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed Hao Yan Che's head, neck, back, legs and pulled his ears. 'Big dog,' Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che couldn't understand what Yuan Gun Gun said. He was happy she was smiling.

Yuan Gun Gun loved playing with Hao Yan Che. She forgot about her anger. She hugged his neck and rubbed her face on his cheek.

Hao Yan Che licked Yuan Gun Gun's adorable face.

'Hehe... it tickles,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che regretted he didn't change into a werewolf sooner to make Yuan Gun Gun happy.

Yuan Gun Gun laughed and kissed Hao Yan Che's nose.

Hao Yan Che was jealous of his own werewolf form. Why didn't Yuan Gun Gun kiss him when he was in his human form?

Yuan Gun Gun kissed Hao Yan Che's cheek, and rubbed his head.

‘You’re so cute,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che couldn’t stand Yuan Gun Gun favoring his werewolf form anymore. A bright white light shone from his body and he changed back to his human form.

‘Don’t be noisy,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You...’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun wanted the adorable werewolf back. She was embarrassed to see the naked Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che got out of bed, he grabbed a black nightshirt from a wardrobe and put it on.

End of Chapter 207

Related

Chapter 208



Hao Yan Che laid back on the bed, and hugged Yuan Gun Gun. She covered his eyes, and he gently bit her wrist.

‘You played dirty by changing into a big dog,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘You should compensate me for taking advantage of me,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hands, rubbed his face on her palms and kissed her neck.

‘You’re hateful,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s nose.

‘Let’s call a truce,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘In the future you’re not allowed to say hurtful things to me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Not allowed?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Since when are you allowed to make rules?’

‘If you don’t want to have a truce then forget it,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I promise,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re not allowed to hit Hao Hao anymore,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Don’t test my limits,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Mmm... then you’re not allowed to hit Hao Hao’s face or use force to hit him if he misbehaves,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I promise,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che.

‘Are you feeling smug?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘The truth is I do love big brother Du but only as a big brother,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s not the same as how I feel about you. So don’t accuse me of things I didn’t do.’

Hao Yan Che regretted the hurtful things he said to Yuan Gun Gun. She slept in the same bed with Na Liu Ting Du for two years, but he knew nothing happened between them. It was him who she gave her body and heart to. He should let go of the past, and make a fresh start with her.

‘I want to see Hao Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘It’s late,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Our son is sleeping right now. You should sleep too.’

‘I’m not sleepy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘You need to sleep even if you’re not sleepy because our baby needs sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun rubbed her stomach and smiled.

‘I’m going to be a mummy again,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Sleep,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Um,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che closed his eyes, and stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘I want to have twins,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che laughed, opened his eyes and kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s forehead.

‘I want us to have a daughter,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun fell asleep before she could answer Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che closed his eyes again. An image of his and Yuan Gun Gun’s daughter popped in his head, ‘Daddy, I want candy.’

Hao Yan Che smiled. He wanted an adorable daughter who looked exactly like Yuan Gun Gun.

Several days past. Since Hao Yan Che found out Yuan Gun Gun was pregnant, every day he fed her nutritious meals, he took her for walks to capture planes and their son was like a small bodyguard protecting her.

‘Hao Hao, do you want a little brother or a little sister?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘A little sister,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun was surprised Na Liu Hao agreed with his daddy.

‘What’s wrong with having a little brother?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Son, are you scared your little brother would be stinky like you?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘So you want an adorable little sister to bully?’

‘No,’ Na Liu Hao said.

‘Why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Because I don’t want my little brother to be stinky like old man,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Hao Yan Che picked up his son, and pinched his son’s chubby cheeks.

‘Little stinky boy, do you think you look like daddy?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Na Liu Hao’s small hands pinched Hao Yan Che’s cheeks.

‘It’s daddy who looks like me,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled at the identical father and son pinching each other’s cheeks.

Yuan Gun Gun heard a plane. She turned around and ran to capture her thousandth plane. Suddenly a Mercedes-Benz zoomed past her, and memories flashed through her mind.

Hao Yan Che leapt with his son in one arm to pull Yuan Gun Gun away from the Mercedes-Benz.

‘Why are you so careless?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun looked blankly at Hao Yan Che. He hugged her with his free arm.

‘Do you know how scared you made me?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun was lost in deep thought.

‘Don’t be scared,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I’m taking you and our son home.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun’s hand, and carried their son to the parking lot.

A while later Hao Yan Che took his son and Yuan Gun Gun to the master bedroom. He let his son lie on the bed. His son was still scared about the Mercedes-Benz nearly hitting Yuan Gun Gun.

Hao Yan Che laid next to Yuan Gun Gun and caressed her face.

‘What’s wrong?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun burst into tears.

‘Why are you crying?’ Hao Yan Che asked. He pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s nose. ‘No one is cursing you.’

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che and cried.

‘Che,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun’s back.

‘I’m here,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘I won’t let anyone hurt you.’

Na Liu Hao squeezed in between his parents’ bodies, and hugged his crying mummy too.

‘Ugly mummy,’ Na Liu Hao said.

Yuan Gun Gun laughed and cried at the same time.

Hao Yan Che held his son and his wife in his arms.

‘It’s time for an afternoon nap,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Um,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Na Liu Hao looked at his parents hugging him. For the first time he felt happy being together with his parents.

End of Chapter 208

Related

Chapter 209



Yuan Gun Gun waited for Hao Yan Che and their son to fall asleep.

A long time later, Yuan Gun Gun caressed Hao Yan Che's handsome face. She regained her memory.

Days later, Yuan Gun Gun was often in deep thought about the past.

Hao Yan Che knocked the dining table to get Yuan Gun Gun's attention.

'It's been an hour but you barely touched your bowl of food,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Eat.'

Yuan Gun Gun put food into her mouth like a calf taking its first step.

Hao Yan Che couldn't stand Yuan Gun Gun not eating. He held her on his lap, and fed her food.

'Tell me what's wrong,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Are you feeling pain anywhere?'

Yuan Gun Gun shook her head. She wasn't used to Hao Yan Che's gentleness after he found out she was pregnant with their second child.

'Then why do you look sad the last several days?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Nothing,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Can we discuss something?'

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Che, if this time we have a daughter, can our daughter take after my maiden surname?'

'Why?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Because I want our daughter to have a cute name,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Don't you think Hao Qua Te, Hao Man Cai or Hao Long Quan sound a bit rough for our daughter?'

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun like she was lost in her own world.

‘Why are you looking at me like this?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Did I say something wrong? I don’t care. I want to change Hao Hao’s name to Hao Yan Hao, and our daughter to have my maiden surname.’

Hao Yan Che sighed. He accepted his wife’s intelligence couldn’t grow.

‘Alright,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Our daughter will have your maiden surname. What do you want to name our daughter?’

‘Yuan Qiu Qiu,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che pitied his adorable daughter.

‘What’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘Don’t you think it’s a good name for our daughter?’

‘It’s a beautiful name for our daughter,’ Hao Yan Che lied.

‘Really?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che lied again.

‘What if we have twin daughters?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Then we’ll think of another name,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘I think Yuan Dao Dao is a cute name for our second daughter,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Yes it’s a cute name,’ Hao Yan Che lied again.

‘What if we have triplets?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘We’ll think of another name for our youngest daughter,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Eat.’

Yuan Gun Gun smiled sweetly at Hao Yan Che. Should she tell him she regained her memories that night?

At ten at night, Yuan Gun Gun laid on Hao Yan Che’s chest and watched an animation movie with him while eating nutritious snacks.

‘It’s time for bed,’ Hao Yan Che said. He put Yuan Gun Gun’s snacks on the bedside table. ‘Go brush your teeth.’

‘Why aren’t you brushing your teeth?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun licked her fingers. Hao Yan Che grabbed a tissue and wiped her fingers.

‘Because I brushed my teeth earlier,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘And don’t lick your fingers.’

‘I don’t want to move or brush my teeth,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Get up and brush your teeth,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che helped Yuan Gun Gun out of bed, he followed her to the bathroom and helped her brushed her teeth.

‘Husband, hug me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che carried Yuan Gun Gun outside the bathroom, he laid next to her in bed and hugged her.

‘Che, do you want me to tell you a tragic old folk story?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Yes,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘In 1919 Charlotte, Grand Duchess of Luxembourg married Prince Felix of Bourbon-Parma,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Their chef Leon became a busier chef. He met a little girl named Tao who asked him for dessert. Every day he gave her dessert, and taught her how to speak English. The little girl’s identity was Princess Tao. After Prince Tao grew up, she and Leon became secret lovers. But he didn’t get to see her often like he used to when she was a little girl. A few days before her wedding, Leon made her a creamy chocolate dessert, he wrote DOVE in a letter and concealed it inside the creamy chocolate desert. DOVE is a code for, ‘Do you love me?’ Leon hoped she reciprocated his love. A few days later Princess Tao was forced to enter a political marriage.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t expect Yuan Gun Gun would actually tell him a tragic story. The last tragic story she told him, a beast died from its deadly fart.

‘One year later, a depressed Leon left the palace and worked in a small patisserie,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘The owner of the patisserie thought Leon was a gifted pastry chef, and he gave his daughter to Leon. Leon’s wife gave birth to their son. But Leon couldn’t hide his broken heart from his wife. Leon’s wife

loved him, but she didn't have his heart so she left him in secret. Leon took care of their son. Years later, Leon took his son for a walk. His son chased an ice-cream truck, because he stopped making creamy desserts since the creamy chocolate incident.'

Hao Yan Che silently listened to Yuan Gun Gun.

'Leon decided he couldn't let the past haunt him anymore,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'He took his son back to Luxembourg. A chef gave Leon the letter Princess Tao sent him a day after he left the palace. Leon's son only saw the word DOVE on the letter, and asked him the meaning of DOVE. Years past, Leon finally found Princess Tao. By then she was old and sick. On her deathbed she confessed back then she loved Leon. That year she was locked in her room for a month because she refused to marry her husband. She hoped Leon would ask her to elope with him. But Leon never told her that he loved her. She ate half of his creamy chocolate dessert, but she didn't find the letter. She froze the dessert. A year later, she let it melt and found the letter. By then it was too late, because Leon had left the palace. Three days later, Princess Tao died in Leon's arms. Leon created a new creamy chocolate dessert recipe with the word DOVE written on every dessert to represent his and Princess Tao's love. Leon hoped lovers who eat his dessert would think about his and Princess Tao's tragic love story, and never let go of their true love.'

Yuan Gun Gun wiped tears off her face. She took out a chocolate from her shirt pocket, and gave it to Hao Yan Che.

'Do you love me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che calmly accepted Yuan Gun Gun's chocolate, but his heart was deeply moved.

'I do,' Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled like a fool. Hao Yan Che's shaky arms hugged her tightly.

'Why are you such a dummy?' Hao Yan Che asked.

'I wanted to ask you this question a long time ago but I was too scared to ask you,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I was scared you would say no. You're a brilliant person, and I'm an ordinary person. The distance between us is the same as the

sky and the ground. Everyone around me said that you only married me to take responsibility. They said you're a beautiful rose, and I'm cow dung. I would hear them gossip about me every day. I was hurting, but I couldn't deny what they said was true. Che, you live somewhere I can't reach you. I was tired of being scared of loving you. I was scared one day you would regret marrying someone like me. I'm not smart, I can't help your career and I'm not beautiful. But I truly love you to the point it hurts.'

End of Chapter 209

Related

Chapter 210



Hao Yan Che's heart hurt listening to Yuan Gun Gun's confession.

'Little Chub, I don't need anything but you,' Hao Yan Che said. 'You don't need to be smart, beautiful, talented or cunning. It's enough if you stay by my side, and let me take care of you. Why can't you understand the only thing I'll ever want is you? Why can't you see your own appeal? Why can't you see the spell you put me under?'

'Do you mean it?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

'Yes,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Yuan Gun Gun, I love you for who you are.'

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun tightly because he didn't want her to see him cry. They both loved each other deeply. He regretted wasting years. Why didn't he tell her that he loved her long ago? He almost lost her because of his foolish pride. Why was he so blind? Why didn't he understand that someone simple minded like her would have insecurities too? He was wrong to think that all she needed was delicious food to live a comfortable life. It was his fault for not paying attention to how she felt behind her smiles. It was his fault for not worrying if people would gossip about her behind her back. How sad and lonely did she feel every time she wrote DOVE on their clothes and on the furniture in their home? It was his fault for not giving her a sense of security. Why was he so prideful that he didn't open his mouth to ask her if she loved him?

'I thought I wouldn't hear you say you love me even once,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Che stroked Yuan Gun Gun's back, and he laughed at himself. It didn't matter how smart he was, because when it came to love he was the biggest fool. If he didn't suffer, he wouldn't have found out how foolish he was.

Hao Yan Che grabbed tissues. He wiped Yuan Gun Gun's eyes and nose. Then he gave her a glass of water to drink. After she drank the glass of water, she cried

another bucket load.

‘Aren’t you all cried out now?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘When did you remember the past?’

‘When I was nearly run over by a car,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Then two days later, I remembered everything.’

‘Why didn’t you tell me sooner?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Because I wanted to give you a surprise,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Two years ago why did you leave?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Why did you look for Na Liu Ting Du? Did you want to leave me forever?’

‘Che, did you know capturing one thousand planes makes your wish come true?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘My wish was to remember my past...’

‘Yuan Gun Gun, don’t change the subject,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘If I tell you then you have to promise me you won’t get angry,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘No conditions,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Tell me.’

‘After Bao Bao and I returned home, you behaved strangely,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘You stopped nagging and caring about me. You didn’t touch me or want to sleep with me anymore. I thought you didn’t want to be with me anymore, and it made me depressed. That day I was crying in the bathroom. I heard some women say that if your body didn’t let me touch you freely then you wouldn’t even glance at me, and you wouldn’t have married me. In my emotional state I flew to Paris to find big brother Du.’

Hao Yan Che held Yuan Gun Gun tightly.

‘When I landed in Paris, I regretted leaving,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I wanted to fly home, but I was scared you would hit me. I also forgot to bring money. I got lost, and I called big brother Du. I wanted to see him, and asked him to take me home. It was my unlucky day. I met a thief the moment I landed. The thief wanted to take my bag, but I held onto my bag. The thief pushed me onto the road. You know what happened afterward.’

Hao Yan Che was angry Yuan Gun Gun didn’t let the thief take her bag. Her

safety was more important than a bag.

‘What do you want to do?’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I know I was wrong. Don’t hit me.’

‘Why are you such a dummy?’ Hao Yan Che asked. ‘Why didn’t you let the thief take your bag? What’s inside your head? Why did you risk your safety to hang onto your bag? And you were pregnant with our son at the time too!’

‘But I didn’t know I was pregnant with Hao Hao at the time,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I didn’t care if the thief took my bag. But I had something important in my purse.’

‘What was so important?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘I don’t want to say,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘It’s just something really important.’

Hao Yan Che took out a photo from a drawer.

‘Is it this?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Why is it with you?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. She was happy to see the photo of Hao Yan Che sleeping. ‘I thought the thief took it with my bag.’

Hao Yan Che didn’t know whether to hit Yuan Gun Gun’s bottom or hug her forever.

‘I secretly took this photo of you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t be angry.’

‘You misunderstood me and ran away,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You were hurting, but you didn’t tell me. How should I punish you?’

‘What do you want to do?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘I want to hit your bottom,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘You’re not allowed to hit me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘I’m pregnant.’

Hao Yan Che pinched Yuan Gun Gun’s cheeks.

‘After you give birth to our second child, I’ll hit your bottom,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun was happy she got a get out of jail free card for nine months.

Hao Yan Che bit Yuan Gun Gun’s ear.

‘Tell me who those women were that gossiped about you,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘It’s the same woman you fired and publicly declared no one is allowed to hire her,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Who else?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘No one else,’ Yuan Gun Gun lied.

‘Think about it carefully,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Che’s neck, and kissed his lips.

‘Spare them,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Think about it as giving our baby an extra blessing. Besides, I don’t think anyone will dare to bully me again.’

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Spare them,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Che, my husband, my young master and my children’s daddy.’

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun’s lips. She unbuttoned his shirt, and he held her hands.

‘No,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t understand why the first time she took the initiative, Hao Yan Che rejected her.

End of Chapter 210

Related

Chapter 211



Note: Chapter 211 has mature content. Readers not of a mature age, skip chapter 211.

Chapter 211

Hao Yan Che caressed Yuan Gun Gun's face.

'It's late,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Let's sleep.'

Yuan Gun Gun's hand rubbed Hao Yan Che's erection.

'You want to,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'Why can't we?'

Hao Yan Che pulled Yuan Gun Gun's restless hand away.

'Sleep,' Hao Yan Che said.

'But you want to,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'It's not that I can't,' Hao Yan Che said. 'It's you who can't.'

'What do you mean I can't?' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'I don't have my period.'

Hao Yan Che didn't know what to do. Usually Yuan Gun Gun didn't want to do sleep with him too many times a night. But when she couldn't, she wanted to sleep with him.

'You're pregnant,' Hao Yan Che said.

'Can't we do it if I'm pregnant?' Yuan Gun Gun asked. 'I thought we can.'

Hao Yan Che pulled the bedsheet over his body and Yuan Gun Gun's body.

'We can't,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Sleep.'

'Um,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

When Hao Yan Che thought Yuan Gun Gun was sleeping, her hand became

restless again.

‘Yuan Gun Gun, what are you doing?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

‘Why are you angry?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘I only want to help you.’

‘What?’ Hao Yan Che asked.

Yuan Gun Gun pulled Hao Yan Che’s underpants down, and massaged his erection.

‘You...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Let me help you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun remembered the play girl magazines and DVDs Long Liu Bao showed her two years ago. She practiced what she learnt on Hao Yan Che.

Hao Yan Che enjoyed being pleased by Yuan Gun Gun. He was happy she wasn’t shy as she used to be in the past.

Yuan Gun Gun saw Hao Yan Che closed his eyes. She pulled the bedsheet to the side, and her mouth engulfed him.

Hao Yan Che rubbed Yuan Gun Gun’s head.

‘You don’t need to...’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘What’s wrong?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked. ‘You’re not enjoying it?’

‘It’s not that,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Che didn’t know what to say. He liked the feel of her mouth, but he preferred pleasuring her.

‘Then don’t interrupt me,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Don’t make me tire my mouth in vain.’

Yuan Gun Gun’s mouth enclosed him again, and she licked his shaft.

A while later, Hao Yan Che grunted, he pulled Yuan Gun Gun to his shoulder and spilled on the bedspread. He rubbed her wet lips.

‘You didn’t need to,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘Are you OK?’

‘I’m OK,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘If you won’t so big then my mouth wouldn’t be as tired.’

Hao Yan Che didn't know what to do about Yuan Gun Gun's mouth.

'The truth is I wanted to do this to you that night,' Yuan Gun Gun said. 'It doesn't matter anymore. I got to do it tonight. It wasn't a waste for me to watch the DVDs Bao Bao showed me two years ago.'

'What else did Long Liu Bao do to corrupt you behind my back...' Hao Yan Che asked.

'Che, I want you to answer me honestly,' Yuan Gun Gun said.

'Ask me,' Hao Yan Che said.

'If your body didn't accept me touching you, would you have married me?' Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Hao Yan Che didn't want to answer a foolish hypothetical question.

'Che, would you love me even if your body couldn't stand me touching you?'

'Little Chub, don't think about nonsense,' Hao Yan Che said. 'There are no ifs. Don't ever think I love you because I don't have a choice. If I didn't love you, I wouldn't think about marrying you and having children with you. Before I met you, I prepared myself to live alone for the rest of my life. I never thought one day I would meet you, fall in love with you and if you left me, you would take my soul with you.'

Hao Yan Che put Yuan Gun Gun's hand over his heart.

'I don't want you to ever doubt that you belong here,' Hao Yan Che said. 'Only you will ever live here.'

Hao Yan Che kissed Yuan Gun Gun's forehead. She smiled, closed her eyes and knew she would have a beautiful dream that night.

Hao Yan Che watched Yuan Gun Gun sleep in the dark. He finally understood how happy his parents were together.

End of Chapter 211

Related

Side Stories 1

Side Story One



Months flew by. On the day Yuan Gun Gun’s water broke, Hao Yan Che took her to the hospital. He remembered Na Liu Ting Du told him that she had a difficult labour with Hao Yan Hao. So he didn’t want to leave her side, and asked the doctor to let him stay in the delivery room.

After hours of screaming, Yuan Gun Gun gave birth to a loveable baby girl who looked exactly like her except her baby girl had Hao Yan Che’s violet eyes.

The nurses wheeled Yuan Gun Gun and her baby girl to a VIP room. Yuan Gun Gun slept after an exhausting labour. Yuan Gun Gun’s baby girl had half of Hao Yan Che’s blood, and was aware of her surroundings the moment she was born.

The baby girl stretched her small hands and small feet toward Hao Yan Che, and spoke gibberish to him.

Hao Yan Che looked at Yuan Gun Gun first. Yuan Gun Gun was sleeping. Then he looked at their baby girl. He smiled at the way their baby girl was happy to have his attention. He gently held their baby girl’s small hands, she gurgled and laughed. He didn’t doubt that his and Yuan Gun Gun’s love conceived their baby girl.

At night, Yuan Gun Gun woke up and Hao Yan Che picked up a nutritious bowl of soup that Mrs Chen prepared for Yuan Gun Gun.

‘Where’s Qiu Qiu?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

‘Qiu Qiu is with mum and dad,’ Hao Yan Che said and fed Yuan Gun Gun the soup.

‘I thought mummy and daddy are in Italy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I should have said Qiu Qiu is with my mum and dad,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Oh,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Where are...’

‘Mummy’s Gun Gun is awake,’ Qiu Li Luo said.

Qiu Li Luo was about to run to the bed and hug Yuan Gun Gun, but Hao Yan Que held Qiu Li Luo’s dress collar with his free hand.

‘Gun Gun just gave birth,’ Hao Yan Que said.

Hao Yan Que smiled at his Yuan Qiu Qiu who he held in one arm.

‘Daddy, mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun greeted. ‘Daddy, let me hold Qiu Qiu.’

Hao Yan Que carefully put Yuan Qiu Qiu in Yuan Gun Gun’s arms.

‘Qiu Qiu?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

‘Yes mummy,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy, don’t you think Qiu Qiu is a cute name for your granddaughter?’

‘Yes,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘It’s a cute name. But why is my granddaughter’s surname Yuan?’

Hao Yan Che and Hao Yan Que were speechless.

‘Because Hao Qiu Qiu doesn’t sound cute,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘I see,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Xiao Che, I want you to give Hao Hao to me and your daddy until Hao Hao turns five.’

‘Yes mum,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Mummy, why?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t want to be separated from Hao Yan Hao.

‘Because Hao Hao is turning five soon,’ Qiu Li Luo said. ‘Gun Gun, you and Xiao Che have your hands full with Qiu Qiu. It’s safer for Hao Hao to be with me and your daddy until Hao Hao turns five.’

‘Did I agree?’ Hao Yan Que asked.

‘Husband, do you have the heart to stand by and watch our precious grandson’s life be in danger?’ Qiu Li Luo asked.

Hao Yan Que sighed. He wanted to enjoy a world with only him and his wife. But two days ago his wife seduced him to let her visit their grandson and granddaughter. He pretended he agreed because he didn’t want Hao Yan Hao’s

life to be in danger even though he knew Hao Yan Che was capable of protecting both Hao Yan Hao and Yuan Qiu Qiu. The truth was he knew his wife would put him in the dog house if he didn't agree to take care of Hao Yan Hao.

End of Side Story One

Related

Side Story Two



The next day, Hao Yan Che and his parents took Yuan Gun Gun and Yuan Qiu Qiu home.

Yuan Gun Gun teared up seeing Hao Yan Hao waiting at the front door. She missed him after not seeing him for one day. How was she going to cope being separated from him for one year?

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Hao.

‘Hao Hao, mummy really miss you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Hao Yan Hao hugged his mummy’s neck. He missed his mummy too so he waited at the front door for his mummy.

‘Let’s go inside,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Yuan Gun Gun held Hao Yan Hao’s hand, and they followed Hao Yan Che inside.

In the living room, Qiu Li Luo gave Yuan Qiu Qiu to Mrs Chen. Mrs Chen took Yuan Qiu Qiu to the nursery.

Yuan Gun Gun hugged Hao Yan Hao on the sofa. He was suspicious why his family were looking at him.

‘Hao Hao, tomorrow you’ll be going to grandpa Hao’s home,’ Hao Yan Che said.

‘Daddy, why?’ Hao Yan Hao asked.

‘You’ll be changing soon,’ Hao Yan Che said. ‘You need grandma Qiu’s guidance and grandpa Hao’s protection.’

‘Daddy, how long do I have to stay at grandpa Hao’s home?’ Hao Yan Hao asked.

‘One year,’ Hao Yan Che said.

Hao Yan Hao looked at his sad mummy then he looked at the floor.

‘Hao Hao, mummy doesn’t want to be separated from you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘But if you’re with grandpa Hao and grandma Qiu, they can protect you and keep you from harm until you turn five. Then you can come home with mummy.’

‘OK,’ Hao Yan Hao said.

Hao Yan Hao looked at his mummy and nodded his head. He looked at his daddy, and he could see his daddy loved him as much as his mummy loved him.

Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo left with Hao Yan Hao in the middle of the night.

One month later, Yuan Gun Gun and Hao Yan Che lined toys in front of Yuan Qiu Qiu to see what Yuan Qiu Qiu wanted to be when she grew up.

Yuan Qiu Qiu’s violet eyes saw anticipation in her mummy’s eyes. Her small chubby hands grabbed one toy then she grabbed all the other toys.

Months past, and Yuan Qiu Qiu was turning one soon. Yuan Gun Gun taught Yuan Qiu Qiu to say daddy and mummy, but Yuan Qiu Qiu chose to talk gibberish.

One a sunny day, Yuan Qiu Qiu wore a pink dress and slept on her small pink bed. After she woke up, she slid down her small pink bed onto the soft carpet. She wanted to see her mummy, but she couldn’t reach the door knob. Suddenly the door opened, and Hao Yan Hao walked into her bedroom.

Yuan Qiu Qiu ran baby steps to Hao Yan Hao, she hugged him and smiled at him.

‘Big brother!’ Yuan Qiu Qiu called.

Hao Yan Que and Qiu Li Luo had dropped Hao Yan Hao home. Hao Yan Hao couldn’t find his mummy so he walked to his bedroom to sleep. He didn’t expect to see Yuan Qiu Qiu’s small pink bed next to his bed. Yuan Qiu Qiu had their mummy’s face and their daddy’s violet eyes. The way his little sister called him big brother sweetly melted his heart.

Hao Yan Hao carried his adorable little sister in his arms.

‘Do you know me?’ Hao Yan Hao asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said. ‘Big brother is my big brother. Play.’

Hao Yan Hao looked where Yuan Qiu Qiu was pointing. She pointed at the toys on the carpet.

‘OK,’ Hao Yan Hao said. ‘Big brother will play with Qiu Qiu.’

A while later, Yuan Gun Gun walked into the bedroom. She teared up to see her two children playing together on the carpet.

‘Hao Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun called.

‘Mummy,’ Hao Yan Hao called.

Hao Yan Hao stood and walked to his mummy. His mummy hugged him and cried.

‘Mummy really miss Hao Hao,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Ugly mummy,’ Hao Yan Hao said.

Yuan Qiu Qiu walked baby steps to her big brother and mummy. She pulled her mummy’s dress.

‘Big brother,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu called.

Yuan Qiu Qiu was unhappy she couldn’t squeeze between her big brother and her mummy.

End of Side Story Two

Related

3 END

Side Story Three



Since the day Hao Yan Hao returned home, his mummy and little sister fought over him.

‘Yuan Qiu Qiu, how can you hog your big brother?’ Yuan Gun Gun asked.

Yuan Qiu Qiu hugged her big brother’s neck.

‘My big brother,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

‘Hao Hao is mummy’s son,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

Yuan Gun Gun was frustrated she spent months teaching Yuan Qiu Qiu how to say daddy and mummy. But the moment Hao Yan Hao arrived home, big brother came out of Yuan Qiu Qiu’s mouth.

‘Big brother is mine,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said. ‘Daddy belongs to mummy.’

‘Hao Hao is mummy’s son,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Daddy doesn’t belong to mummy.’

Hao Yan Che appeared in his children’s bedroom, and took his wife away.

Yuan Qiu Qiu smiled at her big brother.

‘Big brother is mine,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

Hao Yan Hao shook his head, and played with his little sister. Their mummy always lost to his little sister. He thought their daddy looked like he was going to keep their mummy in the master bedroom for several days.

Years past, Hao Yan Hao was in the second grade at a private primary school, and Hao Yan Che enrolled Yuan Qiu Qiu at a private preschool.

On the morning of Yuan Qiu Qiu’s first day at preschool, Hao Yan Che woke up Yuan Qiu Qiu, and Yuan Gun Gun helped change Yuan Qiu Qiu’s clothes.

In the car, Yuan Qiu Qiu looked sadly at her mummy.

‘Qiu Qiu, you need to go to preschool,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Mummy, I didn’t get to say good morning to big brother,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu sulked.

‘Qiu Qiu, you’ll get to see big brother after preschool,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Mummy, it’s not the same,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

‘Qiu Qiu, when you come home from preschool, mummy will let you play with Xiao Yuan,’ Yuan Gun Gun coaxed.

Yuan Gun Gun knew Yuan Qiu Qiu loved Hao Yan Hao and Xiao Yuan the most.

‘OK mummy,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

‘Qiu Qiu, be good at preschool,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Mummy will come pick you up after preschool.’

Yuan Gun Gun carried Yuan Qiu Qiu to the classroom. Yuan Gun Gun was sad to let go of her little girl.

‘Qiu Qiu, mummy will miss you,’ Yuan Gun Gun said. ‘Have fun at preschool.’

Yuan Qiu Qiu acted brave, and watched her mummy leave without crying.

Yuan Gun Gun didn’t dare look back, and let Yuan Qiu Qiu see her cry.

Yuan Qiu Qiu was smart like her daddy and big brother. But she was also a four-year-old who was away from her mummy for the first time.

‘Qiu Qiu, come with teacher inside the classroom,’ the teacher said. ‘Teacher will introduce your new friends to you.’

The adorable Yuan Qiu Qiu was popular with the other children in the classroom. Especially a little five-year-old boy.

‘Qiu Qiu, be my friend,’ the little boy said. ‘Let’s play.’

‘You’re not handsome as my big brother,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

‘Big brother?’ the little boy asked.

‘Yes,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said. ‘I don’t play with anyone who is ugly.’

‘Ugly?’ the little boy asked.

The little boy cried. In the classroom all the little girls wanted to play with him because he was the most handsome. But Yuan Qiu Qiu rejected him, and called him ugly.

Yuan Qiu Qiu thought the little boy looked uglier crying.

In the afternoon, Yuan Gun Gun was the first guardian to pick up a preschool student. Yuan Gun Gun came early because she was worried Yuan Qiu Qiu cried on the first day at preschool.

The teacher saw Yuan Gun Gun waiting outside the classroom while the children were napping. The teacher walked outside the classroom, and recounted what happened to Yuan Qiu Qiu on the first day at preschool.

Yuan Gun Gun smiled awkwardly, and waited to take Yuan Qiu Qiu home.

On the way home, Yuan Gun Gun asked Yuan Qiu Qiu about the first day at preschool in the car.

‘Qiu Qiu, mummy thought the little boy is handsome,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘He’s not handsome as big brother,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

‘But he isn’t ugly,’ Yuan Gun Gun said.

‘Ugly,’ Yuan Qiu Qiu said.

In Yuan Qiu Qiu’s eyes, her big brother was the most handsome big brother in the world.

Yuan Gun Gun silently prayed for Hao Yan Hao’s future girlfriend. She hoped Yuan Qiu Qiu would meet a handsome boy so Hao Yan Hao’s future girlfriend wouldn’t be a runaway girlfriend.

End of Side Story Three

The End of Beloved Little Treasure

Related